



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

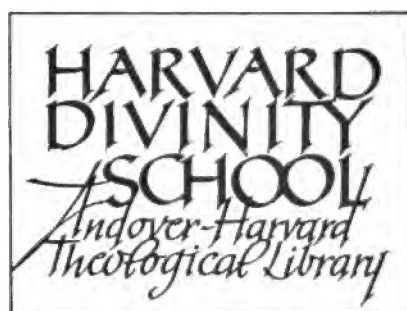
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





1. The first part of the document is a list of names and their corresponding addresses. The names are: John Doe, Jane Smith, and Bob Johnson. The addresses are: 123 Main St, 456 Elm St, and 789 Oak St.



Handwritten text, likely bleed-through from the reverse side of the page. The text is mostly illegible due to the quality of the scan and the nature of the bleed-through.



DOUGLASS SERIES

OF

CHRISTIAN GREEK AND LATIN WRITERS.

FOR USE IN SCHOOLS AND COLLEGES.

---

VOL. V.

THE APOLOGIES OF JUSTIN MARTYR

AND

THE EPISTLE TO DIOGNETUS.

---

1954

1

## NOTICE.

---

It is remarkable that no place has been given in the schools and colleges of England and America to the writings of the early Christians. For many centuries, and down to what is called the Pagan Renaissance, they were the common linguistic study of educated Christians. The stern piety of those times thought it wrong to dally with the sensual frivolities of heathen poets, and never imagined it possible that the best years of youth should be spent in mastering the refinements of a mythology and life which at first they feared and loathed, and which at last became as remote and unreal to them as the Veda is to us.

Classical Philology, however, took its ideal of beauty from Pagan Greece, and it has filled our schools with those books which are its best representatives.

The modern Science of Language has again changed the point of view. It gives the first place to truth; it seeks to know man, his thoughts, his growth; it looks on the literature of an age as a daguerreotype of the age; it values books according to their historical significance. The writings of the early Christians embody the history of the most important events known to man, in language not unworthy of the events, and the study of Latin and Greek as vehicles of Christian thought should be the most fruitful study known to Philology, and have its place of honor in the University Course.

The present Series owes its origin to an endowment by Mr. Benjamin Douglass for the study of these authors in

---

Lafayette College. Each volume will be prepared with critical text, introduction, and notes like the current approved text-books for college study. They will be edited by F. A. March, LL.D., Professor of Comparative Philology in Lafayette College, with such help as may be found desirable. Five volumes are now ready:

*LATIN HYMNS, with English Notes.* 12mo, Cloth, \$1 75.

*THE ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY OF EUSEBIUS. The First Book and Selections. With an Introduction by A. BALLARD, D.D., Professor of Christian Greek and Latin in Lafayette College; and Explanatory Notes by W. B. OWEN, A.M., Adj. Professor of Christian Greek.* 12mo, Cloth, \$1 75.

*TERTULLIAN: Select Works. With an Introduction by LYMAN COLEMAN, D.D., Professor of Latin in Lafayette College.* 12mo, Cloth, \$1 75.

*ATHENAGORAS. With Explanatory Notes by W. B. OWEN, A.M., Adj. Professor of Christian Greek in Lafayette College.* 12mo, Cloth, \$1 75.

*THE APOLOGIES OF JUSTIN MARTYR. To which is appended the Epistle to Diognetus. With an Introduction and Notes by BASIL L. GILDERSLEEVE, Ph.D. (Göttingen), LL.D., Professor of Greek in the Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore.* 12mo, Cloth, \$1 75.

The Series has been well received, and the co-operation of several of our most eminent scholars has been cordially given. The *CONFESSIONS OF AUGUSTINE*, prepared by E. P. Crowell, Professor of Latin in Amherst College, and *INITIA SCIENTIARUM*, selections from the Latin of the founders of modern science from Copernicus to Newton, are now in press. *CHRYSOSTOM* will follow, prepared by M. L. D'Ooge, Professor of Greek in the University of Michigan; and, later, other volumes of the classic Christian writers in Greek and Latin.

THE APOLOGIES  
OF  
JUSTIN MARTYR.

TO WHICH IS APPENDED  
THE EPISTLE TO DIOGNETUS.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION AND NOTES  
BY BASIL L. GILDERSLEEVE, PH.D. (GÖTT.), LL.D.,  
PROFESSOR OF GREEK IN THE JOHNS HOPKINS UNIVERSITY, BALTIMORE.



NEW YORK:  
HARPER & BROTHERS, PUBLISHERS,  
FRANKLIN SQUARE.  
1877.

BR  
65  
J8  
1877a

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1877, by  
HARRIS & BROTHERS,  
In the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.



## P R E F A C E.

---

THE notes in this edition of Justin Martyr's Apologies are chiefly grammatical and historical. Theological questions I have touched as lightly as possible, and always, I trust, with due reserve.

To my predecessors, Thirlby, Maran, Braun, Trollope, and Otto, I owe much; not a little to various special treatises on Justin; but I have not deemed it superfluous to examine for myself the original sources of our knowledge of Justin's times, and my citations are all at first-hand, unless distinctly credited. The grammatical notes are mainly syntactical, and I will not apologize for employing formulæ, which I have found useful in the class-room, instead of referring to grammars, which the fewest will take the trouble to consult.

In the constitution of the text I have proceeded according to my best judgment; and I would state here as an act of simple justice to myself that the text of the Apologies was electrotyped before I had access to Otto's third edition, and, except in some minute points, my critical work is independent of his recent labors, by which many of my conclusions have been anticipated.



The plan of marking variations from the MSS. by spaced type has not been carried out quite so consistently as might have been desired, but the occasional failures have been made good in the commentary.

The Introduction is constructed on the lines of Semisch's standard work, which I have abridged, recast or translated closely as suited my purposes, freely incorporating the results of my own reading and research, and availing myself without scruple of any apt expression that I might happen to find on the track of my studies.

To the two Apologies of Justin I have added the celebrated Epistle to Diognetus. For the final establishment of the text of this remarkable document I owe a few suggestions and many confirmations to the recent edition of Von Gebhardt in the new *Patrum Apostolicorum Opera*. The notes consist in good measure of extracts from Otto's elaborate commentary, although I have consulted with profit Bunsen, Hefele, Hollenberg, and Krenkel, and have not been content merely to copy others.

B. L. GILDERSLEEVE.

JOHNS HOPKINS UNIVERSITY, }  
BALTIMORE, Dec. 5th, 1876. }

# CONTENTS.

---

INTRODUCTION.....	v
-------------------	---

## FIRST APOLOGY.

### Chapter

1. Address.....	
2. Justin demands justice.....	
3. Right to a fair trial.....	
4. Why condemn a name?.....	
5. Christians no atheists.....	
6. Our God is not as your gods.....	
7. The Life is the True Test.....	
8. This Life is not worth a lie. 'We aspire while we ex- pire'.....	
9. Idol worship is idle worship.....	
10. Proper worship of God.....	
11. My kingdom is not of this world.....	1
12. 'As ever in our great Taskmaster's eye.....	1
13. 'Our reasonable service'.....	1
14. The demons malign Christians.....	1
15. Christ's own teachings.....	1
16. Bear all things. Swear not at all.....	1
17. 'Render unto Caesar'.....	1
18. Proofs of immortality.....	1
19. 'Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you that God should raise the dead?.....	1
20. Heathen analogies. <i>Teste David cum Sibylla</i> .....	2
21. Analogies to the history of Christ.....	2
22. Christ's sonship and its analogies.....	2
23. Statement of the argument.....	2
24. Variations of Heathenism.....	2

---

Chapter	Page
25. Christians abandon the world of false gods.....	23
26. Human agents of the demons.....	24
27. Guilt of exposing children.....	25
28. God cares for His creatures.....	26
29. The bounded continence of Christians.....	26
30. But was not Christ a magician?.....	27
31. Of the Hebrew prophets.....	27
32. Christ foretold of Moses.....	28
33. Manner of Christ's birth foretold.....	30
34. Place of Christ's birth foretold.....	32
35. Other prophecies that have come to pass.....	32
36. Prophets represent different persons.....	33
37. The Father speaks.....	34
38. Christ speaks.....	34
39. The Spirit itself speaks.....	35
40. Advent of Christ foretold.....	36
41. Christ's kingdom foretold.....	38
42. Past tense for future.....	38
43. Doctrine of human responsibility.....	39
44. This doctrine the doctrine of the prophets.....	40
45. Christ's throning in Heaven foretold.....	42
46. The Word in the world before Christ is Christ.....	42
47. Desolation of Judea predicted.....	43
48. Predictions of Christ's work and death.....	44
49. His rejection by the Jews foretold.....	44
50. Christ's humiliation foretold.....	45
51. The majesty of Christ.....	47
52. Sure word of prophecy.....	48
53. Importance of prophecies for faith.....	49
54. How the myths of the heathen originated.....	50
55. The Cross.....	52
56. The demons still at work.....	53
57. The demons instigate persecution.....	54
58. Marcion put forward by demons.....	54
59. What Plato owed to Moses.....	55
60. Plato and the cross.....	55
61. Christian baptism.....	57

## CONTENTS.

v

Chapter	Page
62. Baptism imitated by the demons.....	58
63. God's appearing to Moses.....	59
64. Other travesties of Scripture by the demons.....	61
65. Administration of the sacraments.....	61
66. The Eucharist.....	62
67. First day of the week.....	63
68. Conclusion.....	64

## SECOND APOLOGY.

1. Introduction.....	67
2. Urbicus.....	67
3. Justin and Crescens.....	70
4. Why Christians do not kill themselves .....	71
5. Why men are in trouble. The evil spirits.....	71
6. Names of God and of Christ.....	72
7. The world preserved for the sake of Christians.....	73
8. The world hates the bearers of the seed.....	74
9. Eternal punishment a necessity of God's existence.....	75
10. Comparison of Christ with Socrates.....	76
11. How Christians regard death.....	77
12. Innocence of Christians proved by their contempt of death .....	78
13. The Word has been in all men.....	79
14. Justin prays that this appeal be published.....	80
15. Conclusion.....	81

## EPISTLE TO DIOGNETUS.

1. Introduction. The questions of Diognetus.....	83
2. The heathen world: the vanity of its idols.....	83
3. The Jews: their superstitious sacrifices.....	85
4. Their foolish rites, customs, and ceremonies.....	85
5. The Christians: their customs and condition.....	86
6. They are the soul of the world.....	87
7. Their religion, not of man but of God.....	88
8. The wretched state of the world before the Son of God came.....	89

Chapter	Page
9. Reasons why He came so late.....	90
10. Conclusion. Exhortation to Diognetus to become a Christian.....	91
11. Addition by another hand. I speak with authority. I know whereof I affirm.....	92
12. Read and hearken, and you will learn.....	93
 ANALYSES AND NOTES.....	 97
Greek Index.....	259
Index of Texts .....	275
Index of Subjects.....	279

## INTRODUCTION.

---

JUSTIN, philosopher and martyr, was born at Flavia Neapolis, in Samaria, near the ancient Sichem, the modern Nablûs, at the close of the first or the beginning of the second century. His father was Priscus, his grandfather Bacchius. The names indicate that they belonged to the stock of the Greek colony sent to Sichem by Flavius Vespasianus, the Emperor Vespasian, after whom the place was named. It is sufficiently evident that he was not a Samaritan in any other sense than that he was a native of that region, and, according to his own statement, he was an uncircumcised heathen at the time of his conversion. Of this conversion we have an interesting account in the opening of his Dialogue with Trypho. Careless as Justin is in his style, His quest of the true philosophy. for once we recognize a faint approach to conscious literary art; and as he tells us how he bade Plato farewell forever, he reminds us for the first time and the last of his master. In this passage he describes his weary journey through the perplexing round of the various philosophic schools and his final rest in the system of revealed truth. Philosophy is to him as grand and as precious as ever. He has not renounced her, but he has found her truest form in Christianity. If men only knew what Philosophy is, and why she has been sent down to earth, they would not be Platonists or Stoics, Peripatetics or Pythagoreans, for knowledge is one, philosophy is one—one, and not a many-headed creature, as she is supposed

---

to be. But the great thinkers have overawed their followers by their fortitude, their self-mastery, their novel discourse, and, under the spell of this reverence and incurious of the actual truth, the disciples have caught up what their masters taught, and have stamped their body of doctrine with the name of a Plato, an Aristotle. And Justin, at the outset of his career, resorted to these half-philosophers. First he tried a professor of <sup>He tries the</sup> the Stoa, and after a brief apprenticeship turned away in bitter disappointment from a teacher who could teach him nothing about God, from one who did not even consider the subject an important matter of philosophic research. Still more bitter was his disappointment when <sup>The Peripatetic school.</sup> he put himself under the care of a Peripatetic, and found in a few days that his master thought more of his fees than of his philosophy, and belonged to the large class of mercenary sages who, to use the expressive language of Tatian, would not even grow their beards for nothing. Still faithful to his ideal, still athirst for the truth, Justin next entered the <sup>The Pythagorean.</sup> lecture-room of a Pythagorean, a man of high repute and high self-esteem. But when Justin made his request known, the Pythagorean indulged himself in a long eulogy of music, geometry, and astronomy. Without a knowledge of these, he said, the soul was not ready for the high abstractions of true philosophy; and Justin, acknowledging his insufficient preparation, withdrew, exceeding sorrowful, for this teacher really seemed to know something. At last Justin sought refuge and <sup>Becomes a Platonist.</sup> light in the Platonic school. A famous teacher of that sect—a random guess identifies him with Maximus of Tyre—began to lecture in the place of Justin's sojourn, and in his instructions Justin fancied that he had found the object of his long quest. The doctrine of ideas

was especially attractive to the enthusiastic student, who took in with eagerness the wealth of new thought that lay in the Platonic system. Every day was marked by a decided progress. In a short time he had become wise; yet a little while and he should see God, the goal of Platonic philosophy. But an accident, as men count accidents, was to change the whole course of his life. The brooding Platonist was to become an active Christian.

The mysterious stranger at the sea-side. One day, as he was going to a quiet spot by the sea-side for undisturbed meditation, his solitude was broken by the appearance of a venerable stranger, and the conversation which ensued determined Justin's future career. The old man had come to the shore for the simple purpose of looking out in the offing for some expected friends. Justin, with some little self-complacency, declared his nobler object. To Justin's amazement, instead of being complimented by the stranger on his lofty aims, he was charged with being a lover of words, not a lover of deed and truth; a professor of rhetoric, not a man of effective work. Step by step Justin yields with all the docility of one of the adversaries of the Platonic Socrates, with all the docility of his own Trypho, to the pitiless advance of his interlocutor. The stranger's discourse. Philosophy is the science of God and the knowledge of God. This divine knowledge is not

to be acquired by study nor by practice. No lecturer, no drill-master can impart it. To understand God, you must see Him. But to see God is the gift of God Himself. Man has no claim to this privilege by reason of his kindred to his Maker, nor does the soul gain any thing by release from the body; for the soul is not necessarily immortal, as philosophers dream. That it does not die is not by virtue of its own nature, but by the will and power of God, who keeps the souls of men alive in order to re-

A 2

cf. Gal. 3: 21-22. ὁ νόμος ἡμᾶς ἡγωνίζετο, ἵνα ἡμᾶς ἐκλάβῃ, ὅτι ἡμεῖς ἐκ τῆς σαρκὸς ἐσμεν. ὁ νόμος ἡμᾶς ἡγωνίζετο, ἵνα ἡμᾶς ἐκλάβῃ, ὅτι ἡμεῖς ἐκ τῆς σαρκὸς ἐσμεν.



ward the good and punish the wicked. The fancies of your wise men, Plato and Pythagoras, are naught. The soul is not life itself, but is merely a partaker of life. The life is in God. He gave and He can take away. If you desire to know of this doctrine, you may learn it of the prophets, who lived long before the time of your vaunted philosophers, just men on whom rested the blessing of God, men who spake by the spirit of God and foretold the future. These alone saw and declared the truth to man without fear or favor. No respecters of persons, no slaves of ambition, they proclaimed what they saw and heard, being filled with the Holy Ghost. These writings still exist, and whoso reads and believes will learn what philosophers ought to know. They needed no arguments to establish their message; their words are above arguments. Their proofs are to be sought in the history of the past and the present, in the fulfilment of their prophecies. To all this add the miracles that attested their divine mission, add the character of their message, the glorification of the Maker of the universe, Father and God, the announcement of His Son, the Christ. False prophets, filled with a lying and unclean spirit, never delivered such a message; their wonders are wrought to dismay men; the beings they glorify are spirits of error, are demons. Pray, above all, that the gates of light be opened to you, for none can understand these things unless it be given to him of God and His Christ.

After much discourse the mysterious stranger vanished, and Justin saw him no more; but, to use Justin's own language, a fire was kindled in the heart of the philosopher, and the love of the prophets and of the friends of Christ animated him to his martyr's end. The instructions of the strange old man, the study of the prophets, the association with the followers of Christ, led

Justin from the shades of the Academy into the dust and sun of Christian warfare.

The conversion seems electric, but most conversions, ancient and modern, are so represented; and we learn from another passage that Justin had long felt the power of the Christian life as shown in the steadfastness of Christian confessors, the holy boldness and holy joy of Christian martyrs. As after his conversion he did not trample on the philosopher's mantle, and cherished all that was good in the philosophic creed of his Platonic master, so before his conversion his liberal spirit refused to sneer at the senseless obstinacy of the Galileans, or admit the charge of nameless crimes against such heroic sufferers. His heart had been unconsciously prepared for communion with the Christian Church, and as soon as the intellectual bond that connected him with the Platonic school was severed he became a fervent and uncompromising disciple of Christ.

This whole interview has been considered in recent times a mere dramatic fiction. The question is almost of as little importance as the identification of the venerable stranger, with which editors have sometimes amused themselves. Was he an angel? A saint? St. John risen from the dead? Polycarp? An Ebionite preacher? The most important thing is the substantial accord of the statements in this account with what we know of Justin's views and Justin's history. In this account, as in Justin's writings, the Old Testament prophets bulk most largely. In this account we find distinctly asserted, what we might have gathered for ourselves, that Justin was a Platonist before he became a Christian. Nor is his prolonged quest any thing strange. Tatian, the disciple of Justin himself, tells us how he had travelled over many lands, had explored all

the wisdom of the Greeks, had tried many forms of heathen worship, and had sought admittance to all the mysteries, before the light of Christianity broke upon him. We find a similar search sketched in the *Hermotimus* of Justin's contemporary Lucian as well as in the *Clementine Homilies*. The age was full of 'seekers after God.'

The year of Justin's conversion is uncertain. As uncertain is the scene of the *Dialogue*. It cannot have been Time and place of Justin's conversion? Flavia Neapolis, as is shown by the mention of the sea, to say nothing of the unlikelihood that a celebrated teacher should have taken up his abode in so insignificant a place. Ephesus is a mere guess, and so is Alexandria.

'Freely ye have received, freely give.' In the true apostolic spirit Justin devoted his life thenceforth to the service of his Master. A woe was on him if he Justin's mission. preached not the Gospel. 'Every one,' he says, 'who can proclaim the truth and does not proclaim it will be judged of God.' Everywhere he shows a deep sense of the responsibility resting on him toward Jew and Gentile, whether he addresses the Antonines or argues with Trypho.

Free from all affectation of singularity, Justin did not placard the change in his views by a change in his manner of living. He retained his philosophic Justin's mode of life. garb, the mantle which had long been the uniform of the lover of wisdom, but the wisdom he now served was the wisdom of God and not the wisdom of man. The rough cassock gained him ready access where access might else have been denied, and the example was followed by others, notably by Tertullian, who defended his course in the famous tract *De Pallio*. He was a wanderer all his life, an evangelist, like his predecessor Quadratus, and it is not at all probable that he was aught

besides a layman. At all events there is not a breath of sacerdotalism in his writings; and while the student of the Christian eloquence of the fourth century, as he goes back to the rugged apologist of the second, misses the perfume, half incense, half attar of roses, that breathes from the pages of Basil and Gregory of Nazianzus and Chrysostom, he is more than compensated by the fresher air, the intenser reality of Justin. His knowledge of the Christian religion is drawn from immediate contact with the Christian life, not at this point and that, but over a wide range of travel; and his description of Christian worship is of priceless value, for the worship he describes was the worship of the Church Universal. Direct evidence for his sojourn at Alexandria depends on the genuineness of the *Cohortatio ad Graecos*. Eusebius tells us that he met Trypho at Ephesus, and we learn from the Apologies that he resided for some time at Rome.

It is impossible for us to form an adequate conception of Justin's work. We can only gather that it was mainly polemic and apologetic. His time is known as the time of the Apologists. In his school at Rome he doubtless gave instructions to all who wished to know further of this way, but, so far as we can judge by the titles of his works and the drift of his remaining treatises, the defence of Christianity, and the necessary warfare against Judaism, Paganism, and heresy formed his chief occupation.

In the time of Justin the Jewish reaction against Christianity had reached its height, and found its expression in the formal curses of the synagogue, in the dissemination of the vilest slanders against the Christian life, and in the bloody persecution of the Christians by the ringleader of the Jewish revolt under Hadrian. The Jews were bitter and dangerous antagonists, and the

Justin's work  
mainly po-  
lemic and  
apologetic.

1. Against the  
Jews.

harder to reach as their rabbis forbade all discussion of religious topics with Christians; but here and there one might be found like Justin's Trypho, whose ear could not be stopped against a man who approached him in the garb of a philosopher, and fascinated him by a marvellous familiarity with the Scriptures of the Old Covenant.

But the dangers to which the infant Church was exposed from the wrath of the Jews were of far less significance than the dangers which threatened from the antagonism of heathendom.

Up to the time of Trajan the Christian religion had no recognized existence except as an obscure sect of Judaism, and there was no definite conflict between the Church and the State; for the persecutions which bear the names of Nero and Domitian were freaks of imperial wantonness, not systematic efforts to suppress an abhorred sect. But in the reign of Trajan the Christian religion made itself felt as a power, and in one notorious instance, in the province of Bithynia, the deserted temples and the neglected worship of the gods showed that the state could no longer pass over this new faith in silent contempt, and from this time on we find the power of the throne combined with the passion of the people in opposition to the religion of Christ. Indeed, it is no new observation that the best emperors were, as a rule, hostile to Christianity. Trajan, Hadrian, Antoninus Pius, Marcus Aurelius, all opposed the spread of the new faith, and not the less resolutely because they were careful to keep the warfare within the strict bounds of legality. To define the weapons, to mark the limits of the arena, was to sanction the struggle. After the death of Marcus Aurelius there was a pause of more than fifty years in the conflict, and when it was renewed the state stood alone in its antagonism to the Christians, and as in the first period

the emperors merely sported with the popular prejudice against the Christians, in the third they endeavored to stir up the people in order to further their systematic plans for the annihilation of the Christian name. The reasons of this hostility are not far to seek, and belong to the commonplaces of history. Christianity was incompatible with the life of the Roman state. The peculiar mission of Christianity, as openly proclaimed by its followers, was the overthrow of all religions consecrated by antiquity. It was not satisfied with toleration—it aimed at nothing less than universal dominion. No matter how earnestly the apologists might repeat the words of our Saviour, ‘Render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar’s,’ what Caesar claimed as his own the Christian maintained to be God’s, and no Christian could be a loyal subject to the state when the very profession of allegiance was an abomination in his eyes.

At first, as we have seen, this *superstitio externa* was not sharply distinguished from other foreign forms of worship, and foreign religions were not excluded so far as foreigners themselves were incorporated into the Roman state, but every religion had to be licensed, had to be naturalized, if its professors were not to be exposed to punishment. But the Christians had no country except the country which they sought, and the only visible bond was a name, a watch-word, a pass-word, a by-word. It was this mysterious character of Christian society, of this *latebrosa et lucifugax natio*, that excited the jealousy of the statesman of the imperial time, and roused the suspicions of the rabble. For the common people, on whom the national faith had a much stronger hold than is ordinarily conceived, looked upon Christians as atheists; and in their eyes a religion that had no temples, no altars, no images,

no sacrifices, was a godless worship, and the popular cry was 'Away with the atheists.' The most abominable reports were circulated and believed: reports of human sacrifices, of cannibalism, such as fill mediæval chronicles concerning the Jews; reports of promiscuous lust and wild debauchery; and among the various heresies which divided the body of Christ, there were some that lent countenance to the charges which were brought against the Christians as a class.

But the rabble was not more hostile to Christianity than those who affected to despise the rabble.

Philosophers might share the Christian's contempt for the superstition of the masses, but an academy of philosophers that was open to slaves and artisans, to women and children, was a cage of unclean birds to those supercilious sages, and by a natural reaction the myths which they once ridiculed were revived and refreshed, and made to yield a deeper spiritual sense. In later times concessions were made to the Master himself, and the Neoplatonists tried to incorporate Him into their systems. 'If not a god, Christ was a man dear to God;' and it was in this spirit that Alexander Severus gave his statue a place in the imperial chapel in such company as Apollonius of Tyana, Orpheus, and Abraham. But even then the Neoplatonists had little indulgence for the followers of Christ; and at this time—for Celsus is of this time—the philosophic mind was full of malignity and rancor toward the Master, of bitter scorn toward the disciples.

Nor, in taking account of the elements of opposition to Christianity, must we overlook the professional antagonism, the hostility of vested interests.

Priests, artists, tradesmen found their position and their income endangered by a faith which did away with the worship of the gods. Ephesus in the

days of Paul was but one sample of a formidable trade union arrayed against the new doctrine, and any one who has looked into the social life of the empire knows what vast pecuniary interests were at stake.

Add to these enemies the religious impostors, who pervaded the empire and made merchandise of magic and sorcery, men who, like Alexander of Abonoteichos, regarded the Christians as in some sort rivals, and we can readily imagine that even in the second century, before the full significance of the revolutionary character of the Christian religion was revealed to its opponents, there was a formidable array of spiritual forces to call out all the energies of a man like Justin. It is this struggle that makes the study of these documents of the earlier Christian life so important and so fascinating. At times our author may linger too long over the prophecies at times he may lose himself in parentheses, and quote page after page of more or less irrelevant matter from the Septuagint, but we feel that this is a real battle, and Justin is a real warrior—now facing the emperors with all their power, now rebuking the false philosophers with all their rattling declamation, now silencing the popular hatred by a calm exposition of Christian life, and now wrestling with the arch-enemy himself and his hosts of evil angels. For the devil was a personal reality to Justin, as he is to every man at some time in his life, and in no part of the battle-field did Justin see the engineering of Satan more plainly than in the heresies of the time.

The third line of defence faced the heretics. Some of the most dangerous heresies of the early Church culminated in the lifetime of Justin, and neither personal nor local incitement was lacking. Samaria, the native country of the Christian philosopher, was the home

2. Against the  
heretics.



of Simon Magus and Menander; and Justin most probably came into personal contact with Marcion and Valentinus, two of the heresiarchs of the age. The blending of heathen and Christian elements in the Gnostic system, the evaporation of Christian doctrine into misty speculation, and the substitution of the liberation of the spirit for the salvation of the soul, the falsification or wresting of the Scriptures in furtherance of the new views, the practical manifestation of these principles in the extremes of asceticism and lust—all this must have been abhorrent to the candid, straightforward mind of Justin. But apart from these considerations, the speculative pride and the moral degradation of the Gnostic direction aggravated the bitterness of the heathen against the Christians, as is shown in the *True Word* of Celsus, and the spread of this idealistic tendency threatened to annihilate historical Christianity or to break up the Church into a variety of jangling sects, so that it is not surprising that Justin should have opposed the efforts of these heretics with all the apostolic fervor of his character, that he should have interrupted his argument with the heathen emperors in order to express his indignation against these traducers of the truth as it is in Jesus. In the brief memoir known as the *Lesser Apology*, he utters a manly protest against the government as represented by the prefect Urbicus, he defies the machinations of the Cynic Crescens, but almost his last word is a declaration of sovereign contempt for the impious and lying doctrine of the Simonians. Two of his lost works were directed against the heretics: one against the heretics in general, another against Marcion in particular, for Marcion was by far the most consistent and influential of the Gnostics, brought out into boldest relief the anti-Judaic character of the movement, and attacked what Justin considered the foundation of the

Christian system, or, at all events, the most cogent proof of its truth.

The question has been asked, What was the immediate result of Justin's work? Little that Justin's influence in his life. can discover. A Christian of his fervent spirit, his manly earnestness, could not have labored vain, and in his work as an evangelist he must have done much to strengthen the faith of the wavering and to win new disciples to the Christian doctrine. But he founded no school of Christian thought, and, though he was active against the heretics, his solitary disciple, Tatian, became the leader of a feeble heretical sect. His effort to reconcile the old world with the new failed, and the progress of doctrine his liberal views were narrowed, his loose opinions crystallized into sharper dogmatic forms.

Nor does he seem to have succeeded in impressing the emperors in favor of Christianity. The rude freedom with which he addressed them was not so strange to imperial ears as has been supposed. The philosopher's cloak had protected others in the reign of the philosophic emperors, and to their equanimity there could not have been much difference between the vulgar abuse of the notorious Peregrinus Proteus and the prophetic warnings of Justin Martyr; and although the language of Justin was not so impassioned as that of Minucius Felix or Tertullian, not so sarcastic as that of Tatian nor so insolent as that of Hermias, it knows nothing of the courtly moderation of Athenagoras, and was hardly suited to win the good-will of the head of the state. Orosius, indeed, tells us that Antoninus Pius was moved by Justin's representations to take kindlier views of Christianity; but there seems to be no sufficient warrant for such a statement.

In view of this immediate failure, it has been suggested <sup>After his death.</sup> that Justin's great influence on following generations was due more to his martyr's death than to the intrinsic value of his writings. No doubt that noble end enhanced his power, but it was only one manifestation, though the crowning manifestation of his spirit.

The fact of his martyrdom is beyond dispute. Irenaeus, a younger contemporary, bears witness to it, <sup>Martyrdom of Justin.</sup> and from the time of Tertullian on Justin has always been known as the martyr. An account of Justin's end is found in the Martyrologium, an account of much later date than the event which it commemorates; but the absence of dramatic detail, the quiet tone of the narrative, the general coincidence with what we know of Justin's views, combined with minute discrepancies in less important matters—all these points give the stamp of truth to the record.

It is not improbable that the Cynic philosopher Crescens, whom we know from the Second Apology as <sup>Crescens.</sup> a bitter personal enemy of Justin, was the direct or indirect cause of his death, although we have no distinct evidence of the statement so confidently given by later writers. No philosophic sect was more bitterly opposed to the Christian religion than was the Cynic.

It is unnecessary to copy from Lucian the familiar figure of these mendicant friars of Paganism—the long beard, the rough cassock, the knotty staff, the ragged wallet, the shameless mien; it is unnecessary to give examples of their sycophancy, their vanity, their scurrility, their insatiate greed of money, their unblushing indulgence in every lust of the flesh. Such men must have been irritated to the last degree by the demeanor and by the doctrine of the Christians. The Christian creed contained many of the elements of the Cynic system in a higher

form—the Cynic system, I mean, as understood by Epictetus, a Marcus Aurelius, a Maximus Tyrius; and the life of the Christian must have been a perpetual rebuke to the degraded followers of Antisthenes, who moved in much the same circles and addressed much the same audiences with the Christians. Justin has himself given an outline of his discussions with Crescens, and triumphed without disguise over his silenced adversary, who was either ignorant of the religion which he reviled, or, if he knew it, could not understand it; or, if he knew it and understood it, did not have the courage to acknowledge its excellence.’

The mortified Cynic was the very man to bring the *argumentum baculinum* to bear on his scornful opponent. Justin himself declares his expectation of falling a victim to the machinations of Crescens, and Tatian, the disciple of Justin, informs us that Crescens made the effort to put his mortal enemy out of the way.

The martyrdom of Justin took place in the reign of Marcus Aurelius and Lucius Verus, under the prefect Rusticus. The date commonly given is 166. Aubé puts it, where Baronius puts it, in the first months of 163, and in this he is sustained by Borghesi, ‘the greatest master of Roman epigraphy,’ and by the distinguished archæologist Cavedoni. According to Eusebius, Justin suffered shortly after having written his Second Apology; his Second Apology was written not long after the condemnations pronounced by Urbicus. Urbicus was prefect in the closing years of the reign of Antoninus Pius, and was succeeded by Salvius Julianus, who, in his turn, was followed in January, 163, by Junius Rusticus. By putting the Second Apology in 160, or before March, 161, and the martyrdom of Justin in the early part of 163, Aubé claims that all the data are satisfied.

qui primus in epigraphia litterarum communis consuetudinem defecit — (Ritschl)

The great name of Justin has been made to do service for a number of works which are not his, and the bulk of the doubtful and spurious productions is more than equal to that of the genuine.

Works of Justin,  
genuine, doubtful,  
and spurious.

In the front rank of Justin's works stand the two Apologies, the genuineness of which has never been seriously questioned; and even if the historical allusions and the doctrinal positions did not fix the origin of the First or Greater Apology in the second century, the influence of it is to be traced in the writings of Tatian, Irenaeus, Minucius Felix, Tertullian, and Theophilus, who transcribe, translate, and imitate passage after passage. And the Second or Lesser Apology is clearly by the same hand as the First, with which it shares every peculiarity of style and thought. Add to these internal evidences the express testimony of Eusebius and Photius, and we may safely say that no writings of the Christian Church have a more certain warrant than these two.

The First Apology is a noble appeal for liberty of conscience, a manly protest against the punishment of Christians as Christians, a lofty vindication of the character of the Christian religion. The Second Apology, which is much shorter and bears more evident marks of hasty composition, repels the mockery of the heathen enemies of Christianity, and gives the reasons why Christians complained of persecution, why God did not interfere to deliver His people.

The First Apology.

The bold, as some might think, the audacious tone of the Apologies has led some to fancy that they are not, what they claim to be, actual documents intended for the eye of the emperor and senate; but Justin was no holiday Christian, and it is incon-

The Apologies real documents.

ceivable that a man who vindicated his faith with his blood should have shrunk from utterances which, after all, did not go beyond the boldness of a Peregrinus, to say nothing of the imaginary speeches of Apollonius of Tyana. To suppose that these Apologies are mere academic performances is to overlook the license accorded to the philosopher; is to shut the eyes to the earnestness of the Christian life of the century.

According to Eusebius, the Apologies were written in Rome, and this statement is not in the least unlikely. The time has always been a matter of dispute, and is discussed elsewhere in this volume.

The Dialogue with Trypho bears on its face the evidence of its genuineness, and it is wholly unnecessary to mention the more or less frivolous grounds on which the Justinian authorship has been attacked. Apart from the historical allusions to the second century, apart from the testimony of Eusebius, apart from the general agreement with the Apologies in doctrine and thought and want of method, the language is evidently the same, and, though there are slight variations in vocabulary, as might be expected from the difference of theme, these have little weight in comparison with the remarkable coincidences in tricks of speech and irregularities of syntax.

In the Dialogue with Trypho the prejudices of the Jews against Christianity are corrected, the doctrines of Christ's incarnation and redemption through His blood are proved by reference to prophecy, and the Christians are shown to be the true spiritual Israel and the true people of God.

As our immediate concern is with the relation of the Dialogue to the Apologies, we may pass over the questions as to the reality of the discussion, the personality of

Trypho—identified by some with the Rabbi Tarphon—and the place where the Dialogue is supposed to have been held.

In time, the Dialogue with Trypho may be put after the First Apology, to which there is a definite allusion, and more safely under Antoninus Pius than under Marcus Aurelius.

The genuineness of the *Cohortatio ad Graecos*, or *The Hortatory Address to the Greeks*, has been much questioned. There is no such title in the list of Justin's writings as preserved by Eusebius, Jerome, and Photius. The personal relations of the author seem to have been different from those of Justin, there is a different attitude toward Paganism, and the absence of the characteristic doctrine of the Logos is hardly to be accounted for. The language alone is well-nigh a satisfactory evidence that the *Cohortatio* is not by Justin. From a stylistic point of view, the *Cohortatio* is a better performance than the Apologies, better than the Dialogue with Trypho; and those who have attempted to account for the superior finish of the *Cohortatio* on the ground of the leisurely preparation of the tract in the early period of Justin's conversion, have not sufficiently observed that the Dialogue with Trypho, the opening of which is Justin's best piece of composition, shows all the peculiarities of the more urgent and passionate Apologies. Semisch himself, after as elaborate a defence as the thesis admitted, has finally abandoned the case.

Similar arguments have been brought to bear against the genuineness of the fragment on the Resurrection. External evidence is lacking, there are discrepancies in statement, discrepancies in dogma, and the style varies widely from the style of the Apologies and the Dialogue.

A tract of the compass of a few pages On the Sol  
On the Sole Gov- Government of God (*περὶ μοναρχίας*) is open-  
ernment of God. to grave suspicion by reason of style and  
contents, and seems to be unsupported by documentar-  
evidence.

It is hardly worth while to mention the *Expositio Ri-  
Spurious ctæ Fidei*, the *Epistola ad Zenam et Serenum*, the  
works. *Confutatio dogmatum quorundam Aristotelis*, the  
*Quaestiones et Responsiones ad Orthodoxos*, the *Qua-  
stiones Christianorum ad Gentiles*, the *Quaestiones Gen-  
tilium ad Christianos*. These productions have long since  
been pronounced spurious by competent judges, and  
have been content to leave them unexamined.

Two works remain, to most minds clearly not Justin  
ian, and yet to some minds not so clearly as to make the  
mention of them superfluous, even if the works them-  
selves were not of great intrinsic interest.

The *Oratio ad Graecos*—*λόγος πρὸς Ἕλληνας*—is ev-  
Δόγος πρὸς Ἕλ- dently by a different hand. Justin is negli-  
ληνας. gent and prolix, his language is marked by  
the *laissez-aller* of every-day life, while the author of the  
*Oratio ad Graecos* has a rapid, pungent, incisive, rhetori-  
cal style. The author of the *Oratio ad Graecos* takes the  
popular view of Paganism, and attacks the mythology of  
the Greeks as the incarnation of immorality. Justin's  
philosophic training in the schools of Greek thought has  
given him a far deeper insight into the nature of Hellenism;  
and the man whose great aim in life before he became  
a Christian was to see God must have been as incapable  
of the superficial mockery as he was of the brilliant rhetoric  
of the author of the *Oratio*, who, in my judgment  
bears a strong family likeness to Hermias. But it is  
hardly necessary to dwell on the internal evidence, as the  
discovery of a Syriac translation, in which this piece is



attributed to one Ambrosius, has set the question at rest, so far as questions ever rest.

In the Prolegomena to his elaborate edition of the Epistle to Diognet<sup>us</sup> Otto has undertaken the hopeless task of vindicating the Justinian origin of this famous letter, of which Bunsen says that it 'is indisputably, after Scripture, the finest monument we know of sound Christian feeling, noble courage, and manly eloquence.' Otto's argument seems to have made little impression on the students of early Christian literature, and it might suffice to say with the great scholar just quoted, 'I will not lose my time by proving over and over again that it cannot be Justin's.' But, as I have not been able to withstand the temptation to add this famous piece as an appendix to the Apologies, the reader is entitled to a statement of some of the grounds on which the Justinian origin is usually rejected.

The historical allusions in the Epistle are so vague that little can be made out of them for or against the time of Justin. This vagueness has been used by one school to bring the composition down to a late period, by others the authorship has been pushed back to an earlier generation than Justin's; while a recent writer of eminence recognizes in c. 7 an allusion to two emperors, father and son, Marcus Aurelius and Commodus, and assigns the letter to the time between 177 and 180.

The coincidences of thought between Justin and the author of the Epistle are found in all the Fathers; they are the common property of the primitive Church.

But the author of the Epistle looks upon heathen idolatry as mere fetichism, as incomprehensible absurdity. To Justin the Greek gods are real beings—demons, not gods, but still real. The author of

the Epistle views with equal contempt Jewish and heathen sacrifices. Justin recognizes the hand of God in this provisional form of worship.

And the same observation holds with regard to other points of the Jewish ritual, the Jewish ceremonial law. The author of the Epistle has only a sneer for meats and drinks and circumcision. Justin had a deeper and truer conception of the relations of Judaism to Christianity. According to the author of the Epistle, Christ was hidden until his incarnation. According to Justin, the Logos was revealed in the theophanies of the Old Testament. According to the author of the Epistle, the execution of God's counsel was delayed in order to show that God's grace and favor alone could save, while Justin defends the postponement of the revelation on the ground that God had given man the power to choose between the good and the evil, and had strengthened his natural ability by the presence of the Logos, which was with Socrates as well as with David. Besides, it is especially worthy of note that in the whole Epistle there is no express citation of any passage of Scripture, and that no use is made of the Old Testament: for it is utterly incredible that Justin should have written a work of this tenor without a solitary citation from the Septuagint, which elsewhere he quotes in season and out of season; without a solitary argument drawn from prophecy, which was to Justin the most cogent of all the proofs of the truth of the Christian system.

But, if all this is not enough, the style of the Epistle constitutes the argument which it is hardest to invalidate by any hypothesis of youthful elegance and senile slovenliness. Justin's style is the every-day Greek of the educated man of his century, the Epistle aims at classic expression; Justin writes negligently, though not

---

so incorrectly as is sometimes represented. The language of the Epistle is carefully polished. Except under the pressure of especial excitement, Justin keeps to the speech of his time. As a former Platonist, his diction is here and there colored by reminiscences of his master. As a diligent student of the Septuagint, his language shows occasional traces of that idolized version; but as he seldom sinks into sheer solecism, so he seldom rises above the level of the common dialect. There are many effective thoughts in Justin, few effective phrases, and the only rhetorically effective period is borrowed. The author of the Epistle reached whatever height was to be reached in that time, and is as determined an antithesis-monger as Maximus Tyrius.

In the development of his theme Justin lacks logical arrangement, and interrupts his discourse by all manner of parentheses. The author of the Epistle pursues his subject with strict method. Finally, Justin's pet expressions are lacking in the Epistle, and there are many peculiarities of diction in the Epistle which we should seek in vain in the genuine works of Justin.

A positive decision has not been reached as to author or century. In the opening of the Notes I have given some brief account of recent views on this interesting subject.

To return to Justin himself.

The ancient Church always speaks of the Martyr with unconditional praise; Tatian calls him ὁ Σα-  
Justin's stand-  
log. μασιώτατος, Tertullian counts him among the *virī sanctitate et praestantia insignes*, and Methodius puts him not far below the apostles. Soon after his death he received the surnames of 'Philosopher and Martyr,' because he declared that he had found the only true philosophy in the Christian faith, because he had sealed his tes-

timony with his blood. The Fathers of the next generation, such as Irenaeus and Tertullian, borrow largely from his writings; and Eusebius expresses his admiration in measured terms. Nor has he been less esteemed in modern times, though in more recent days Justin has not always met with the same reverence; and while all concede the importance of his writings for the history of the early Church, some have denied him all pretensions to philosophic thought, have sneered at his inaccurate statements, his 'weak and inconclusive arguments, his trifling applications and erroneous interpretations of Scripture.' True, many of the Fathers stand above him in solid learning, in natural endowments, in creative force, in lofty spirituality. But, for all that, he was a man of earnest thought, of apostolic zeal, of immovable faith, of liberal nature, and if he had not the tongues of angels nor even the gold mouth of Chrysostom, his message falls from lips that have been touched with a live coal from off the altar of God.

It must always be borne in mind that Justin's whole direction was practical rather than theoretic. As a thinker. 'Not for the school, but for life,' was more truly his motto than Seneca's, yet his title of 'philosopher' is not undeserved. Bunsen calls him 'a decidedly speculative thinker,' and Ritter, after making every possible deduction, concedes his important influence on the progress of Christian philosophy.

Nor should it be forgotten that he was a pioneer, that he was the first to make a path from philosophy to Christianity; and it is no wonder that in his earnest advance he brushed aside all the flowers of rhetoric, and disregarded the thorns and burs of grammar. To the Greek scholar, familiar with the subtleties of Attic diction, the roughness of Justin is at first repellent, and

the bulk of the Dialogue with Trypho is peculiarly arid to a reader who has not a professional interest in the study; but touch on the Christian life, and the eloquence of true feeling lights up the homely style, and as one learns to appreciate the thoroughness of Justin's conviction and the wide reach of the views which he is laboring to express, the honest carelessness of his Greek garb is not less welcome than the studied costume of the fourth century.

Granted that he is not to be measured as a mere writer with Chrysostom or Basil or Gregory of Nazianzum; granted that he falls short of Athenagoras in elegance, of Tatian in point; granted that he is not to be reckoned with the great master-thinkers of the patristic time—with Tertullian, who borrowed, be it remembered, with all the audacity of genius, with Origen, with Athanasius, with Augustin; granted the vagueness of his views, the looseness of his terminology, the want of logical development of his theme—grant all this, and there still remains a man of no ordinary mind—a man much greater than his books, a man whose lead apologists of far more brilliant talents have been content to follow.

Justin's theology was the theology of the heart. His faith was no mere intellectual faith; it was no dogmatic craze, no day-dream of quietism. It was the principle of moral regeneration. Christ's test was his test. 'By their fruits ye shall know them.' To him Christianity consisted not in word, but in deed. 'Without holiness no man shall see the Lord;' or, as he phrases it, no man shall reach a blessed immortality.

The love of the Gospel is the love of the truth. To Justin this life is not worth a lie; and Bunsen well remarks that his best epitaph may be said to be the words about truth which are quoted from

any other father in his time

Justin's love  
of the truth.

one of his lost writings, 'There is Truth, and nothing is stronger than Truth.'

But there is no real love of truth without courage, and the courage of Justin reminds us now of Socrates, now of Paul. It is not the courage of an Ignatius, of a Polycarp, which is almost ecstatic, almost feverish in its joy. It is based broad upon solid conviction, and rests with massive squareness on God's Word. The language which he holds toward the emperors in his Greater Apology is the language of one 'that fears God, and has no other fear;' and De Pressensé admires—as who would not?—'its manly courage, its simple dignity, its noble frankness.' He lived as seeing Him who is invisible, as in the immediate presence of his Lord and Judge, and did not hesitate to warn his earthly rulers of the penalties of unrighteousness. The emperors were of more importance to him simply because of their greater responsibility.

To this noble spirit we might forgive many inaccuracies of composition and not a little slovenliness of style. But let us look more narrowly into this charge which has been so often brought against Justin.

In the first centuries, if we except Athenagoras and Minucius Felix, logic and rhetoric are negligently treated by the Fathers. Photius himself says that the Apostolic Fathers wrote in a simple, inartistic, ordinary style. Even those who went from the schools of the philosophers to the school of Christ are said to have renounced deliberately whatever charm of diction they might have acquired from converse with the literary heroes of classical antiquity. In Justin's day we are still far from the times when Julian's interdict, which forbade Christian teachers to interpret the masterpieces of Pagan letters, was felt as a cruel blow by the Fathers of the Church; and his

sneering allusions to the eloquence of Matthew and Luke would have fallen harmless on their ears. Christ was no sophist, no rhetorician, says Justin himself. Still I do not agree with those who suppose that Justin was one of that number who deliberately renounced style, nor do I attach much importance to the declamations of the Fathers against the meretricious charms of human discourse. They say that art is a hindrance rather than a help; that eloquence is a delusion and a snare; that the simple and naked truth is sufficient to prosper in the thing whereto it was sent. But the Fathers were men as well as Fathers, and the excellency of man's speech is generally at its best when that excellency is most depreciated. However, Justin is an exceptionally honest man, and it is tolerably evident that he was too full of his message to elaborate his composition. Of this composition few critics have much to say that is favorable. True, Winer remarks that Justin's diction is unusually pure for his time, and Bunsen terms him a good Hellenistic writer, and calls the thirteenth chapter of the First Apology 'sublime;' but the great majority of critics, from Photius down, notice the lack of grace in his expression, and the awkwardness of his periodology. It would be easy enough to join the cry against Justin's style; to call it incorrect, lumbering, colorless; to point out the long digressions, the frequent repetitions, the indigestible parentheses, the dragging clauses, the coupled synonyms. But Winer is right in the main as to Justin's vocabulary, and the percentage of post-classical words in the Apologies is far from large—indeed marvellously small—when we remember how Justin was steeped in the study of the Septuagint, and how imperatively new relations call for new expressions. Most of the negligences of his syntax may be defended by classic warrant, many of its diver-

gences are common to the whole century, and may found in such authors as Plutarch and Lucian, who not excluded from the range of text-books. At all even lamentations over the decadence of the Greek language of this period come with an ill grace from those who emend a corrupt text by impossible forms and unhelpful syntax; and while a Cobet may be permitted to claim against the depravation of post-Aristotelian Greek it requires something more than mere declamation to make a man a Cobet; and it was to reduce the man to false and superficial criticism, such as one hears of persons who ought to be more modest, that I have taken the pains to bring the peculiarities of Justin's language to the test of classic usage. No author, worth studying at all, should be negligently handled in any direction, stylistic or other, and Justin's message sufficiently important to justify an attentive consideration.

Perhaps it may not be out of place here to say that far from regretting the time consumed by my occasional excursions into patristic territory, I have only learned to appreciate more fully, as I go back to my special work, the wisdom of Niebuhr's advice, when he says, 'The fathers of the Church ought to be read more by philologists than they are; . . . and the example of such great men as Scaliger, Hemsterhuys, and Valckenaer should light the way, and show us that we cannot become thoroughly acquainted with the history of those times unless we take into account the writings of a Justin Martyr, a Clement of Alexandria, an Athenagoras.' And in the preface to his excellent Outline of Roman Literature, Prof. Hübner, one of the foremost epigraphists of our day, has said with emphasis, 'I have never been able to understand the Roman literature from the third to the sixth cent



could be taught without a detailed account of such men as Tertullian, Prudentius, Jerome, and Augustin.'

A more serious charge than inelegance of language has been brought against Justin, and it is not to be denied that in the heat of composition he has made many awkward slips; that he miscalls the prophets, puts Zephaniah for Zechariah, Jeremiah for Daniel, Isaiah for Jeremiah, Hosea for Zechariah, Zechariah for Malachi; that he dovetails verses from different parts of the Scriptures, and shows a sovereign disregard of chronology. He makes Jethro the uncle of Moses, and Herod a contemporary of Ptolemy Philadelphus. He implies that Heraclitus was a Stoic—and so he was by anticipation—and puts both Heraclitus and Musonius to death without good warrant; and his confusion of Simon Magus with Semo Sancus is a stock example of uncritical identification. But who is so devoid of historical vision as to blame Justin for believing in the Sibyl and Hystaspes, or for deriving the wisdom of the Greeks from the books of Moses? And what does the whole bead-roll of blunders amount to after all in view of Justin's testimony on matters of vital importance for the history of Christianity? Rude he may be in speech, inaccurate in statement, but about him revolve some of the most momentous problems of Christian tradition.

Among these problems may be mentioned the doctrine of the Trinity, the nature of the sacraments, the order of the Christian Church, and the establishment of the canonical Gospels, and so nicely poised is the testimony of Justin on all these points that his authority is invoked by partisans of the most diverse views. To enter into these questions at all would be to overstep the line which circumscribes the present undertaking; but it may be allowable, for the sake of illustrating the importance

of Justin's evidence, to give the student some hints as to the controversy on the topic last mentioned—on Justin's use of our canonical Gospels. The battle over the question whether Justin's *Memoirs of the Apostles* are identical with our canonical Gospels has lasted nearly a century. Begun by Stroth in 1777, it is safe to say that the fight is going on at this very moment in the powder-magazine of some theological review. It is the Homeric question of the canon. Eichhorn and Paulus and Gieseler have each had his word to say on the subject, and Credner, whose entrance upon the field marks a recrudescence of the controversy, has gained great reputation by his acute and vigorous discussion of the subject. An English bishop, Marsh, has taken the negative side, an American clergyman, Norton, the affirmative. The number of pages consumed is appalling. Bindemann is content with 128, but Hilgenfeld does not sum up his complex result until he reaches page 304, and Semisch's book takes up no less than 409 pages. And yet these are only a few of the names that might be cited, only a few of the pages to be studied by those who would master the bearings of the controversy; and the mere statement of the history of the question would take up more space than could be occupied with profit by the introduction to a school-book. Suffice it to say that Justin's citations from the *Memoirs of the Apostles* do not tally exactly, save in a few instances, with the parallel passages in our Gospels, and, though the differences are not considerable to the uncritical eye, some theory is demanded to account for the discrepancy; and much stress has been laid on the fact that these divergent texts recur with the same divergences, not only in Justin, but in other writers who are known to have used uncanonical Gospels. Then there are certain statements, certain reports of sayings of our Lord, which

*Just*

do not occur in our Gospels, and these also are made much of or made light of by the debaters according to the side which they have espoused. The extreme positions are occupied by those who deny that Justin made any use of our canonical Gospels, and by those who maintain that Justin made little use of any other. The former either reconstruct for him a lost Gospel, or refer his citations to a number of archetypal or apocryphal Gospels, such as the Gospel according to Peter, the Gospel according to the Hebrews. The latter account for the variations mainly by Justin's careless quotations from memory — for which curious parallels might be adduced from the popular treatment of our own authorized version — and also by Justin's use of other recensions of the synoptics. Between the two extremes are those who admit only the subordinate use of one or more of the synoptics in connection with one or more gospels of the Petrine type.

One great objective point in this whole struggle is the date of the Fourth Gospel. If Justin was acquainted with the Fourth Gospel, the whole fabric of a great historical school falls to the ground, and we can readily understand why the controversy assumes an almost personal tone when it approaches the subject, and, like all other personal controversies, becomes more or less disingenuous.

Certainly confidence is not lacking to the leaders on either side, and trophies are erected with great intrepidity by conservatives and destructives alike. In such battles no truce is ever made for burying dead arguments, and in this war there is no immediate prospect of a discharge; for while Keim, no mean authority, declares that the long struggle has ended in favor of the conservatives, the author of 'Supernatural Religion' has demolished, to his own satisfaction, the last defence of those who maintain

that the Memoirs of the Apostles are identical with our Gospels.

But though this 'burning question' has blazed more fiercely than any other connected with Justin, a formidable array of disputants might be cited for either side of the other controversies that have been indicated, and Justin has been claimed for widely diverse schools of Christian thought. Although he forsook Plato, he is considered a Platonist, and to his influence the supposed infiltration of the body of Christian doctrine with Platonic elements has been freely attributed. Although he reprobates those extreme Jewish Christians who insisted on the observance of the Mosaic law by Jew and Gentile alike, the mildness of his tone toward those weaker Jewish brethren who adhered to the ancient ritual has caused him to be considered an Ebionite. Although his conception of Christian doctrine is not unlike that of Paul, and although his phraseology reminds us now and then of the Pauline Epistles, the *argumentum ex silentio* has been racked to prove his hostility to the Apostle to the Gentiles; and the man who, of all the Fathers, seems to have least brooked any compromise with falsehood, is supposed to have kept back his real convictions out of regard for a respectable party in the Church, and to have relieved his mind by girding at Paul under the name of Simon Magus. Upon this debatable ground, thick-planted with caltrops for unwary hobby-riders and lurid with the glare of an undying *odium theologicum*, I have neither inclination nor vocation to enter.

But there is one point so peculiarly Justinian that it cannot be passed over in silence, the doctrine of the λόγος σπερματικός, or germinant word, for this doctrine is Justin's chief claim to a place among the

Other contro-  
versies.

Justin a Plato-  
nist?

An Ebionite?

An antagonist  
of Paul?

Doctrine of the  
λόγος σπερμα-  
τικός.

thinkers of the Christian Church, and, I may add, his strongest hold on the sympathies of those whose studies have made them more familiar with the world of classic thought than with the progress of Christian doctrine.

We have already seen that Justin did not cease to be a philosopher in becoming a Christian. To him the

The Logos. Christian system was the higher philosophy, the full-orbed perfection, of which other systems had only a few scintillations. Christianity is the pure and complete manifestation of Reason in humanity—Reason being at the same time the Divine Word. So far as other philosophies conform with the Christian philosophy they are true, they are emanations of the Divine. But they are only faint and troubled and broken images of the True. Their language is self-contradictory, their knowledge is not the ultimate, the irrefutable knowledge. What have they that they have not received? Every truth that they proclaim is of God. Every good utterance belongs to the Christians, no matter who has uttered it; and all those who lived in conformity with reason are Christians, even though they have been accounted atheists. Socrates was a Christian, Heraclitus was a Christian—Abraham, the three holy children, Elias, and many others. God has never left himself without a witness, and, on the other hand, the demons have never ceased to persecute the men who have endeavored to enlighten their fellows with the partial light which had been vouchsafed to them. Socrates was persecuted in his day, as were the Christians in Justin's time; accused, as were the Christians, of introducing new divinities, of not believing in the gods. He taught men to renounce the evil demons by casting out of his republic the poets who had sung their praises, and he urged them to seek after the Unknown God. But this man, who knew Christ only in part, found none to die for

this doctrine, whereas Christ was followed to the death, not by philosophers and men of culture only, but by artisans and untutored people. For Christ is the power of the Ineffable Father, not the mere recipient of a seed of the Divine, which God has sown throughout the world. This Divine Logos came to earth complete in the person of Christ, and all the jangling contradictions of partial systems are harmonized in Him.

The name Spermatic Word, or Reason, λόγος σπερματικός, is a Stoic term, but it was used by the Stoics in a different sense. According to the Stoics, 'the λόγος σπερματικός is that part of the Deity which goes forth from him for the formation of the world, and is resolved into a plurality of λόγοι σπερματικοί' (Ueberweg). But Justin's doctrine is much nearer the doctrine of Philo, with its λόγος ἐνδιάθετος and its λόγος προφορικός, the λόγος ἐνδιάθετος being the Word united with the Divine Essence and resting in the bosom of God, the λόγος προφορικός being the Word begotten, produced, separated from the Divine Substance to create and organize the world. Of this doctrine the λόγος σπερματικός is a further development. In Philo the Word is but the 'shadow of God.' To Justin as to John the Word is God. In Philo the Word is the type of humanity, in so far as humanity participates in reason, and hence all men are the children of God and bear His image, the image of His Word. Justin considers the Word as spread abroad in the world, and, so to speak, 'incarnate in humanity' (Aubé). There is a particle of the Divine Word in every soul of man, but the seed does not germinate in all alike. Truth and virtue are the fruits which witness its presence. The search for truth and the practice of virtue show the active indwelling of the Word. Hence Christianity is no new thing, as its detractors allege; it is as old as humanity. The Word had its saints, its martyrs,

before the coming of Christ ; and all that is true, all that is noble in the instructions of Greek philosophers as well as of Hebrew prophets, is Christian.

The thought is audacious, and it is not strange that much has been written to explain away this short method of harmonizing the history of the world, for it would seem as if Justin did not simply recognize the hand of God in the preparation of the way for the coming of Christ. This the other Fathers have done, but according to him the footsteps of the Logos are to be traced throughout the ages, faintly luminous among the Greeks, brighter among the Hebrews, shining with full effulgence only at the advent of our Saviour.

Whatever may be thought of this conception, it could not have entered into any mind but a mind of broad views, could never have been cherished except by a heart of wide sympathies. But Justin is none the less ardent a Christian for this generous fellow-feeling with an Heraclitus, a Socrates, a Plato, a Musonius. He is none the less a firm believer in the necessity of the revelation of God in His written Word.

While he accords to the great heathen thinkers glimpses of the truth, he expressly declares that the resemblance of the Platonic doctrines to the teachings of the Old Testament is due to Plato's direct acquaintance with the Scriptures. The doctrine of free moral agency was taken from Moses; and all that philosophers and poets have said of the immortality of the soul, of punishment after death, of the contemplation of heavenly things, was borrowed originally from Jewish sources. But even if we leave out these indications of dependence, we must not forget that Justin insists with the most earnest iteration on the completeness of the Christian system, its adaptation to all sorts and conditions of men, the marvellous attestation of

Direct obligations  
of the heathen  
philosophers to  
revelation.

its divinity by the holy life and triumphant death of its confessors.

For all this the philosophy of the pre-Christian time was not sufficient. But, as Justin saw the powers of darkness in the worship of the heathen deities, so he saw the gleams of divine light in the words of heathen philosophers, and if he failed in the attempt to span the chasm—*magnis tamen excidit ausis*; and the heart of every classical scholar will warm toward the rugged apologist for his generous recognition of Socrates and Plato as fellow-Christians.

---

There are two manuscripts of the Apologies, the *Codex Reginus*, in the National Library at Paris, written in the year 1364, and the *Codex Claromontanus* (*Mediomontanus*), now at Cheltenham, of the late date 1541, which agrees closely with the *Codex Reginus*—so closely that it would seem to be a copy of it. ‘We must never forget,’ says Bunsen, ‘that we have only one manuscript, twice copied, and a very indifferent one, as will appear from a comparison of the passages which have been preserved by Eusebius.’ Otto leaves it an open question whether both MSS. come from a common source, or the younger is a copy of the elder.

---





---

THE APOLOGIES OF JUSTIN MARTYR,

AND

THE EPISTLE TO DIOGNETUS.

---



# ΤΟΥ ΑΓΙΟΥ ΙΟΥΣΤΙΝΟΥ

## ΑΠΟΛΟΓΙΑ ΠΡΩΤΗ ΥΠΕΡ ΧΡΙΣΤΙΑΝΩΝ

ΠΡΟΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΙΝΟΝ ΤΟΝ ΕΥΣΕΒΗ.

1. Αυτοκράτορι Τίτῳ Αἰλίῳ Ἀδριανῷ Ἀντωνίνῳ Εὐσε

Address. Σεβαστῷ Καίσαρι καὶ Οὐρηρυσσίμῳ υἱῷ φιλο

φῷ καὶ Λουκίῳ φιλοσόφῳ Καίσαρος φύσει καὶ Εὐσεβούς εἰσποιήτῳ, ἐραστῇ παιδείας, ἱερᾷ τε συγκ  
τῷ καὶ δήμῳ παντὶ Ῥωμαίων ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐκ παντὸς γένε  
ανθρώπων ἀδίκως μισουμένων καὶ ἐπηρεαζομένων Ἰουσ  
νος Πρίσκου τοῦ Βακχείου, τῶν ἀπὸ Φλαουίας Νέας πόλι  
τῆς Συρίας Παλαιστίνης, εἰς αὐτῶν ὧν, τὴν προσφώνη  
καὶ ἔντευξιν πεποιήμαι.

2. Τοὺς κατ' ἀλήθειαν εὐσεβεῖς καὶ φιλοσόφους μὴ

Justin de-  
mauds justice. τάληδες τιμῶν καὶ στέργειν ὁ λόγος ὑπα

ρεύει, παραιτουμένους δόξαις παλαιῶν ἐξα  
λουθεῖν, ἂν φαῦλαι ὦσιν· οὐ γὰρ μόνον μὴ ἔπαισσαι τ  
ἀδίκως τι πράξασιν ἢ δογματίσασιν ὁ σώφρων λόγος ὑπ  
γορεύει, ἀλλ' ἐκ παντὸς τρόπου καὶ πρὸ τῆς ἑαυτοῦ ψυχ  
τὸν φιλαλήθη, καὶ θάνατος ἀπειλῆται, τὰ δίκαια λέγειν  
καὶ πράττειν αἰρεῖσθαι δεῖ. Ὑμεῖς μὲν οὖν ὅτι λέγει  
εὐσεβεῖς καὶ φιλόσοφοι καὶ φύλακες δικαιοσύνης καὶ ἐ  
σταὶ παιδείας, ἀκούετε πανταχοῦ· εἰ δὲ καὶ ὑπάρχετε, δεῖχ

σεται. Οὐ γὰρ κολακεύσοντες ὑμᾶς διὰ τῶνδε τῶν γραμμάτων οὐδὲ πρὸς χάριν ὁμιλήσοντες, ἀλλ' ἀπαιτήσοντες κατὰ τὸν ἀκριβῆ καὶ ἐξεταστικὸν λόγον τὴν κρίσιν ποιήσασθαι προσεληλύθειμεν, μὴ προλήψῃ μηδ' ἀνθρωπαρεσκείᾳ 15 τῇ δεισιδαιμόνων κατεχομένους ἢ ἀλόγῳ ὕρμῃ καὶ χρονίᾳ προκατεσχηκυῖα φήμῃ κακῇ τὴν καθ' ἑαυτῶν ψῆφον φέροντας. Ἡμεῖς μὲν γὰρ πρὸς οὐδενὸς πείσεσθαι τι κακὸν δύνασθαι λελογίσμεθα, ἣν μὴ κακίας ἐργάται ἐλεγχώμεθα ἢ πονηροὶ διεγνώσμεθα· ὑμεῖς δ' ἀποκτεῖναι μὲν δύνασθε, 20 βλάψαι δ' οὐ.

3. Ἄλλ' ἵνα μὴ ἄλογον φωνὴν καὶ τολμηρὰν δόξῃ τις Right to a fair trial. ταῦτα εἶναι, ἀξιούμεν τὰ κατηγορούμενα αὐτῶν ἐξετάζεσθαι, καὶ ἐὰν οὕτως ἔχοντα ἀποδεικνύωνται, κολάζεσθαι ὡς πρέπειν ἐστὶν ἄλλον γε κολάζειν· εἰ 5 δὲ μηδὲν ἔχοι τις ἐλέγχειν, οὐχ ὑπαγορεύει ὁ ἀληθοῦς λόγος διὰ φήμην πονηρὰν ἀναιτίους ἀνθρώπους ἀδικεῖν, μᾶλλον δὲ ἑαυτούς, οἳ οὐ κρίσει, ἀλλὰ πάθει τὰ πρᾶγματα ἐπάγειν ἀξιούτε. Καλὴν δὲ καὶ μόνην δικαίαν πρόκλησιν ταύτην πᾶς ὁ σωφρονῶν ἀποφανεῖται, τὸ τοὺς ἀρχομένους τὴν εὐ- 10 ζύνην τοῦ ἑαυτῶν βίου καὶ λόγου ἀληπτον παρέχειν, ὁμοίως δ' αὖ καὶ τοὺς ἄρχοντας μὴ βίᾳ μηδὲ τυραννίδι, ἀλλ' ἐυσεβείᾳ καὶ φιλοσοφίᾳ ἀκολουθοῦντας τὴν ψῆφον τίξεσθαι. Οὕτως γὰρ ἂν καὶ οἱ ἄρχοντες καὶ οἱ ἀρχόμενοι ἀπολαύοιεν τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ. Ἐφη γάρ πού τις τῶν παλαιῶν· Ἄν 15 μὴ οἱ ἄρχοντες φιλοσοφήσωσι καὶ οἱ ἀρχόμενοι, οὐκ ἂν εἴη τὰς πόλεις εὐδαιμονῆσαι. Ἡμέτερον οὖν ἔργον, καὶ βίου καὶ μαθημάτων τὴν ἐπίσκεψιν πᾶσι παρέχειν, μήπως ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀγνοεῖν τὰ ἡμέτερα νομιζόντων τὴν τιμωρίαν, ὣν ἂν πλημμελῶσι τυφλώττοντες, [αὐτῶν] αὐτοὶ ὀφλήσωμεν·

ὑμέτερον δέ, ὡς αἰρεῖ λόγος, ἀκούοντας ἀγαθούς εὕρισκεσθαι κριτάς. Ἀναπολόγητον γὰρ λοιπὸν μαζοῦσιν, ἦν μὴ τὰ δίκαια ποιήσῃτε, ὑπάρξει πρὸς θεόν.

4. Ὀνόματος μὲν οὖν προσωνομία οὔτε ἀγαθὸν οὔτε κα-  
Why condemn  
a name? κὺν κρίνεται ἄνευ τῶν ὑποπιπτουσῶν τῇ ὀνό-  
 ματι πρύξεων· ἐπεὶ, ὅσον γε ἐκ τοῦ κατηγο-  
 ρουμένου ἡμῶν ὀνόματος, χρηστότατοι ὑπάρχομεν. Ἄλλ'  
 ἐπεὶ οὐ τοῦτο δίκαιον ἡγοῦμεθα, διὰ τὸ ὄνομα, ἢν κακοὶ  
 ἐλεγχώμεθα, αἰτεῖν ἀφίεσθαι, πάλιν, εἰ μηδὲν διὰ τε τὴν  
 προσηγορίαν τοῦ ὀνόματος καὶ διὰ τὴν πολιτείαν εὕρισκό-  
 μεθα ἀδικούντες, ὑμέτερον ἀγωνιᾶσαί ἐστι μὴ ἀδίκως κο-  
 λάζοντες τοὺς μὴ ἐλεγχομένους τῇ δίκῃ κόλασιν ὀφλήσῃτε.  
 Ἐξ ὀνόματος μὲν γὰρ ἡ ἔπαινος ἡ κόλασις οὐκ ἂν εὐλόγως  
 γένοιτο, ἦν μὴ τι ἐνάρετον ἡ φαῦλον δι' ἔργων ἀποδείκνυ-  
 σθαι δύνηται. Καὶ γὰρ τοὺς κατηγορουμένους ἐφ' ὑμῶν  
 πάντας πρὶν ἐλεγχθῆναι οὐ τιμωρεῖτε, ἐφ' ἡμῶν δὲ τὸ ὄνομα  
 ὡς ἐλεγχον λαμβάνετε, καίπερ, ὅσον γε ἐκ τοῦ ὀνόματος,  
 τοὺς κατηγοροῦντας μᾶλλον κυλάζειν ὀφείλετε. Χριστι-  
ανοὶ γὰρ εἶναι κατηγορούμεθα· τὸ δὲ χρηστὸν μισεῖσθαι  
 οὐ δίκαιον. Καὶ πάλιν ἢν μὲν τις τῶν κατηγορουμένων  
 ἔξαρνος γένηται τῇ φωνῇ μὴ εἶναι φήσας, ἀφίετε αὐτὸν ὡς  
 μηδὲν ἐλέγχειν ἔχοντες ἀμαρτάνοντα, ἢν δέ τις ὁμολογή-  
 σῃ εἶναι, διὰ τὴν ὁμολογίαν κολάζετε· δέον καὶ τὸν τοῦ  
 ὁμολογοῦντος βίον εὐξύνειν καὶ τὸν τοῦ ἀρνούμενου, ὅπως  
 διὰ τῶν πρύξεων ὑποίους ἐστὶν ἕκαστος φαίνεται. Ὅν γὰρ  
 τρόπον παραλαβόντες τινὲς παρὰ τοῦ διδασκάλου Χριστοῦ  
 μὴ ἀρνεῖσθαι ἐξεταζόμενοι παρακελεύονται, τὸν αὐτὸν τρό-  
 πον κακῶς ζῶντες ἴσως ἀφορμὰς παρέχουσι τοῖς ἄλλως  
 καταλέγειν τῶν πάντων Χριστιανῶν ἀσέβειαν καὶ ἀδικίαν

αἱρουμένοις. Οὐκ ὁρῶς μὲν οὐδὲ τοῦτο πράττεται. Καὶ γὰρ τοὶ φιλοσοφίας ὄνομα καὶ σχῆμα ἐπιγράφονται τινες, οἳ οὐδὲν ἄξιον τῆς ὑποσχέσεως πράττουσι· γινώσκετε δ' 30 ὅτι καὶ οἱ τὰ ἐναντία δοξάσαντες καὶ δογματίσαντες τῶν παλαιῶν τῷ ἐνὶ ὀνόματι προσαγορεύονται φιλόσοφοι. Καὶ τούτων τινὲς ἀθεύτητα ἐδίδαξαν, καὶ τὸν Δία ἀσελγῇ ἄμα τοῖς αὐτοῦ παισὶν οἱ γενόμενοι ποιηταὶ καταγγέλλουσι· κακείνων τὰ διδάγματα οἱ μετερχόμενοι οὐκ εἴργονται πρὸς 35 ὕμνων, ἄλλα δὲ καὶ τιμὰς τοῖς εὐφώνως ὑβρίζουσι τούτους τίθετε.

5. Τί δὴ οὖν τοῦτ' ἂν εἴη; Ἐφ' ἡμῶν, ὑπισχνουμένων Christians no  
atheists. μηδὲν ἀδικεῖν μηδὲ τὰ ἄσια ταῦτα δοξάζειν, οὐ κρίσεις ἐξετάζετε, ἀλλ' ἀλόγῳ πάζει καὶ μάστιγι δαιμόνων φαύλων ἐξελαυνόμενοι ἀκρίτως κολάζετε μὴ 5 φροντίζοντες. Εἰρήσεται γὰρ τὰ ληξίς· ἐπεὶ τὸ παλαιὸν δαίμονες φαῦλοι, ἐπιφανείας ποιησάμενοι, καὶ γυναικας ἐμοίχευσαν καὶ παῖδας διέφθειραν καὶ φόβητρα ἀνθρώποις ἔδειξαν, ὡς καταπλαγῆναι τοὺς οἱ λόγῳ τὰς γινομένας πράξεις οὐκ ἔκρινον, ἀλλὰ δέει συνηρπασμένοι καὶ μὴ ἐπι- 10 στάμενοι δαίμονας εἶναι φαύλους, θεοὺς προσωνόμαζον καὶ ὀνόματι ἕκαστον προσηγύρευον, ὑπερ ἕκαστος ἑαυτῷ τῶν δαιμόνων ἐτίθετο. Ὅτε δὲ Σωκράτης λόγῳ ἀληθεῖ καὶ ἐξεταστικῶς ταῦτα εἰς φανερὸν ἐπειράτο φέρειν καὶ ἀπάγειν τῶν δαιμόνων τοὺς ἀνθρώπους, καὶ αὐτὸν οἱ δαί- 15 μονες διὰ τῶν χαιρούντων τῇ κακίᾳ ἀνθρώπων ἐνήργησαν ὡς ἄθεον καὶ ἀσεβῆ ἀποκτείνειν, λέγοντες καινὰ εἰσφέρειν αὐτὸν δαιμόνια. Καὶ ὁμοίως ἐφ' ἡμῶν τὸ αὐτὸ ἐνεργοῦσιν· οὐ γὰρ μόνον ἐν Ἑλλήσει διὰ Σωκράτους ὑπὸ λόγου ἡλέγ- χθη ταῦτα, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐν βαρβάροις ὑπ' αὐτοῦ τοῦ λόγου

μορφωθέντος καὶ ἀνθρώπου γενομένου καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ <sup>20</sup>  
κληθέντος, ᾧ πεισθέντες ἡμεῖς τοὺς ταῦτα πράξαντας δαί-  
 μονας οὐ μόνον μὴ ὁρθῶς θεοὺς εἶναι φάμεν, ἀλλὰ κα-  
 κούς καὶ ἀνοσίους δαίμονας, οἳ οὐδὲ τοῖς ἀρετὴν ποιοῦσιν  
 ἀνθρώποις τὰς πράξεις ὁμοίως ἔχουσιν.

6. Ἐνθένδε καὶ ἄξιοι κεκλήμεθα. Καὶ ὁμολογοῦμεν τῶν  
 τοιούτων νομιζομένων θεῶν ἄξιοι εἶναι, ἀλλ'  
 Our God is not as your gods. οὐχὶ τοῦ ἀληθεστάτου καὶ πατρὸς δικαιοσύνης  
 καὶ σωφροσύνης καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ἀρετῶν, ἀνεπιμίκτου τε  
 κακίας θεοῦ· ἀλλ' ἐκείνόν τε, καὶ τὸν παρ' αὐτοῦ υἱὸν ἐλ- 5  
 θύντα καὶ διδάξαντα ἡμᾶς ταῦτα, καὶ τὸν τῶν ἄλλων ἐπο-  
 μένων καὶ ἱσομοιουμένων ἀγαθῶν ἀγγέλων στρατὸν, πνευ-  
 μά τε τὸ προφητικὸν σεβόμεθα καὶ προσκυνοῦμεν, λόγῳ  
 καὶ ἀληθείᾳ τιμῶντες καὶ παντὶ βουλομένη μαθεῖν, ὡς ἐδι-  
 δάχθημεν, ἀφθύνως παραδιδόντες. 10

7. Ἀλλὰ φήσει τις· Ἦδη τινὲς ληφθέντες ἡλέγχθησαν  
 The life the true test. κακοῦργοι. Καὶ γὰρ πολλοὺς πολλάκις, ὅταν  
 ἐκάστοτε τῶν κατηγορουμένων τὸν βίον ἐξετά-  
 ζητε, ἀλλ' οὐ διὰ τοὺς προελεχθέντας καταδικάζετε. Κα-  
 θύλου μὲν οὖν κακίῃν ὁμολογοῦμεν, ὅτι ὃν τρόπον οἱ ἐν 5  
 Ἑλλάσι τὰ αὐτοῖς ἀρεστὰ δογματίσαντες ἐκ παντὸς τῷ ἐνὶ  
 ὀνόματι φιλοσοφίας προσαγορεύονται, καίπερ τῶν δογμά-  
 των ἐναντίων ὄντων, οὕτως καὶ τῶν ἐν βαρβάροις γενομέ-  
 νων καὶ δοξάντων σοφῶν τὸ ἐπικατηγορούμενον ὄνομα  
 κοινὸν ἐστι· Χριστιανοὶ γὰρ πάντες προσαγορεύονται. 10  
 Ὅθεν πάντων τῶν καταγελλομένων ὑμῖν τὰς πράξεις  
κρίνεσθαι ἄξιόν ἐστιν, ἵνα ὁ ἐλεγχθεὶς ὡς ἄδικος κολάζεται,  
 ἀλλὰ μὴ ὡς Χριστιανός, ἐὰν ἐξέ τις ἀνέλεγκτος φάνηται,  
 ἀπολύηται ὡς Χριστιανός οὐδὲν ἀδικῶν. Οὐ γὰρ τοὺς



8. Δογίσασθε δ' ὅτι ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν ταῦτα ἔφημεν, ἐκ τοῦ ἐφ'

**This life is not  
worth a lie.  
'We aspire  
while we ex-  
pire.'**

5. Ζεοῦ τοῦ πάντων πατρὺς καὶ δημιουργοῦ διαγωγῆς ἀντι-  
 ποιούμεθα, καὶ σπεύδομεν ἐπὶ τὸ ὁμολογεῖν οἱ πεπεισμένοι  
 καὶ πιστεύοντες τυχεῖν τούτων δύνασθαι τοὺς τὸν Ζεὸν δὲ  
 ἔργων πείσαντας ὅτι αὐτῷ εἶποντο καὶ τῆς παρ' αὐτῇ δια-  
 γωγῆς ἥρων, ἔνθα κακία οὐκ ἀντιτυπεῖ. Ὡς μὲν οὖν διὰ  
 10 βραχέων εἰπεῖν, ἃ τε προσδοκῶμεν καὶ μεμαθήκαμεν διὰ  
 τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ διδάσκουμεν, ταῦτά ἐστι. Πλάτων δὲ  
 ὁμοίως ἔφη Ῥαδάμανθυν καὶ Μίνω κολάσειν τοὺς ἀδίκους  
 παρ' αὐτοὺς ἰλθόντας· ἡμεῖς δὲ τὸ αὐτὸ πρᾶγμα φαμεν  
 γενήσεσθαι, ἀλλ' ὑπὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ, καὶ τοῖς αὐτοῖς σώ-  
 15 μασι μετὰ τῶν ψυχῶν γινομένων καὶ αἰωνίαν κίλασιν κο-  
 λασσομένων, ἀλλ' οὐχὶ χιλιονταετῇ περιόδῳ, ὥς ἐκείνος  
 ἔφη, μόνον. Εἰ μὲν οὖν ἄπιστον ἢ ἀδύνατον τοῦτο φήσει  
 τις, πρὸς ἡμᾶς ἦδε ἡ πλάνη ἐστὶν ἀλλ' οὐ πρὸς ἕτερον,  
 μέχρις οὗ ἔργῳ μηδὲν ἀδικοῦντες ἐλεγχόμεθα.

**Idol-worship is  
idle worship.**

θείαςι ξιόντες καὶ τέμνοντες καὶ χωνεύοντες καὶ τύπτοντες ;  
 Καὶ ἐξ ἀτίμων πολλάκις σκευῶν διὰ τέχνης τὸ σχῆμα <sup>10</sup>  
 μόνον ἀλλάξαντες καὶ μορφοποιήσαντες θεοὺς ἐπονομά-  
 ζουσιν. "Ὅπερ οὐ μόνον ἄλογον ἡγοῦμεθα, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐφ'  
 ὕβρει τοῦ θεοῦ γίνεσθαι, ὅς ἄρρητον δύξαν καὶ μορφήν  
 ἔχων ἐπὶ φθαρτοῖς καὶ δεομένοις θεραπείας πράγμασιν  
 ἐπονομάζεται. Καὶ ὅτι οἱ τούτων τεχνῖται ἀσελγεῖς τε καὶ <sup>15</sup>  
 πᾶσαν κακίαν, ἵνα μὴ καταριζώμεν, ἔχουσιν, ἀκριβῶς ἐπί-  
 στασθε· καὶ τὰς ἑαυτῶν παιδίσκας συνεργαζομένας φθεί-  
 ρουσιν. Ὡς τῆς ἐμβροντησίας, ἀνθρώπους ἀκολάστους  
 θεοὺς εἰς τὸ προσκυνεῖσθαι πλάσσειν λέγεσθαι καὶ μετα-  
 ποιεῖν, καὶ τῶν ἱερῶν, ἔνθα ἀνατίθεται, φύλακας τοιού- <sup>20</sup>  
 τους κατιστάναι, μὴ συνορῶντας ἀξέμιτον καὶ τὸ νοεῖν ἢ  
 λέγειν ἀνθρώπους θεῶν εἶναι φύλακας.

10. Ἄλλ' οὐ δέεσθαι τῆς παρ' ἀνθρώπων ὑλικῆς προσ-  
<sup>Proper worship</sup> φηρᾶς παρελήφμεν τὸν θεόν, αὐτὸν παρέ-  
<sup>of God.</sup> χοντα πάντα ὕρῳντες· ἐκείνους δὲ προσδέ-  
 χεσθαι αὐτὸν μόνον δεδιδάγμεθα καὶ πεπείσμεθα καὶ πι-  
 στεύομεν, τοὺς τὰ προσύντα αὐτῷ ἀγαθὰ μιμουμένους, <sup>5</sup>  
 σωφροσύνην καὶ δικαιοσύνην καὶ φιλανθρωπίαν, καὶ ὅσα  
 οἰκεῖα θεῷ ἐστὶ, τῷ μηδενὶ ὀνόματι θεῷ καλουμένῳ. Καὶ  
 πάντα τὴν ἀρχὴν ἀγαθὸν ὄντα δημιουργῆσαι αὐτὸν ἐξ  
 ἀμόρφου ὕλης δι' ἀνθρώπους δεδιδάγμεθα· οἱ ἐὰν ἀξίους  
 τῷ ἐκείνου βουλεύματι ἑαυτοὺς δι' ἔργων δείξωσι, τῆς μετ' <sup>10</sup>  
 αὐτοῦ ἀναστροφῆς καταξιοῦσθαι παρελήφμεν συμβασι-  
 λεύοντας, ἀφθάρτους καὶ ἀπαθείς γενομένους. Ὅν τρό-  
 πον γὰρ τὴν ἀρχὴν οὐκ ὄντας ἐποίησε, τὸν αὐτὸν ἡγού-  
 μεθα τρόπον διὰ τὸ ἐλέσθαι τοὺς αἰρουμένους τὰ αὐτῷ  
 ἄρεστά καὶ ἀφθαρσίας καὶ συνουσίας καταξιοῦσθαι· τὸ <sup>15</sup>

ἡ κοίτη ὡς ἡ τέχνη τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ τὰ τεχνῖται  
 20, 37

μὲν γὰρ τὴν ἀρχὴν γενέσθαι, οὐχ ἡμέτερον ἦν, τὸ δ' ἐξακολουθεῖσαι οἷς φίλον αὐτῷ αἰρουμένους δι' ὧν αὐτὸς ἐδωρήσατο λογικῶν δυνάμεων πείθει τε καὶ εἰς πίστιν ἄγει ἡμᾶς. Καὶ ὑπὲρ πάντων ἀνθρώπων ἡγοούμεθα εἶναι τὸ μὴ εἶργεσθαι ταῦτα μανθάνειν, ἀλλὰ καὶ προτρέπεσθαι ἐπὶ ταῦτα. "Ὅπερ γὰρ οὐκ ἠδυνήθησαν οἱ ἀνθρώπειοι νόμοι πράξαι, ταῦτα ὁ λόγος θεῖος ὧν εἰργάσατο, εἰ μὴ οἱ φαῦλοι δαίμονες κατεσκέδασαν πολλὰ ψευδῆ καὶ ἄζεα κατηγορήματα, σύμμαχον λαβύντες τὴν ἐν ἐκάστῳ κακὴν πρὸς πάντα καὶ ποικίλην φύσει ἐπιθυμίαν, ὧν οὐδὲν πρόσεστιν ἡμῖν.

11. Καὶ ὑμεῖς ἀκούσαντες βασιλείαν προσδοκῶντας ἡμᾶς, ἀκρίτως ἀνθρώπινον λέγειν ἡμᾶς ὑπεὶ <sup>'My kingdom is not of this world.'</sup> λήφατε, ἡμῶν τὴν μετὰ θεοῦ λεγόντων, ὡς καὶ ἐκ τοῦ ἀνεταζομένου ὑφ' ὑμῶν ὁμολογεῖν εἶναι Χριστιανούς, γινώσκοντας τῷ ὁμολογοῦντι θάνατον τὴν ζημίαν κείσθαι, φαίνεται. Εἰ γὰρ ἀνθρώπινον βασιλείαν προσεδοκῶμεν, καὶν ἡρνούμεθα ὅπως μὴ ἀναιρώμεθα, καὶ λανθάνειν ἐπειρώμεθα ὅπως τῶν προσδοκωμένων τύχωμεν· ἀλλ' ἐπεὶ οὐκ εἰς τὸ νῦν τὰς ἐλπίδας ἔχομεν, ἀναιρούντων οὐ 10 πεφροντίκαμεν, τοῦ καὶ πάντως ἀποθανεῖν ὀφειλομένου.

12. Ἀρωγοὶ δ' ὑμῖν καὶ σύμμαχοι πρὸς εἰρήνην ἐσμὲν <sup>'As ever in our great Task-master's eye.'</sup> πάντων μᾶλλον ἀνθρώπων, οἱ ταῦτα δοξάζομεν, ὡς λαθεῖν θεὸν κακοεργὸν ἢ πλεονέκτην ἢ ἐπίβουλον ἢ ἐνάρητον ἀδύνατον εἶναι, καὶ ἕκαστον ἐπ' αἰωνίαν κόλασιν ἢ σωτηρίαν κατ' ἀξίαν τῶν πράξεων πορεύεσθαι. Εἰ γὰρ οἱ πάντες ἄνθρωποι ταῦτα ἐγίνωσκον, οὐκ ἂν τις τὴν κακίαν πρὸς ὀλίγον ἤρεϊτο, γινώσκων πορεύεσθαι ἐπ' αἰωνίαν διὰ πυρὸς καταδίκην, ἀλλ' ἐκ παντὸς

τρόπου ἑαυτὸν συνέιχε καὶ ἐκύσκει ἀρετῇ, ὥπως τῶν παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ τύχοι ἀγαθῶν καὶ τῶν κολαστηρίων ἀπ᾽ ἀλλαγμέ-  
 νος εἶη. Οἱ γὰρ διὰ τοὺς ὑφ' ὑμῶν κειμένους νόμους καὶ  
 κολάσεις πειρῶνται λανθάνειν ἀδικούντες—ἀνθρώπους δ'  
ὄντας λανθάνειν ὑμᾶς δυνατὸν ἐπιστάμενοι ἀδικοῦσιν—εἰ  
 ἔμαθον καὶ ἐπίεσθον θεὸν ἀδύνατον εἶναι λαθεῖν τι οὐ  
 μόνον πραττόμενον, ἀλλὰ καὶ βουλευόμενον, κἂν διὰ τὰ  
 ἐπικείμενα ἐκ παντὸς τρόπου κύσμοι ἦσαν, ὥς καὶ ὑμεῖς  
 συμφήσετε. Ἄλλ' εἰκάτε διδέναι μὴ πάντες δικαιοπρα-  
 γήσωσι καὶ ὑμεῖς οὐς κολάσετε ἐτι οὐχ ἔξετε· δημίων δ' ἂν  
 εἴη τὸ τοιοῦτον ἔργον, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἀρχόντων ἀγαθῶν. Πε-  
 πείσμεθα δ' ἐκ δαιμόνων φαύλων, οἱ καὶ παρὰ τῶν ἀλόγως  
 βιούντων αἰτοῦσι θύματα καὶ θεραπείας, καὶ ταῦτα, ὥς  
 προέφημεν, ἐνεργεῖσθαι· ἀλλ' οὐχ ὑμᾶς, οἱ γε εὐσεβείας  
καὶ φιλοσοφίας ὀρέγεσθε, ἄλογόν τι πράξαι ὑπειλήφαμεν.  
 Εἰ δὲ καὶ ὑμεῖς ὁμοίως τοῖς ἀνοήτοις τὰ ἔζη πρὸ τῆς ἀλη-  
 θείας τιμᾶτε, πράττετε ὁ δύνασθε. Τοσοῦτον δὲ δύνανται  
 καὶ ἄρχοντες πρὸ τῆς ἀληθείας δύξαν τιμῶντες, ὅσον καὶ  
 λησταὶ ἐν ἐρημίᾳ. Ὅτι δ' οὐ καλλιερήσετε, ὁ λόγος ἀπο-  
 δείκνυσιν, οὗ βασιλικώτατον καὶ δικαιοτάτον ἄρχοντα μετὰ  
 τὸν γεννήσαντα θεὸν οὐδένα οἶδαμεν ὄντα. Ὅν γὰρ τρύ-  
 πον διαδέχεσθαι πενίας ἢ πάσῃ ἢ ἀδοξίας πατρικὰς ὑφαι-  
 ροῦνται πάντες, οὕτως καί, ὅσα ἂν ὑπαγορεύσῃ ὁ λόγος  
 μὴ δεῖν αἰρεῖσθαι, ὁ νουνεχὴς οὐχ αἰρήσεται. Γενήσεσθαι  
 ταῦτα πάντα προεῖπε, φημί, ὁ ἡμέτερος διδάσκαλος καὶ τοῦ  
 πατρὸς πάντων καὶ δεσπύτου Θεοῦ υἱὸς καὶ ἀπόστολος ὢν  
 Ἰησοῦς Χριστός, ἀφ' οὗ καὶ τὸ Χριστιανοὶ ἐπονομάζεσθαι  
 ἐσχήκαμεν. Ὅθεν καὶ βέβαιοι γινόμεθα πρὸς τὰ δεδιδαγ-  
 μένα ὑπ' αὐτοῦ πάντα, ἐπειδὴ ἔργῳ φαίνεται γινόμενα, ὅσα

φθάσας γενέσθαι προείπεν · ὑπερ θεοῦ ἔργον ἐστί, πρὶν ἢ γενέσθαι εἰπεῖν καὶ οὕτως δειχθῆναι γινόμενον ὡς προεί-  
 40 ρηται. Ἦν μὲν οὖν καὶ ἐπὶ τούτοις παυσταμένους μηδὲν προστιθεῖναι, λογισαμένους ὅτι δικαία τε καὶ ἀληθῆ ἀξιοῦ-  
 μεν, ἀλλ' ἐπεὶ γνωρίζομεν οὐ ῥᾶον ἀγνοίᾳ κατεχομένην  
 ψυχὴν συντόμως μεταβάλλειν, ὑπὲρ τοῦ πείσαι τοὺς φιλα-  
 λήθεις μικρὰ προσθεῖναι προεϋμῆσθαι, εἰδότες ὅτι οὐκ  
 45 ἀδύνατον ἀληθείας παρατεθείσης ἄγνοιαν φυγεῖν.

13. Ἄθεοι μὲν οὖν ὡς οὐκ ἐσμέν, τὸν δημιουργὸν τοῦδε  
 τοῦ παντὸς σεβόμενοι, ἀνενδεῆ αἱμάτων καὶ  
 Our reasonable service. σπονδῶν καὶ θυμιαμάτων, ὡς ἐδιδάχθημεν, λέ-  
 γοντες, λόγῳ εὐχῆς καὶ εὐχαριστίας ἐφ' οἷς προσφερόμεθα  
 5 πᾶσιν, ὅση δύναμις, αἰνοῦντες, μόνῃν ἀξίαν αὐτοῦ τιμὴν  
 ταύτην παραλαβόντες, τὸ τὰ ὑπ' ἐκείνου εἰς διατροφὴν γε-  
 νύμενα οὐ πυρὶ δαπανᾶν, ἀλλ' ἑαυτοῖς καὶ τοῖς δεομένοις  
 προσφέρειν, ἐκείνῳ δὲ εὐχαρίστους ὄντας διὰ λόγου πομπὰς  
 καὶ ὕμνους πέμπειν ὑπὲρ τε τοῦ γεγονέναι καὶ τῶν εἰς εὐ-  
 10 ρωστίαν πύρων πάντων, ποιότητων μὲν γονῶν καὶ μετα-  
 βολῶν ὥρων, καὶ τοῦ πάλιν ἐν ἀφθαρσίᾳ γενέσθαι διὰ  
 πίστιν τὴν ἐν αὐτῷ αἰτήσεις πέμποντες, τίς σωφρονῶν οὐχ  
 ὁμολογήσει; Τὸν διδάσκαλόν τε τούτων γενόμενον ἡμῖν  
 καὶ εἰς τοῦτο γεννηθέντα Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν, τὸν σταυρωθέντα  
 15 ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου, τοῦ γενομένου ἐν Ἰουδαίᾳ ἐπὶ χρό-  
 νοις Τιβερίου Καίσαρος ἐπιτρόπου, υἱὸν αὐτοῦ τοῦ ὄντως  
 θεοῦ μαζύντες καὶ ἐν δευτέρᾳ χώρᾳ ἔχοντες, πνεῦμά τε  
 προφητικὸν ἐν τρίτῃ τάξει ὅτι μετὰ λόγου τιμῶμεν, ἀποδεί-  
 20 ξομεν. Ἐνταῦθα γὰρ μανίαν ἡμῶν καταφαίνονται, δευτέ-  
 ρωσαν χώραν μετὰ τὸν ἄτρεπτον καὶ αἰὲ ὄντα θεὸν καὶ γεννή-  
 τορα τὸν ἀπάντων ἀνθρώπων σταυρωθέντι διδόναι ἡμᾶς λέ-

γοντες, ἀγνοοῦντες τὸ ἐν τούτῳ μυστήριον, ᾧ προσέχειν ὑμᾶς ἐξηγουμένων ἡμῶν προτρεπόμεθα.

14. Προλέγομεν γὰρ ὑμῖν φυλάσασθαι, μὴ οἱ προδιαβε-  
 The demons βλημένοι ὑφ' ἡμῶν δαίμονες ἐξαπατήσωσιν ὑμᾶς  
 malign Christians καὶ ἀποτρέψωσι τοῦ ὕλως ἐντυχεῖν καὶ συνεῖναι  
 τὰ λεγόμενα (ἀγωνίζονται γὰρ ἔχειν ὑμᾶς δούλους καὶ  
 ὑπηρετας, καὶ ποτὲ μὲν δι' ὀνείρων ἐπιφανείας, ποτὲ δ' αὖ  
 διὰ μαγικῶν στροφῶν χειροῦνται πάντας τοὺς οὐκ ἔσθ'  
 ὕπως ὑπὲρ τῆς αὐτῶν σωτηρίας ἀγωνιζομένους), ὃν τρύ-  
 πον καὶ ἡμεῖς μετὰ τὸ τῇ λόγῳ πεισθῆναι ἐκείνων μὲν ἀπέ-  
 στημεν, θεῷ δὲ μόνῳ τῷ ἀγεννήτῳ διὰ τοῦ υἱοῦ ἐπόμεθα.  
 οἱ πάλαι μὲν πορνείαις χαίροντες, νῦν δὲ σωφροσύνην μό- 10  
νην ἀσπαζόμενοι. οἱ δὲ καὶ μαγικαῖς τέχναις χρώμενοι,  
 ἀγαθῶ καὶ ἀγεννήτῳ θεῷ ἑαυτοὺς ἀνατεθεικότες. χρημά-  
 των δὲ καὶ κτημάτων οἱ πόρους παντὸς μᾶλλον στέργοντες,  
 νῦν καὶ ἃ ἔχομεν εἰς κοινὸν φέροντες καὶ παντὶ δεομένῳ  
 κοινωνοῦντες. οἱ μισάλληλοι δὲ καὶ ἀλληλοφύνοι καὶ πρὸς 15  
 τοὺς οὐχ ὁμοφύλους διὰ τὰ ἔξη καὶ ἐστίας κοινὰς μὴ ποι-  
 ούμενοι, νῦν μετὰ τὴν ἐπιφάνειαν τοῦ Χριστοῦ ὁμοδίαιοι  
 γινόμενοι καὶ ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐχθρῶν εὐχόμενοι, καὶ τοὺς ἀδίκως  
 μισοῦντας πείθουν πειρώμενοι, ὅπως οἱ κατὰ τὰς τοῦ Χρι-  
 στοῦ καλὰς ὑποσημοσύνας βιώσαντες εὐέλπιδες ὥσι σὺν 20  
 ἡμῖν τῶν αὐτῶν παρὰ τοῦ πάντων δεσπόζοντος θεοῦ τυ-  
 χεῖν. Ἵνα δὲ μὴ σοφίζεσθαι ὑμᾶς δόξωμεν, ὑλίγων τινῶν  
 τῶν παρ' αὐτοῦ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδαγμάτων ἐπιμνησθῆναι κα-  
 λῶς ἔχειν πρὸ τῆς ἀποδείξεως ἡγησάμεθα, καὶ ὑμέτερον  
 ἔστω ὡς δυνατῶν βασιλέων ἐξετάσαι εἰ ἀληθῶς ταῦτα δε- 25  
 διδάγμεθα καὶ διδάσκωμεν. Βραχεῖς δὲ καὶ σύντομοι παρ'  
 αὐτοῦ λόγοι γεγόνασιν. οὐ γὰρ σοφιστὴς ὑπῆρχεν, ἀλλὰ  
 δύναμις θεοῦ ὁ λόγος αὐτοῦ ἦν.

15. Περὶ μὲν οὖν ἀσφροσύνης τοσοῦτον εἶπεν· Ὃς ἂν  
 ἐμβλέψῃ γυναικὶ πρὸς τὸ ἐπιζυμῆσαι αὐτῆς, ἥδη  
 ἐμοίχευσε τῇ καρδίᾳ παρὰ τῷ θεῷ. Καί· Εἰ  
 ὁ ὀφθαλμός σου ὁ δεξιὸς σκανδαλίζει σε, ἔκκοψον αὐτόν·  
 5 συμφέρει γάρ σοι μονόφθαλμον εἰσελθεῖν εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν  
 τῶν οὐρανῶν, ἢ μετὰ τῶν δύο πεμφθῆναι εἰς τὸ αἰώνιον  
 πῦρ. Καί· Ὃς γαμῇ ἀπολελυμένην ἀφ' ἑτέρου ἀνδρός  
 μοιχᾶται. Καί· Εἰσὶ τινες οἵτινες ἐννουχίσθησαν ὑπὸ  
 10 τῶν ἀνθρώπων, εἰσὶ δὲ οἱ ἐγεννήθησαν ἐννοῦχοι, εἰσὶ δὲ οἱ  
 ἐννούχισαν ἑαυτοὺς διὰ τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν· πλὴν  
 οὐ πάντες τοῦτο χωροῦσιν. Ὡστε καὶ οἱ νόμῳ ἀνθρώ-  
 πινῃ διγαμίας ποιούμενοι ἁμαρτωλοὶ παρὰ τῷ ἡμετέρῳ δι-  
 δασκάλῳ εἰσὶ, καὶ οἱ προσβλέπουντες γυναικὶ πρὸς τὸ ἐπι-  
 ζυμῆσαι αὐτῆς· οὐ γὰρ μόνοι ὁ μοιχεύων ἔργῳ ἐκβέβληται  
 15 παρ' αὐτῷ, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὁ μοιχεῦσαι βουλούμενος, ὥς οὐ τῶν  
 ἔργων φανερῶν μόνον τῷ θεῷ, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν ἐνζυμημάτων.  
 Καὶ πολλοὶ τινες καὶ πολλὰ ἐξηκοντοῦται καὶ ἐβδομηκον-  
 τοῦται, οἱ ἐκ παίδων ἐμαθητεύθησαν τῷ Χριστῷ, ἄφθοροι  
 διαμένουσι· καὶ εὐχομαι κατὰ πᾶν γένος ἀνθρώπων τοιού-  
 20 τους δεῖξαι. Τί γὰρ καὶ λέγομεν τὸ ἀναρίζμητον πληθὺς  
 τῶν ἐξ ἀκολασίας μεταβαλόντων καὶ ταῦτα μαζόντων; Οὐ  
 γὰρ τοὺς δικαίους οὐδὲ τοὺς σώφρονας εἰς μετάνοιαν ἐκύλε-  
 σεν ὁ Χριστός, ἀλλὰ τοὺς ἀσεβεῖς καὶ ἀκολάστους καὶ ἀδί-  
 κους. Εἶπε δὲ οὕτως· Οὐκ ἤλθον καλέσαι δικαίους ἀλλὰ  
 25 ἁμαρτωλοὺς εἰς μετάνοιαν. Θέλει γὰρ ὁ πατὴρ ὁ οὐράνιος  
 τὴν μετάνοιαν τοῦ ἁμαρτωλοῦ ἢ τὴν κύλασιν αὐτοῦ. Περὶ  
 δὲ τοῦ στέργειν ἅπαντας ταῦτα ἐδίδαξεν· Εἰ ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς  
 ἀγαπῶντας ὑμᾶς, τί καινὸν ποιεῖτε; Καὶ γὰρ οἱ πόρνοι  
 τοῦτο ποιοῦσιν. Ἐγὼ δὲ ὑμῖν λέγω· Εὐχισθε ὑπὲρ τῶν

ἐχθρῶν ὑμῶν καὶ ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς μισοῦντας ὑμᾶς καὶ ἐνλο- 30  
 γεῖτε τοὺς καταρωμένους ὑμῖν καὶ εὐχεσθε ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐπηρε-  
 αζόντων ὑμᾶς. Εἰς δὲ τὸ κοινωνεῖν τοῖς δεομένοις καὶ  
 μηδὲν πρὸς δόξαν ποιεῖν ταῦτα ἔφη· Παντὶ τῷ αἰτοῦντι  
 δίδοτε καὶ τὸν βουλούμενον δανείσασθαι μὴ ἀποστραφῆτε·  
 εἰ γὰρ δανεῖζετε παρ' ὧν ἐλπίζετε λαβεῖν, τί καινὸν ποι- 35  
 εῖτε; Τοῦτο καὶ οἱ τελῶναι ποιοῦσιν. Ὑμεῖς δὲ μὴ ζη-  
 σαυρίζετε ἑαυτοῖς ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, ὅπου σῆς καὶ βρώσις ἀφα-  
 νίζει καὶ λησται διορύσσουσι· Ζησαυρίζετε δὲ ἑαυτοῖς ἐν  
 τοῖς οὐρανοῖς, ὅπου οὔτε σῆς οὔτε βρώσις ἀφανίζει. Τί  
 γὰρ ὠφελεῖται ἄνθρωπος, ἂν τὸν κόσμον ὅλον κερδήσῃ, τὴν 40  
 δὲ ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ ἀπολέσῃ; Ἡ τί δώσει αὐτῆς ἀντάλλαγμα;  
 Θησαυρίζετε οὖν ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς, ὅπου οὔτε σῆς οὔτε βρώ-  
 σις ἀφανίζει. Καί· Γίνεσθε δὲ χρηστοὶ καὶ οἰκτίρμονες, ὡς  
 καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν χρηστός ἐστι καὶ οἰκτίρμων, καὶ τὸν ἥλιον  
 αὐτοῦ ἀνατέλλει ἐπὶ ἁμαρτωλοὺς καὶ δικαίους καὶ πονη- 45  
 ρούς. Μὴ μεριμνᾶτε δὲ τί φάγητε ἢ τί ἐνδύσασθε. Οὐχ  
 ὑμεῖς τῶν πετεινῶν καὶ τῶν ζῴων διαφέρετε; Καὶ ὁ θεὸς  
 τρέφει αὐτά. Μὴ οὖν μεριμνήσητε τί φάγητε ἢ τί ἐνδύ-  
 σασθε· οἶδε γὰρ ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν ὁ οὐράνιος ὅτι τούτων  
 χρεῖαν ἔχετε. Ζητεῖτε δὲ τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν, καὶ 50  
 ταῦτα πάντα προστεθήσεται ὑμῖν. Ὅπου γὰρ ὁ θεσαυρὸς  
 ἐστιν, ἐκεῖ καὶ ὁ νοῦς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου. Καί· Μὴ ποιεῖτε  
 ταῦτα πρὸς τὸ ζεαῖσθαι ὑπὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων, εἰ δὲ μή γε,  
 μισθὸν οὐκ ἔχετε παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς ὑμῶν τοῦ ἐν τοῖς οὐρα-  
 νοῖς.

16. Περὶ δὲ τοῦ ἀνεξικάκους εἶναι καὶ ὑπηρετικούς πᾶσι  
 καὶ ἀοργήτους ἃ ἔφη ταῦτά ἐστι· Τῷ τύπτοντί  
 σου τὴν σιαγὸνα, πάρεχε καὶ τὴν ἄλλην, καὶ



τὸν αἵροντά σου τὸν χιτῶνα ἢ τὸ ἱμάτιον μὴ κωλύσης.  
 5 Ὅς δ' ἂν ὀργισθῇ, ἔνοχός ἐστιν εἰς τὸ πῦρ. Παντὶ δὲ ἀγαρεύνοντί σε μίλιον, ἀκολουθήσον δύο. Λαμπάτω δὲ ὑμῶν τὰ καλὰ ἔργα ἐμπροσθεν τῶν ἀνθρώπων, ἵνα βλέποντες θαυμάζωσι τὸν πατέρα ὑμῶν τὸν ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς. Οὐ γὰρ ἀνταίρειν δεῖ· οὐδὲ μμητὰς εἶναι τῶν φαύλων βε-  
 10 βούλῃται ἡμᾶς, ἀλλὰ διὰ τῆς ὑπομονῆς καὶ πρᾶγματος ἐξ αἰσχύνης καὶ ἐπιθυμίας τῶν κακῶν ἄγειν πάντας προετρέψατο. Ὁ γε καὶ ἐπὶ πολλῶν τῶν παρ' ὑμῖν γεγεννημένων ἀποδείξει ἔχομεν· ἐκ βιαίων καὶ τυράννων μετίβαλον, ἡττηθέντες ἢ γειτύνων καρτερίαν βίου παρακολουθήσαντες  
 15 ἢ συνοδοιπύρων πλεονεκτουμένων ὑπομονὴν ξένην κατανοήσαντες ἢ συμπραγματευομένων πειραζέοντες. Περὶ δὲ τοῦ μὴ ὀμνύναι ὕλως, τάλῃ δὲ λέγειν αἰεὶ, οὕτως παρεκελεύσατο· Μὴ ὀμύσητε ὕλως. Ἔστω δὲ ὑμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναί, καὶ τὸ οὐ οὐ· τὸ δὲ περισσὸν τούτων ἐκ τοῦ πονηροῦ.  
 20 Ὡς δὲ καὶ τὸν θεὸν μόνον δεῖ προσκυνεῖν, οὕτως ἐπέισεν εἰπῶν· Μεγίστη ἐντολή ἐστι· Κύριον τὸν θεόν σου προσκυνήσεις καὶ αὐτῷ μόνῳ λατρεύσεις ἐξ ὕλης τῆς καρδίας σου καὶ ἐξ ὕλης τῆς ἰσχύος σου, κύριον τὸν θεὸν τὸν ποιήσαντά σε. Καί· Προσελθόντος αὐτῷ τινος καὶ εἰπόντος·  
 25 Διδάσκαλε ἀγαθέ, ἀπεκρίνατο λέγων· Οὐδεὶς ἀγαθός, εἰ μὴ ὁ μόνος ὁ θεὸς ὁ ποιήσας τὰ πάντα. Οἱ δ' ἂν μὴ εὐρίσκονται βιοῦντες ὡς ἐδίδαξε, γνωρίζεσθωσαν μὴ ὄντες Χριστιανοί, κἂν λέγωσιν διὰ γλώττης τὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδάγματα· οὐ γὰρ τοὺς μόνον λέγοντας, ἀλλὰ τοὺς καὶ τὰ  
 30 ἔργα πράττοντας σωθήσεσθαι ἔφη. Εἶπε γὰρ οὕτως· Οὐχὶ πᾶς ὁ λέγων μοι Κύριε κύριε εἰσελεύσεται εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν, ἀλλ' ὁ ποιῶν τὸ θέλημα τοῦ πα-

τρὸς μου τοῦ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς. Ὃς γὰρ ἀκούει μου καὶ ποιεῖ ἃ λέγω, ἀκούει τοῦ ἀποστείλαντός με. Πολλοὶ δὲ ἐροῦσί μοι· Κύριε κύριε, οὐ τῷ σῷ ὀνόματι ἐφάγομεν καὶ 35 ἐπίομεν καὶ δυνάμεις ἐποιήσαμεν; Καὶ τότε ἐρῶ αὐτοῖς· Ἀποχωρεῖτε ἀπ' ἐμοῦ ἐργάται τῆς ἀνομίας. Τότε κλαυθμὸς ἔσται καὶ βρυγμὸς τῶν ὀδόντων, ὅταν οἱ μὲν δίκαιοι λάμπωσιν ὡς ὁ ἥλιος, οἱ δὲ ἄδικοι πέμπωνται εἰς τὸ αἰώνιον πῦρ. Πολλοὶ γὰρ ἠξουσιν ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματί μου, ἔξω- 40 ξεν μὲν ἐνδεδυμένοι δέρματα προβάτων, ἔσωθεν δὲ ὄντες λύκοι ἄρπαγες· ἐκ τῶν ἔργων αὐτῶν ἐπιγνώσεσθε αὐτούς. Πᾶν δὲ δένδρον, μὴ ποιοῦν καρπὸν καλόν, ἐκκύπτεται καὶ εἰς πῦρ βάλλεται. Κολάζεσθαι ἔξ τούς οὐκ ἀκολουθῶς τοῖς διδάγμασιν αὐτοῦ βιοῦντας, λεγομένους δὲ μόνον Χρι- 45 στιανούς, καὶ ὑφ' ὑμῶν ἀξιούμεν.

17. Φόρους δὲ καὶ εἰσφορὰς τοῖς ὑφ' ὑμῶν τεταγμένοις  
 'Render unto πανταχοῦ πρὸ πάντων πειρώμεθα φέρειν, ὡς  
 Caesar.' ἐδιδάχθημεν παρ' αὐτοῦ. Κατ' ἐκεῖνο γὰρ τοῦ  
 καιροῦ προσελθόντες τινὲς ἡρώτων αὐτόν, εἰ δεῖ Καίσαρι  
 φόρους τελεῖν. Καὶ ἀπεκρίνατο· Εἰπατέ μοι, τίνοος εἰκόνα 5  
 τὸ νόμισμα ἔχει; Οἱ δὲ ἔφασαν· Καίσαρος. Καὶ πάλιν  
 ἀνταπεκρίνατο αὐτοῖς· Ἀπόδοτε οὖν τὰ Καίσαρος τῷ Καί-  
 σαρι, καὶ τὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ τῷ Θεῷ. Ὅθεν θεὸν μὲν μόνον προσ-  
 κυνοῦμεν, ὑμῖν ἔξ πρὸς τὰ ἄλλα χαίροντες ὑπηρετοῦμεν,  
 βασιλεῖς καὶ ἄρχοντας ἀνθρώπων ὁμολογοῦντες καὶ εὐχό- 10  
 μενοι μετὰ τῆς βασιλικῆς δυνάμεως καὶ σώφρονα τὸν λο-  
 γισμὸν ἔχοντας ὑμᾶς εὐρεσθῆναι. Εἰ δὲ καὶ ἡμῶν εὐχομέ-  
 νων καὶ πάντα εἰς φανερόν τιζέντων ἀφροντιστήσετε, οὐδὲν  
 ἡμεῖς βλαβησόμεθα, πιστεύοντες, μᾶλλον δὲ καὶ πεπεισμέ-  
 νοι, κατ' ἀξίαν τῶν πράξεων ἕκαστον τίσειν διὰ πυρὸς αἰώ- 15

νίου δίκας καὶ πρὸς ἀναλογίαν ὧν ἔλαβε δυνάμεων παρὰ  
 θεοῦ, τὸν λόγον ἀπαιτηθήσεσθαι, ὡς ὁ Χριστὸς ἐμήνυσεν  
 εἰπὼν· Ὡς πλέον ἔδωκεν ὁ θεός, πλέον καὶ ἀπαιτηθήσεται  
 παρ' αὐτοῦ.

18. Ἀποβλέψατε γὰρ πρὸς τὸ τέλος ἐκάστου τῶν γενο-  
 μένων βασιλείων, ὅτι τὸν κοινὸν πᾶσι θάνατον  
 ἀπέθανον· ὑπερ εἰ εἰς ἀναισθησίαν ἐχώρει, ἔρ-  
 μαιον ἂν ἦν τοῖς ἀδίκους πᾶσιν. Ἄλλ' ἐπεὶ καὶ αἰσθησις  
 πᾶσι γενομένοις μένει καὶ κόλασις αἰωνία ἀπόκειται, μὴ  
 ἀμελήσητε πεισθῆναί τε καὶ πιστεῦσαι ὅτι ἀληθῆ ταυτά  
 ἐστί. Νεκρομαντεῖαι μὲν γὰρ καὶ αἱ ἀδιαφθόρων παιδῶν  
 ἐποπτεύσεις καὶ ψυχῶν ἀνθρωπίνων κλήσεις καὶ οἱ λεγό-  
 μενοι παρὰ τοῖς μάγοις ὕνειροπομποὶ καὶ πάρεδροι καὶ τὰ  
 10 γινόμενα ὑπὸ τῶν ταῦτα εἰδύτων πεισάτωσαν ὑμᾶς ὅτι καὶ  
 μετὰ θάνατον ἐν αἰσθήσει εἰσὶν αἱ ψυχαί, καὶ οἱ ψυχαῖς  
 ἀποθανόντων λαμβανόμενοι καὶ ριπτούμενοι ἄνθρωποι,  
 οὓς δαιμονιολήπτους καὶ μαινομένους καλοῦσι πάντες, καὶ  
 τὰ παρ' ὑμῖν λεγόμενα μαντεῖα Ἀμφιλόχου καὶ Δωδώνης  
 15 καὶ Πυθούσης, καὶ ὅσα ἄλλα τοιαῦτά ἐστι, καὶ τὰ τῶν συγ-  
 γραφῶν διδάγματα, Ἐμπεδοκλέους καὶ Πυθαγόρου, Πλά-  
 τωνός τε καὶ Σωκράτους, καὶ ὁ παρ' Ὀμήρῳ βόερος καὶ  
 ἡ κάετος Ὀδυσσεύς εἰς τὴν τούτων ἐπίσκεψιν, καὶ τῶν  
 τὰ αὐτὰ τούτοις εἰπόντων· οἷς καὶ ὁμοίως ἡμᾶς ἀποδέξα-  
 20 σθε οὐχ ἥττον ἐκείνων θεῶν πιστεύοντας, ἀλλὰ μάλλον, οἱ  
 καὶ τὰ νεκρούμενα καὶ εἰς γῆν βαλλόμενα πάλιν ἀπολήψε-  
 σθαι ἑαυτῶν σώματα προσδοκῶμεν, ἀδύνατον μηδὲν εἶναι  
 θεῶν λέγοντες.

19. Καὶ κατανοοῦντι τί ἀπιστότερον ἂν μάλλον δόξαι,  
 ἢ εἰ ἐν σώματι μὴ ὑπάρχομεν καὶ τις ἔλεγεν ἐκ μικρᾶς τινος

Why should it  
be thought a  
thing incred-  
ible with you  
that God  
should raise  
the dead?
 ῥανίδος τῆς τοῦ ἀνθρωπείου σπέρματος δυνατὸν  
 ὁστέα τε καὶ νεῦρα καὶ σάρκας εἰκονοποιηζέντα,  
 οἷα ὑρῶμεν, γενέσθαι; Ἔστω γὰρ νῦν ἐφ' ὑπο- 5  
 θέσεως λεγόμενον. Εἴ τις ὑμῖν μὴ οὔσι τοιού-  
 τοις μηδὲ τοιούτων ἔλεγε, τὸ σπέρμα τὸ ἀνθρώπειον δεικνὺς  
 καὶ εἰκόνα γραπτὴν, ἐκ τοῦ τοιοῦδε οἷόν τε γενέσθαι δια-  
 βιβαιούμενος, πρὶν ἰδεῖν γενόμενον ἐπιστεύσατε; Οὐκ ἂν  
 τις τολμήσειεν ἀντειπεῖν. Τὸν αὐτὸν οὖν τρόπον διὰ τὸ 10  
 μήπω ἰωρακέναι ὑμᾶς ἀναστάντα νεκρὸν ἀπιστία ἔχει.  
 Ἄλλ' ὃν τρόπον τὴν ἀρχὴν οὐκ ἂν ἐπιστεύσατε ἐκ τῆς  
 μικρᾶς ῥανίδος δυνατὸν τοιούτους γενέσθαι, καὶ ὕρᾳτε γι-  
 νομένους, τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον λογίσασθε ὅτι διαλυζέντα καὶ  
δίκην σπερμάτων εἰς γῆν ἀναλυζέντα τὰ ἀνθρώπεια σώ- 15  
ματα κατὰ καιρὸν προστάξει Θεοῦ ἀναστῆναι καὶ ἀφθαρσίαν  
 ἐνδύσασθαι οὐκ ἀδύνατον. Ποίαν γὰρ ἀξίαν Θεοῦ δύνα-  
 μιν λέγουσιν οἱ φάσκοντες εἰς ἐκεῖνο χωρεῖν ἕκαστον, ἐξ  
 οὐπερ ἐγένετο, καὶ παρὰ ταῦτα μηδὲν ἄλλο δύνασθαι μηδὲ  
 τὸν Θεόν, οὐκ ἔχομεν λέγειν· ἀλλ' ἐκεῖνο συνορῶμεν, ὅτι 20  
 οὐκ ἂν ἐπίστευσαν δυνατὸν εἶναι τοιούτους ποτὲ γενέσθαι,  
 ὑποίους καὶ ἑαυτοὺς καὶ τὸν σύμπαντα κόσμον καὶ ἐξ ὑποί-  
 ων γεγενημένα ὁρῶσι. Κρεῖττον δὲ πιστεύειν καὶ τὰ τῇ  
 ἑαυτῶν φύσει καὶ ἀνθρώποις ἀδύνατα, ἢ ὁμοίως τοῖς ἄλ-  
 λοις ἀπιστεῖν, παρελήφαμεν, ἐπειδὴ καὶ τὸν ἡμέτερον διδά- 25  
 σκαλον Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἔγνωμεν εἰπόντα· Τὰ ἀδύνατα  
 παρὰ ἀνθρώποις δυνατὰ παρὰ Θεῷ. Καί· Μὴ φοβεῖσθε  
 τοὺς ἀναιροῦντας ὑμᾶς καὶ μετὰ ταῦτα μὴ δυναμένους τι  
 ποιῆσαι, εἶπε, φοβήθητε δὲ τὸν μετὰ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν δυνά-  
 μενον καὶ ψυχὴν καὶ σῶμα εἰς γένναν ἐμβαλεῖν. Ἡ δὲ 30  
 γέννᾳ ἐστὶ τύπος, ἐνθα κολάζεσθαι μέλλουσιν οἱ ἀδίκως

βιώσαντες καὶ μὴ πιστεύοντες ταῦτα γενήσεσθαι, ὅσα ὁ  
 θεὸς διὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐδίδαξε.

20. Καὶ Σίβυλλα δὲ καὶ Ὑστάσπης γενήσεσθαι τῶν  
 φαρτῶν ἀνάλωσιν διὰ πυρὸς ἔφασαν. Οἱ λε-  
 γόμενοι δὲ Στωϊκοὶ φιλόσοφοι καὶ αὐτὸν τὸν  
 θεὸν εἰς πῦρ ἀναλύεσθαι δογματίζουσι καὶ αὐ-  
 τὰ πάλιν κατὰ μεταβολὴν τὸν κόσμον γενέσθαι λέγουσιν.  
 ἡμεῖς δὲ κρεῖττον τι τῶν μεταβαλλομένων νοοῦμεν τὸν  
 πάντων ποιητὴν θεόν. Εἰ οὖν καὶ ὁμοίως τινὰ τοῖς παρ'  
 ὑμῖν τιμωμένοις ποιηταῖς καὶ φιλοσόφοις λέγομεν, ἕνα δὲ  
 καὶ μειζύνως καὶ θείως καὶ μόνον μετὰ ἀποδείξεως, τί παρὰ  
 10 πάντας ἀδίκως μισούμεθα; Τῷ γὰρ λέγειν ἡμᾶς ὑπὸ θεοῦ  
 πάντα κεκοσμησθαι καὶ γεγενῆσθαι Πλάτωνος δύξομεν λέ-  
 γειν δόγμα· τῷ δὲ ἐκπύρωσιν γενέσθαι Στωϊκῶν· τῷ δὲ  
 κολάζεσθαι ἐν αἰσθήσει καὶ μετὰ θάνατον οὐσας τὰς τῶν  
 ἀδίκων ψυχάς, τὰς δὲ τῶν σπουδαίων ἀπηλλαγμένας τῶν  
 15 τιμωριῶν εὖ διάγειν, ποιηταῖς καὶ φιλοσόφοις τὰ αὐτὰ λέ-  
 γειν δόξομεν· τῷ δὲ καὶ μὴ δεῖν χειρῶν ἔργα ἀνθρώπων  
 προσκυνεῖν, Μενάνδρῳ τῷ κωμικῷ καὶ τοῖς ταῦτα φήσασι  
 ταῦτα φράζομεν· μείζονα γὰρ τὸν δημιουργὸν τοῦ σκευα-  
 ζομένου ἀπεφάναντο.

21. Τῷ δὲ καὶ τὸν λόγον, ὃ ἐστὶ πρῶτον γέννημα τοῦ  
 θεοῦ, ἄνευ ἐπιμιξίας φάσκειν ἡμᾶς γεγενῆσθαι,  
 Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν τὸν διδάσκαλον ἡμῶν, καὶ τοῦ-  
 5 τον σταυρωθέντα καὶ ἀποθανόντα καὶ ἀναστάντα ἀνεληλυ-  
 θέναι εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν, οὐ παρὰ τοὺς παρ' ὑμῖν λεγόμενους  
 υἱοὺς τῷ Διὶ καινόν τι φέρομεν. Πόσους γὰρ υἱοὺς φά-  
 σκουσι τοῦ Διὸς οἱ παρ' ὑμῖν τιμώμενοι συγγραφεῖς, ἐπί-  
 στασθε· Ἑρμῆν μὲν, λόγον τὸν ἐρμηνευτικὸν καὶ πάντων

διδάσκαλον, Ἀσκληπιὸν δὲ καὶ Ξεραπευτὴν γενόμενον, κεραννωθέντα ἀνεληλυθέναι εἰς οὐρανόν, Διόνυσσον δὲ δια- 10 σπαραχθέντα, Ἡρακλέα δὲ φυγῇ πύων ἑαυτὸν πυρὶ δόντα, τοὺς ἐκ Λήδας δὲ Διουσκούρους, καὶ τὸν ἐκ Δανάης Περσέα, καὶ τὸν ἐξ ἀνθρώπων δὲ ἐφ' ἑπτοῦ Πηγάσου Βελλεροφόντην. Τί γὰρ λέγομεν τὴν Ἀριάδνην καὶ τοὺς ὁμοίους αὐτῇ κατηστερίσθαι λεγόμενους; Καὶ τί γὰρ τοὺς ἀποζνήσκον- 15 τας παρ' ὑμῖν αὐτοκράτορας, οὓς αἰὶ ἀπαθανατίζεσθαι ἀξιούντες καὶ ὁμνύντα τινὰ προάγετε ἑωρακεῖναι ἐκ τῆς πυρᾶς ἀνερχόμενον εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν τὸν κατακαίντα Καίσαρα; Καὶ ὅποιαί ἐκάστου τῶν λεγομένων νύων τοῦ Διὸς ἰστοροῦνται αἱ πράξεις, πρὸς εἰδύτας λέγειν οὐκ ἰνύγκη, πλὴν 20 ὅτι εἰς διαφορὰν καὶ προτροπὴν τῶν ἐκπαιδευομένων ταῦτα γέγραπται· μιμηταὶ γὰρ Θεῶν καλὸν εἶναι πάντες ἡγούνται. Ἀπεῖη δὲ σωφρονούσης ψυχῆς ἔννοια τοιαύτη περὶ Θεῶν, ὥς καὶ αὐτὸν τὸν ἡγεμόνα καὶ γεννήτορα πάντων κατ' αὐτοὺς Δία πατροφύνην τε καὶ πατρὸς τοιούτου γε- 25 γονέιναι, ἔρωτί τε κακῶν καὶ αἰσχυρῶν ἡδονῶν ἥττω γενόμενον ἐπὶ Γανυμήδην καὶ τὰς πολλὰς μοιχευθείσας γυναῖκας ἐλθεῖν, καὶ τοὺς αὐτοῦ παῖδας τὰ ὅμοια πράξαντας παραδέξασθαι. Ἄλλ', ὥς προέφημεν, οἱ φαῦλοι δαίμονες ταῦτα ἔπραξαν. Ἀπαθανατίζεσθαι δὲ ἡμεῖς μόνους δεδι- 30 δάγμεθα τοὺς ὁσίως καὶ ἐναρέτως ἐγγυὲς Θεῷ βιοῦντας, κυλάζεσθαι δὲ τοὺς ἀδίκως καὶ μὴ μεταβάλλοντας ἐν αἰωνίῳ πυρὶ πιστεύομεν.

22. Υἱὸς δὲ Θεοῦ ὁ Ἰησοῦς λεγόμενος, εἰ καὶ κοινῶς μόνον ἄνθρωπος, διὰ σοφίαν ἄξιως υἱὸς Θεοῦ λέ-  
Christ's son-  
ship and its  
analogies. γεσθαι· πατέρα γὰρ ἀνδρῶν τε Θεῶν τε πάντες συγγραφεῖς τὸν Θεὸν καλοῦσιν. Εἰ δὲ καὶ ἰδίως παρὰ τὴν

5 κοινήν γενέσιν γεγεννησθαι αὐτὸν ἐκ Θεοῦ λέγομεν λόγον  
 Θεοῦ, ὡς προέφημεν, κοινὸν τοῦτο ἔστω ὑμῖν τοῖς τὸν Ἑρ-  
 μῆν λόγον τὸν παρὰ Θεοῦ ἀγγελτικὸν λέγουσιν. Εἰ δὲ  
 αἰτιάσαιτό τις ἐσταυρῶσθαι αὐτόν, καὶ τοῦτο κοινὸν τοῖς  
 προκατηριζομένοις παθεῖν υἱοῖς καὶ ὑμᾶς τοῦ Διὸς  
 10 ὑπάρχει. Ἐκείνων τε γὰρ οὐχ ὅμοια τὰ πάθη τοῦ θανά-  
 του, ἀλλὰ διάφορα ἱστορεῖται, ὥστε μὴδὲ τὸ ἴδιον τοῦ πά-  
 θους ἤττονα δοκεῖν εἶναι τοῦτον, ἀλλ', ὡς ὑπεσχόμεθα,  
 προϊόντος τοῦ λόγου καὶ κρείττονα ἀποδείξομεν, μᾶλλον  
 δὲ καὶ ἀποδέδεικται· ὁ γὰρ κρείττων ἐκ τῶν πράξεων φαί-  
 15 νεται. Εἰ δὲ καὶ διὰ παρθένου γεγεννησθαι φέρομεν, κοι-  
 νὸν καὶ τοῦτο πρὸς τὸν Περσέα ἔστω ὑμῖν. Ὅτι δὲ λέγο-  
 μεν χωλοὺς καὶ παραλυτικοὺς καὶ ἐκ γενετῆς ἄνα πῆρους  
 ὑγιεῖς πεποικέναι αὐτόν καὶ νεκροὺς ἀνεγείραι, ὅμοια τοῖς  
 ὑπ' Ἀσκληπιοῦ γεγενῆσθαι λεγομένοις καὶ ταῦτα φάσκειν  
 20 δόξομεν.

23. Ἵνα δὲ ἥδη καὶ τοῦτο φανερόν ὑμῖν γένηται, ὅτι,  
 Statement of  
 the argument. ὑπόστα λέγομεν μαζόντες παρὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ  
 τῶν προελθόντων αὐτοῦ προφητῶν, μόνα ἀλη-  
 θῆ ἐστι καὶ πρεσβύτερα πάντων τῶν γεγεννημένων συγγρα-  
 5 φέων, καὶ οὐχὶ διὰ τὰ ταῦτα λέγειν αὐτοῖς παραδεχθῆναι  
 ἀξιοῦμεν ἀλλ' ὅτι τὸ ἀληθὲς λέγομεν· καὶ Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς  
 μόνος ἰδίως υἱὸς τῷ Θεῷ γεγέννηται, λόγος αὐτοῦ ὑπάρ-  
 χων καὶ πρωτότοκος καὶ δύναμις, καὶ τῇ βουλῇ αὐτοῦ γε-  
 νόμενος ἄνθρωπος ταῦτα ἡμᾶς ἐδίδαξεν ἐπ' ἀλλαγῇ καὶ  
 10 ἐπαναγωγῇ τοῦ ἀνθρωπείου γένους· καὶ πρὶν ἢ ἐν ἀν-  
 θρώποις αὐτὸν γενέσθαι ἄνθρωπον φθάσαντές τινες διὰ  
 τοὺς προειρημένους κακοὺς δαίμονας διὰ τῶν ποιητῶν ὡς  
 γενόμενα εἶπον ἃ μυθοποιήσαντες ἔφησαν, ὃν τρόπον καὶ

τὰ καθ' ἡμῶν λεγόμενα δύσφημα καὶ ἄσεβη ἔργα ἐνήργησαν, ὧν οὐδεὶς μάρτυς οὐδὲ ἀπόδειξις ἔστι, τοῦτον ἔλεγχον 15 ποιησόμεθα.

24. Πρῶτον μὲν ὅτι τὰ ὅμοια τοῖς Ἑλλήσι λέγοντες <sup>Variations of</sup> <sup>Heathenism.</sup> νοι μισούμεθα δι' ὄνομα τοῦ Χριστοῦ, καὶ μηδὲν ἀδικοῦντες ὡς ἁμαρτωλοὶ ἀναιρούμεθα, ἄλλων ἀλλαχοῦ καὶ δένδρα σεβομένων καὶ ποταμούςς καὶ μῦς καὶ αἰλούρους καὶ κροκοδείλους καὶ τῶν ἀλόγων ζώων τὰ 5 πολλά, καὶ οὐ τῶν αὐτῶν ὑπὸ πάντων τιμωμένων, ἀλλ' ἄλλων ἀλλαχόσε, ὥστ' εἶναι ἄσεβεις ἀλλήλοις πάντας διὰ τὸ μὴ τὰ αὐτὰ σέβειν. Ὅπερ μόνον ἐγκαλεῖν ἡμῖν ἔχετε, ὅτι μὴ τοὺς αὐτοὺς ὑμῖν σέβομεν θεοὺς, μηδὲ τοῖς ἀποθανούσι χοὰς καὶ κνίσας καὶ ἐν γραφαῖς στεφάνους καὶ θυσίας 10 φέρομεν. Ὅτι γὰρ οὐ τὰ αὐτὰ παρ' οἷς μὲν θεοί, παρ' οἷς δὲ θηρία, παρ' οἷς δὲ ἱερεῖα νενομισμένα ἔστιν, ἀκριβῶς ἐπίστασθε.

25. Δεύτερον δὲ ὅτι ἐκ παντὸς γένους ἀνθρώπων οἱ πάλοι <sup>Christians abandon the world of false gods.</sup> σεβόμενοι Διόνυσον τὸν Σεμέλης καὶ Ἀπόλλωνα τὸν Λητοῖδην, οἱ δὲ ἔρωτας ἀρσένων ὅσα ἔπραξαν αἷσχος καὶ λέγειν, καὶ οἱ Περσεφόνην καὶ Ἀφροδίτην, τὰς διὰ τὸν Ἀδωνιν οἰστροφείσας, ὧν καὶ τὰ μυστή- 5 ρια ἄγετε, ἢ Ἀσκληπιὸν ἢ τινα τῶν ἄλλων ὀνομαζομένων θεῶν, καίπερ θανάτου ἀπειλουμένου διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τούτων μὲν κατεφρονήσαμεν, θεῶ δὲ τῷ ἀγεννήτῳ καὶ ἀπαθεῖ ἑαυτοὺς ἀνεθήκαμεν, ὃν οὔτε ἐπ' Ἀντιόπην καὶ τὰς ἄλλας ὁμοίως, οὐδὲ ἐπὶ Γανυμήδην δι' οἶστρον ἐληλυθέναι 10 πεισόμεθα, οὐδὲ λυθῆναι βοηθείας τυχόντα διὰ Θέτιδος ὑπὸ τοῦ ἑκατοντάχειρος ἐκείνου, οὐδὲ μεριμνῶντα διὰ τοῦτο τὸν τῆς Θέτιδος Ἀχιλλεῖα διὰ τὴν παλλακίδα Βρισηΐδα



ὀλέσαι πολλοὺς τῶν Ἑλλήνων. Καὶ τοὺς πειζομένους  
 15 ἐλεοῦμεν· τοὺς δὲ τούτων αἰτίους δαίμονας γνωρίζομεν.

26. Τρίτον δὲ ὅτι καὶ μετὰ τὴν ἀνέλευσιν τοῦ Χριστοῦ  
 εἰς οὐρανὸν προεβάλλοντο οἱ δαίμονες ἀνθρώ-  
 20 <sup>Human agents</sup><sub>of the demons.</sub> πους τινὰς λέγοντας ἑαυτοὺς εἶναι θεοὺς, οἱ  
 οὐ μόνον οὐκ ἐδιώχθησαν ὑφ' ὑμῶν, ἀλλὰ καὶ τιμῶν κατ-  
 5 ηξιώθησαν· Σίμωννα μὲν τινα Σαμαρεία τὸν ἀπὸ κώμης  
 λεγομένης Γιττῶν, ὃς ἐπὶ Κλαυδίου Καίσαρος διὰ τῆς τῶν  
 ἐνεργούντων δαιμόνων τέχνης δυνάμεις ποιήσας μαγικάς  
 ἐν τῇ πόλει ὑμῶν βασιλίδι Ῥώμῃ θεὸς ἐνομίσθη καὶ ἀνδρι-  
άντι παρ' ὑμῶν ὡς θεὸς τετίμηται, ὃς ἀνδριὰς ἀνεγίγρεται  
 10 ἐν τῇ Τίβερι ποταμῷ μεταξὺ τῶν δύο γεφυρῶν, ἔχων ἐπι-  
 γράφην ῥωμαϊκὴν ταύτην· ΣΙΜΩΝΙ ΔΕΩ ΣΑΓΚΤΩ.  
 Καὶ σχεδὸν πάντες μὲν Σαμαρεῖς, ὀλίγοι δὲ καὶ ἐν ἄλλοις  
 ἔθνεσιν, ὡς τὸν πρῶτον θεὸν ἐκείνου ὁμολογοῦντες, ἐκείνου  
 καὶ προσκυνοῦσι· καὶ Ἑλένην τινά, τὴν συμπερινοστήσα-  
 15 σαν αὐτῷ κατ' ἐκείνου τοῦ καιροῦ, πρότερον ἐπὶ τέλους στα-  
 θεῖσαν, τὴν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ ἔννοιαν πρώτην γενομένην λέγουσι.  
 Μέναιδρον δὲ τινα, καὶ αὐτὸν Σαμαρεία τὸν ἀπὸ κώμης  
 Καππαρεταίας, γενόμενον μαθητὴν τοῦ Σίμωνος, ἐνεργη-  
 ζέντα καὶ ὑπὸ τῶν δαιμονίων καὶ ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ γενόμενον  
 20 πολλοὺς ἐξαπατῆσαι διὰ μαγικῆς τέχνης οἶδαμεν· ὃς καὶ  
 τοὺς αὐτῷ ἐπομένους ὡς μηδὲ ἀποσνήσκοιεν ἔπεισε, καὶ νῦν  
 εἰσὶ τινες ἀπ' ἐκείνου τοῦτο ὁμολογοῦντες. Μαρκίωνα δὲ  
 τινα Ποντικόν, ὃς καὶ νῦν ἔτι ἐστὶ διδάσκων τοὺς πειζομέ-  
 νους, ἄλλον τινὰ νομίζειν μίζονα τοῦ δημιουργοῦ θεοῦ,  
 25 ὃς κατὰ πᾶν γένος ἀνθρώπων διὰ τῆς τῶν δαιμόνων συλ-  
 λήψεως πολλοὺς πεποίηκε βλασφημίας λέγειν καὶ ἀρνεῖ-  
 σθαι τὸν ποιητὴν τοῦδε τοῦ παντὸς θεοῦ, ἄλλον δὲ τινα, ὡς

ὄντα μείζονα, τὰ μείζονα παρὰ τοῦτον ὁμολογεῖν πεποιη-  
 κέναι. Πάντες οἱ ἀπὸ τούτων ὑρμώμενοι, ὡς ἔφημεν, Χρι-  
 στιανοὶ καλοῦνται, ὃν τρόπον καὶ οἱ οὐ κοινωνοῦντες τῶν αὐ-  
 τῶν δογμάτων τοῖς φιλοσόφοις τὸ ἐπικατηγορούμενον  
 ὄνομα τῆς φιλοσοφίας κοινὸν ἔχουσιν. Εἰ δὲ καὶ τὰ δύσ-  
 φημα ἐκείνα μυζολογούμενα ἔργα πράττουσι, λυχνίας μὲν  
 ἀνατροπὴν καὶ τὰς ἀνέδην μίξεις καὶ ἀνθρωπείων σαρκῶν  
 βοράς, οὐ γινώσκομεν· ἀλλ' ὅτι μὴ διώκονται μηδὲ φονεύ-  
 ονται ὑφ' ὑμῶν κἂν διὰ τὰ δόγματα, ἐπιστάμεθα. Ἔστι δὲ  
 ἡμῖν καὶ σύνταγμα κατὰ πασῶν τῶν γεγενημένων αἰρέσεων  
 συντεταγμένον· ὃ εἰ βούλεσθε ἐντυχεῖν, δώσομεν.

27. Ἡμεῖς δέ, ἵνα μηδὲν ἀδικῶμεν μηδὲ ἀσεβῶμεν, ἐκτι-  
<sup>Guilt of expos-</sup> θέναι καὶ τὰ γεννώμενα πονηρῶν εἶναι δεδιδάγ-  
<sup>ing children.</sup> μεθα· πρῶτον μὲν, ὅτι τοὺς πάντας σχεδὸν  
 ὑρῶμεν ἐπὶ πορνείᾳ προάγοντας οὐ μόνον τὰς κόρας, ἀλλὰ  
 καὶ τοὺς ἄρσενας, καὶ ὃν τρόπον λέγονται οἱ παλαιοὶ ἀγέ-  
 λας βοῶν ἢ αἰγῶν ἢ προβάτων τρέφειν ἢ ἵππων φορβά-  
 δων, οὕτω νῦν καὶ παῖδας εἰς τὸ αἰσχυρῶς χρῆσθαι μόνον·  
 καὶ ὁμοίως θηλειῶν καὶ ἀνδρογύνων καὶ ἀρρητοποιῶν  
 πληθεὺς κατὰ πᾶν ἔθνος ἐπὶ τοῦ αὐτοῦ τέγους ἔστηκε.  
 Καὶ τούτων μισθοὺς καὶ εἰσφορὰς καὶ τέλη λαμβάνετε, <sup>10</sup>  
 δέον ἐκκύψαι ἀπὸ τῆς ὑμετέρας οἰκουμένης. Καὶ τῶν τού-  
 τοις χρωμένων τις πρὸς τῇ ἀξίᾳ καὶ ἀσεβείᾳ καὶ ἀκρατεῖ  
 μίξει, εἰ τύχοι, τέκνῳ ἢ συγγενεῖ ἢ ἀδελφῷ μίγνυται. Οἱ  
 δὲ καὶ τὰ ἑαυτῶν τέκνα καὶ τὰς ὁμοζύγους προαγαγεύον-  
 ται, καὶ φανερώς εἰς κιναιδίαν ἀποκόπτονται τινες καὶ εἰς <sup>15</sup>  
 μητέρα θεῶν τὰ μυστήρια ἀναφέρουσι, καὶ παρὰ παντὶ τῶν  
 νομιζομένων παρ' ὑμῖν θεῶν ὅφιν σύμβολον μέγα καὶ μυ-  
 στήριον ἀναγράφεται. Καὶ τὰ φανερώς ὑμῖν πραττόμενα

καὶ τιμώμενα ὡς ἀνατετραμμένου καὶ οὐ παρόντος φωτὸς  
 20 τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῖν προσγράφετε, ὕπερ ἀπηλλαγμένοις ἡμῖν τοῦ  
 πράττειν τι τούτων οὐ βλάβην φέρει, ἀλλὰ τοῖς πράττουσι  
 καὶ ψευδομαρτυροῦσι μᾶλλον.

28. Παρ' ἡμῖν μὲν γὰρ ὁ ἀρχηγέτης τῶν κακῶν δαιμό-  
 νων ὄφρις καλεῖται καὶ σατανᾶς καὶ διάβολος,  
 ὡς καὶ ἐκ τῶν ἡμετέρων συγγραμμάτων ἱρευνή-  
 σαντες μαθεῖν δύνασθαι, ὃν εἰς τὸ πῦρ πεμφθήσεσθαι μετὰ  
 5 τῆς αὐτοῦ στρατιᾶς καὶ τῶν ἐπομένων ἀνθρώπων κολασθη-  
 σομένους τὸν ἀπέραντον αἰῶνα, προεμήνυσεν ὁ Χριστός.  
 Καὶ γὰρ ἡ ἐπιμονὴ τοῦ μηδέπω τοῦτο πράξαι τὸν Θεὸν διὰ  
 τὸ ἀνθρώπινον γένος γεγένηται· προγινώσκει γάρ τινας  
 ἐκ μετανόιας σωθήσεσθαι μέλλοντας καὶ τινας μηδέπω ἴσως  
 10 γεννηθέντας. Καὶ τὴν ἀρχὴν νοερὸν καὶ δυνάμενον αἰρεῖ-  
 σθαι τὰ ληθῆ καὶ εὖ πράττειν τὸ γένος τὸ ἀνθρώπινον πε-  
 ποιήκειν, ὥστ' ἀναπολόγητον εἶναι τοῖς πᾶσιν ἀνθρώποις  
 παρὰ τῷ Θεῷ· λογικοὶ γὰρ καὶ θεωρητικοὶ γεγέννηται. Εἰ  
 δέ τις ἀπιστεῖ μέλειν τούτων τῷ Θεῷ, ἢ μὴ εἶναι αὐτὸν διὰ  
 15 τέχνης ὁμολογήσει, ἢ ὄντα χαίρειν κακίᾳ φήσει ἢ λίσσῃ  
 εἰσικύτα μένειν, καὶ μηδὲν εἶναι ἀρετὴν μηδὲ κακίαν, δόξῃ δὲ  
 μόνον τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἢ ἀγαθὰ ἢ κακὰ ταῦτα ἡγεῖσθαι,  
 ἢ περ μεγίστη ἀσέβεια καὶ ἀδικία ἐστίν.

29. Καὶ πάλιν, μὴ τῶν ἐκτεθέντων τις μὴ ἀναληφθεὶς  
 τοῦ ὁριζήσαντος, καὶ ὡμεν ἀνδροφύνοι. Ἄλλ' ἢ τὴν  
 ἀρχὴν οὐκ ἐγαμοῦμεν, εἰ μὴ ἐπὶ παῖδων ἀνα-  
 τροφῇ, ἢ παραιτούμενοι τὸ γήμασθαι τέλειον ἐν ἐκκρατεῦ-  
 5 σθαι. Καὶ ἥδη τις τῶν ἡμετέρων, ὕπερ τοῦ πείσαι ὑμᾶς  
 ὅτι οὐκ ἔστιν ἡμῖν μυστήριον ἢ ἀνέδην μῆτις, βιβλίδιον  
 ἀνέδωκεν ἐν Ἀλεξανδρίᾳ Φήλικι ἡγεμονεύοντι, ἀξίων ἐπι-

τρέψαι ἰατρῷ τοὺς διδύμους αὐτοῦ ἀφελεῖν· ἄνευ γὰρ τῆς τοῦ ἡγεμόνος ἐπιτροπῆς τοῦτο πράττειν ἀπειρῆσαι οἱ ἐκεῖ ἱατροὶ ἔλεγον. Καὶ μηδύλως βουλευθέντος Φήλικος ὑπο- 10 γράψαι, ἐφ' ἑαυτοῦ μένας ὁ νεανίσκος ἠρκέσθη τῇ ἑαυτοῦ καὶ τῶν ὁμογενωμένων συνειδήσει. Οὐκ ἄτοπον δὲ ἐπιμνησθῆναι ἐν τούτοις ἡγησάμεθα καὶ Ἀντινόου τοῦ νῦν γεγενημένου, ὃν καὶ πάντες ὡς θεὸν διὰ φύβον σέβειν ὥρμητο, ἐπιστάμενοι τίς τε ἦν καὶ πόθεν ὑπῆρχεν. 15

30. Ὅπως δὲ μή τις εἴπῃ ἀντιθεῖς ἡμῖν, τί κωλύει καὶ But was not  
Christ a ma-  
gician? τὸν παρ' ἡμῖν λεγόμενον Χριστόν, ἄνθρωπον ἐξ ἀνθρώπων ὄντα, μαγικῇ τέχνῃ ἃς λέγομεν δυνάμεις πεποιηκέναι καὶ δύξαι διὰ τοῦτο υἱὸν θεοῦ εἶναι, τὴν ἀπύδειξιν ἤδη ποιησόμεθα, οὐ τοῖς λέγουσι πιστεύοντες, 5 ἀλλὰ τοῖς προφητεύουσι πρὶν ἢ γενέσθαι κατ' ἀνάγκην πειθόμενοι διὰ τὸ καὶ ὅψαι ὡς προεφητεύθη ὑρᾶν γενόμενα καὶ γινόμενα· ἥπερ μεγίστη καὶ ἀληθεστάτη ἀπύδειξις καὶ ὑμῖν, ὡς νομίζομεν, φανήσεται.

31. Ἄνθρωποι οὖν τινες ἐν Ἰουδαίοις γεγέννηται θεοῦ Of the Hebrew  
prophets. προφῆται, δι' ὧν τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα προεκήρυξε τὰ γενήσεσθαι μέλλοντα πρὶν ἢ γενέσθαι· καὶ τούτων οἱ ἐν Ἰουδαίοις κατὰ καιροὺς γενόμενοι βασιλεῖς τὰς προφητείας, ὡς ἐλέχθησαν ὅτε προεφητεύοντο, τῇ ἰδίᾳ 5 αὐτῶν ἰβραϊδὶ φωνῇ ἐν βιβλίοις ὑπ' αὐτῶν τῶν προφητῶν συντεταγμένας κτῶμενοι περιεῖπον. Ὅτε δὲ Πτολεμαῖος ὁ Αἰγυπτίων βασιλεὺς βιβλιοθήκην κατεσκεύαζε καὶ τὰ πάντων ἀνθρώπων συγγράμματα συνάγειν ἐπειράθη, πειθόμενος καὶ περὶ τῶν προφητειῶν τούτων, προσέπεμψε τῷ 10 τῶν Ἰουδαίων τότε βασιλεύοντι Ἡρώδῃ, ἀξιῶν διαπεμφθῆναι αὐτῷ τὰς βίβλους τῶν προφητειῶν. Καὶ ὁ μὲν βασιλεὺς

Ἡρώδης τῇ προειρημένη ἰβραΐδι αὐτῶν φωνῇ γεγραμμέ-  
 νας διεπέμψατο. Ἐπειδὴ δὲ οὐκ ἦν γνώριμα τὰ ἐν αὐταῖς  
 15 γεγραμμένα τοῖς Αἰγυπτίοις, πάλιν αὐτὸν ἠξίωσε πέμψας  
 τοὺς μεταβαλοῦντας αὐτὰς εἰς τὴν ἑλλάδα φωνὴν ἀν-  
 θρώπους ἀποστείλαι. Καὶ τούτου γενομένου ἔμειναν αἱ  
 βίβλοι καὶ παρ' Αἰγυπτίοις μέχρι τοῦ δεῦρο, καὶ πανταχοῦ  
 παρὰ πᾶσιν εἰσιν Ἰουδαίοις, οἱ καὶ ἀναγινώσκοντες οὐ συν-  
 20 ιᾶσι τὰ εἰρημένα, ἀλλ' ἐχθροὺς ἡμᾶς καὶ πολεμίους ἡγούν-  
 ται, ὁμοίως ὑμῖν ἀναιροῦντες καὶ κολάζοντες ἡμᾶς ὅπταν  
 δύνωνται, ὡς καὶ πεισθῆναι δύνασθε· καὶ γὰρ ἐν τῇ νῦν  
 γεγενημένῃ Ἰουδαϊκῇ πολέμῳ Βαρχωχίβας, ὁ τῆς Ἰουδαίων  
 ἀποστάσεως ἀρχηγέτης, Χριστιανοὺς μόνους εἰς τιμωρίας  
 25 δεινάς, εἰ μὴ ἀρνοῖντο Ἰησοῦν τὸν Χριστὸν καὶ βλασφη-  
 μοῖεν, ἐκέλευεν ἀπάγεσθαι. Ἐν δὲ ταῖς τῶν προφητῶν  
 βίβλοις εὖρομεν προκηρυσσόμενον παραγινόμενον, γεννι-  
 μενον διὰ παρθένου, καὶ ἀνδρούμενον καὶ θεραπεύοντα πᾶ-  
 σαν νόσον καὶ πᾶσαν μαλακίαν καὶ νεκροὺς ἀνεγείροντα,  
 30 καὶ φθονούμενον καὶ ἀγνοούμενόν καὶ σταυρούμενον Ἰη-  
 σοῦν τὸν ἡμέτερον Χριστόν, καὶ ἀποκρύνσκοντα καὶ ἀνε-  
 γειρόμενον καὶ εἰς οὐρανοὺς ἀνερχόμενον καὶ νίδον θεοῦ  
 ὄντα καὶ κεκλημένον, καὶ τινὰς πεμπομένους ὑπ' αὐτοῦ εἰς  
 πᾶν γένος ἀνθρώπων κηρύζοντας ταῦτα, καὶ τοὺς ἐξ  
 35 ἐξῶν ἀνθρώπους μᾶλλον αὐτῷ πιστεύειν. Προεφητεῦσθη  
 δέ, πρὶν ἢ φανῆναι αὐτόν, ἔτεσι ποτὲ μὲν πεντακισχιλίοις,  
 ποτὲ δὲ τρισχιλίοις, ποτὲ δὲ δισχιλίοις, καὶ πάλιν χιλίοις  
 καὶ ἄλλοτε ὅκτακοσίοις· κατὰ γὰρ τὰς διαδοχὰς τῶν γενῶν  
 ἕτεροι καὶ ἕτεροι ἐγένοντο προφῆται.

32. Μωϋσῆς μὲν οὖν, πρῶτος τῶν προφητῶν γενόμενος,  
 εἶπεν αὐτολεξεί οὕτως· Οὐκ ἐκλείψει ἄρχων ἐξ Ἰούδα

οὐδὲ ἡγούμενος ἐκ τῶν μηνῶν αὐτοῦ, ἕως ἂν  
 ἔλθῃ ᾧ ἀπύκειται· καὶ αὐτὸς ἔσται προσδοκία  
 ἱστων, δεσμεύων πρὸς ἄμπελον τὸν πῶλον αὐτοῦ, πλύνων  
 ἐν αἵματι σταφυλῆς τὴν στολὴν αὐτοῦ. Ὑμέτερον οὖν ἔστιν  
 ἀκριβῶς ἐξετάσαι καὶ μαθεῖν, μέχρι τίνος ἦν ἄρχων καὶ  
 βασιλεὺς ἐν Ἰουδαίοις ἴδιος αὐτῶν· μέχρι τῆς φανερώσεως  
 Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τοῦ ἡμετέρου διδασκάλου καὶ τῶν ἀγνω-  
 μένων προφητειῶν ἐξηγητοῦ, ὡς προεῖρηται ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ  
 ἁγίου προφητικοῦ πνεύματος διὰ τοῦ Μωϋσέως μὴ ἐκλεί-  
 ψειν ἄρχοντα ἀπὸ Ἰουδαίων, ἕως ἂν ἔλθῃ ᾧ ἀπύκειται τὸ  
 βασίλειον. Ἰούδας γὰρ προπάτωρ Ἰουδαίων, ἀφ' οὗ καὶ  
 τὸ Ἰουδαῖοι καλεῖσθαι ἐσχήκασιν· καὶ ὑμεῖς μετὰ τὴν γενομέ-  
 νην αὐτοῦ φανέρωσιν καὶ Ἰουδαίων ἐβασιλεύσατε καὶ τῆς  
 ἐκείνων πάσης γῆς ἐκρατήσατε. Τὸ δὲ Αὐτὸς ἔσται προσ-  
 δοκία ἱστων μηνυτικὸν ἦν ὅτι ἐκ πάντων τῶν ἱστων προσ-  
 δοκήσουσιν αὐτὸν πάλιν παραγεννησόμενον, ὕπερ ὅψις ὑμῖν  
 πάρεστιν ἰδεῖν καὶ ἔργῳ πεισθῆναι· ἐκ πάντων γὰρ γενῶν  
 ἀνθρώπων προσδοκῶσι τὸν ἐν Ἰουδαίᾳ σταυρωθέντα, μετ' οὗ  
 ὃν εὐθὺς δοριάλωτος ὑμῖν ἡ γῆ Ἰουδαίων παρεδόθη. Τὸ  
 δὲ Δεσμεύων πρὸς ἄμπελον τὸν πῶλον αὐτοῦ καὶ πλύνων  
 τὴν στολὴν αὐτοῦ ἐν αἵματι σταφυλῆς σύμβολον δηλωτι-  
 κὸν ἦν τῶν γενησομένων τῷ Χριστῷ καὶ τῶν ὑπ' αὐτοῦ  
 πραχθησομένων. Πῶλος γάρ τις ὄνου εἰσθήκει ἐν τινι  
 εἰσὸς κώμης πρὸς ἄμπελον δεδεμένος, ὃν ἐκέλευσεν ἀγα-  
 γεῖν αὐτῷ τότε τοὺς γνώριμους αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἀχθέντος ἐπιβὰς  
 ἐκάθισεν καὶ εἰσελήλυθεν εἰς τὰ Ἱεροσόλυμα, ἔνθα τὸ μέγι-  
 στον ἱερὸν ἦν Ἰουδαίων, ὃ ὑφ' ὑμῶν ὕστερον κατεστράφη.  
 Καὶ μετὰ ταῦτα ἐσταυρώθη, ὅπως τὸ λεῖπον τῆς προφητείας  
 συντελεσθῇ. Τὸ γὰρ Πλύνων τὴν στολὴν αὐτοῦ ἐν αἵματι

σταφυλῶν, προαγγελτικὸν ἦν τοῦ πάθους οὐ πάσχειν ἐμελλε, δι' αἵματος καθαίρων τοὺς πιστεύοντας αὐτῷ. Ἡ γὰρ κεκλημένη ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ πνεύματος διὰ τοῦ προφήτου στολή οἱ πιστεύοντες αὐτῷ εἰσιν ἄνθρωποι, ἐν οἷς οἰκεῖ τὸ παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ σπέρμα, ὁ λόγος. Τὸ δὲ εἰρημένον αἷμα τῆς σταφυλῆς σημαντικὸν τοῦ ἔχειν μὲν αἷμα τὸν φανησόμενον, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἐξ ἀνθρωπίου σπέρματος, ἀλλ' ἐκ Θεας δυνάμεως. Ἡ δὲ πρώτη δύναμις μετὰ τὸν πατέρα πάντων καὶ δεσπύτην Θεὸν καὶ υἱὸς ὁ λόγος ἐστίν, ὃς τίνα τρόπον σαρκοποιήσεις ἄνθρωπος γέγονεν, ἐν τοῖς ἐξῆς ἐροῦμεν. Ὅν τρόπον γὰρ τὸ τῆς ἀμπέλου αἷμα οὐκ ἄνθρωπος πεποίηκεν, ἀλλ' ὁ Θεός, οὕτως καὶ τοῦτο ἐμνηύετο οὐκ ἐξ ἀνθρωπίου σπέρματος γενήσεσθαι τὸ αἷμα, ἀλλ' ἐκ δυνάμεως Θεοῦ, ὡς προέφημεν. Καὶ Ἡσαΐας δέ, ἄλλος προφήτης, τὰ αὐτὰ δι' ἄλλων ῥήσεων προφητεύων, οὕτως εἶπεν· Ἀνατελεῖ ἄστρον ἐξ Ἰακώβ, καὶ ἄνθρωπος ἀναβήσεται ἀπὸ τῆς ρίζης Ἰεσσαί· καὶ ἐπὶ τὸν βραχίονα αὐτοῦ ἔσονται ἐλπίουσιν. Ἄστρον δὲ φωτεινὸν ἀνέτειλε, καὶ ἄνθρωπος ἀνέβη ἀπὸ τῆς ρίζης Ἰεσσαί, οὗτος ὁ Χριστός. Διὰ γὰρ παρθένου τῆς ἀπὸ τοῦ σπέρματος Ἰακώβ, τοῦ γενομένου πατρὸς Ἰούδα, τοῦ δεδηλωμένου Ἰουδαίων πατρὸς, διὰ δυνάμεως Θεοῦ ἀπεκύχθη· καὶ Ἰεσσαὶ προπάτωρ μὲν κατὰ τὸ λόγιον γεγέννηται, τοῦ δὲ Ἰακώβ καὶ τοῦ Ἰούδα κατὰ γένους διαδοχὴν υἱὸς ὑπῆρχεν.

33. Καὶ πάλιν ὡς αὐτολεξεὶ διὰ παρθένου μὲν τεχθησόμενος διὰ τοῦ Ἡσαίου προεφητεύθη, ἀκούσατε. <sup>Manner of Christ's birth foretold.</sup> Ἐλέχθη δὲ οὕτως· Ἰδοὺ ἡ παρθένος ἐν γαστρὶ ἔξει καὶ τέξεται υἱόν, καὶ ἐροῦσιν ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματι αὐτοῦ <sup>ε</sup> Μεξ· ἡμῶν ὁ Θεός. Ἄ γὰρ ἦν ἄπιστα καὶ ἀδύνατα νομι-

ζόμενα παρὰ τοῖς ἀνθρώποις γενήσεσθαι, ταῦτα ὁ θεὸς προεμήνυσε διὰ τοῦ προφητικοῦ πνεύματος μέλλειν γίνεσθαι, ἵν' ὕταν γένηται μὴ ἀπιστησῇ, ἀλλ' ἐκ τοῦ προειρησθαι πιστευθῇ. Ὅπως δὲ μή τινες, μὴ νοήσαντες τὴν δεδηλωμένην προφητείαν, ἐγκαλέσωσιν ἡμῖν, ὅτι ἐνεκαλέσαμεν τοῖς ποιηταῖς εἰποῦσιν ἀφροδισίων χάριν ἐληλυθῆναι ἐκ γυναικας τὸν Δία, διασαφῆσαι τοὺς λόγους πειρασόμεθ'· τὸ οὖν Ἰδοῦ ἢ παρθένος ἐν γαστρὶ ἔξει, σημαίνει οὐ συουσιασθεῖσαν τὴν παρθένον συλλαβεῖν. Εἰ γὰρ ἐσυνοσίασθαι ὑπὸ ὕτου οὖν, οὐκ ἔτι ἦν παρθένος· ἀλλὰ δύναμις θεοῦ ἐπελθοῦσα τῇ παρθένῳ ἐπισκίασεν αὐτήν, καὶ κυφορῆσαι παρθένον οὖσαν πεποίηκε. Καὶ ὁ ἀποσταλὲς πρὸς αὐτὴν τὴν παρθένον κατ' ἐκείνο τοῦ καιροῦ ἄγγελος θεοῦ εὐηγγελίσασα αὐτὴν εἰπὼν· Ἰδοῦ συλλήψῃ ἐν γαστρὶ ἐκ πνεύματος ἁγίου καὶ τέξῃ υἱόν, καὶ υἱὸς ὑψίστου κληθήσεται καὶ καλέσεις τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦν, αὐτὸς γὰρ σώσει τὸν λαὸν αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν αὐτῶν, ὡς ἀπομνημονεύσαντες πάντα τὰ περὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐδίδαξαν, οἷς ἐπιστεύσαμεν, ἐπειδὴ καὶ ἐκ Ἡσαΐου τοῦ προδεδηλωμένου τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα ταυτον γενησόμενον ὡς προεμηνύομεν ἔφη. Τὸ πνεῦμα οὖν καὶ τὴν δύναμιν τὴν παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ οὐδὲν ἄλλο νοῆσαι ἔμελλε ἢ τὸν λόγον, ὃς καὶ πρωτότοκος τῷ θεῷ ἐστι, καὶ Μωϋσῆς ὁ προδεδηλωμένος προφήτης ἐμήνυσε. Καὶ τοῦ ἐλθόντος ἐπὶ τὴν παρθένον καὶ ἐπισκίασαν οὐ διὰ συνουσίαν ἀλλὰ διὰ δυνάμειος ἐγκύμονα κατέστησε. Τὸ δὲ Ἰησοῦ ὄνομα τῇ ἐβραϊδὶ φωνῇ σωτὴρ τῇ ἐλληνίδι διαλέκτῳ ἐκλεγομένη. Ὅθεν καὶ ὁ ἄγγελος πρὸς τὴν παρθένον εἶπε· Καὶ καλέσεις τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦν· αὐτὸς γὰρ σώσει



25 τὸν λαὸν αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν αὐτῶν. "Οτι δὲ οὐδενὶ ἄλλῳ Ξεφοροῦνται οἱ προφητεύοντες εἰ μὴ λόγῳ θείῳ, καὶ ὑμεῖς, ὡς ὑπολαμβάνω, φήσετε.

34. "Οπου δὲ καὶ τῆς γῆς γεννᾶσθαι ἔμελλεν, ὡς προ-  
Place of  
Christ's birth  
foretold. εἶπεν ἑτερος προφήτης ὁ Μιχαίας, ἀκούσατε.  
 "Εφη δὲ οὕτως· Καὶ σὺ Βηθλεέμ, γῆ Ἰούδα,  
 οὐδαμῶς ἐλαχίστη εἶ ἐν τοῖς ἡγεμόσιν Ἰούδα· ἐκ σοῦ γὰρ  
 5 ἐξελεύσεται ἡγούμενος, ὅστις ποιμανεῖ τὸν λαόν μου. Κώμη  
 δὲ τίς ἐστιν ἐν τῇ χώρᾳ Ἰουδαίων, ἀπέχουσα σταδίου τρι-  
 ἄκοντα πέντε Ἱεροσολύμων, ἐν ᾗ ἐγεννήθη Ἰησοῦς Χριστός,  
 ὡς καὶ μαθεῖν δύνασθε ἐκ τῶν ἀπογραφῶν τῶν γενομένων  
 ἐπὶ Κυρηνίου τοῦ ὑμετέρου ἐν Ἰουδαίᾳ πρώτου γενομένου  
 10 ἐπιτρόπου.

35. Ὡς δὲ καὶ λήσιν ἔμελλε τοὺς ἄλλους ἀνθρώπους  
Other proph-  
ecies that  
have come  
to pass. γεννηθῆς ὁ Χριστός, ἄχρις ἀνδρωθῆ, ὅπερ καὶ  
 γέγονεν, ἀκούσατε τῶν προειρημένων εἰς τοῦτο.  
 "Εστι δὲ ταῦτα· Παιδίον ἐγεννήθη ἡμῖν, καὶ  
 5 νεανίσκος ἡμῖν ἀπεδόθη, οὗ ἡ ἀρχὴ ἐπὶ τῶν ὤμων, μηνυτι-  
 κὸν τῆς δυνάμεως τοῦ σταυροῦ, ᾧ προσέθηκε τοὺς ὤμους  
 σταυρωθεῖς, ὡς προϊόντος τοῦ λόγου σαφέστερον δειχθήσει-  
 ται. Καὶ πάλιν ὁ αὐτὸς προφήτης Ἡσαΐας Ξεφορούμενος  
 τῷ πνεύματι τῷ προφητικῷ ἔφη· Ἐγὼ ἐξεπέτασα τὰς χεῖ-  
 10 ράς μου ἐπὶ λαὸν ἀπειθοῦντα καὶ ἀντιλέγοντα, ἐπὶ τοὺς  
 πορευομένους ἐν ὁδῷ οὐ καλῇ. Αἰταῦσί με νῦν κρίσιν καὶ  
ἐγγίξιν θεῷ τολμῶσιν. Καὶ πάλιν ἐν ἄλλοις λόγοις δι'  
 ἑτέρου προφήτου λέγει· Αὐτοὶ ὠρυζάν μου πόδας καὶ χεῖ-  
 ρας, καὶ ἔβαλον κλῆρον ἐπὶ τὸν ἱματισμόν μου. Καὶ ὁ  
 15 μὲν Δαυὶδ ὁ βασιλεὺς καὶ προφήτης, ὁ εἰπὼν ταῦτα, οὐδὲν  
 τούτων ἔπαθεν· Ἰησοῦς δὲ Χριστὸς ἐξετάθη τὰς χεῖρας,

σταυρωθεῖς ὑπὸ τῶν Ἰουδαίων ἀντιλεγόντων αὐτῷ καὶ φασκύντων μὴ εἶναι αὐτὸν Χριστόν. Καὶ γάρ, ὡς εἶπεν ὁ προφήτης, διασύροντες αὐτὸν ἐκάθισαν ἐπὶ βήματος καὶ εἶπον· Κρίνον ἡμῖν. Τὸ δὲ Ὁρυζάν μου χεῖρας καὶ πόδας ἐξηγήσεις τῶν ἐν τῷ σταυρῷ παγέντων ἐν ταῖς χερσὶ καὶ τοῖς ποσὶν αὐτοῦ ἡλὼν ἦν. Καὶ μετὰ τὸ σταυρῶσαι αὐτὸν ἔβαλον κλῆρον ἐπὶ τὸν ἱματισμὸν αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἡμερίσαντο ἑαυτοῖς οἱ σταυρώσαντες αὐτόν. Καὶ ταῦτα ὅτι γέγονε, δύνασθε μαθεῖν ἐκ τῶν ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου γενομένων ἁκτῶν. Καὶ ὅτι ῥητῶς καθεσθῆσόμενος ἐπὶ πῶλον ὄνου καὶ εἰσελευσόμενος εἰς τὰ Ἱεροσόλυμα προεπεφίτευτο, ἐτέρου προφήτου τοῦ Σοφονίου τὰς τῆς προφητείας λέξεις ἐροῦμεν. Εἰσὶ δὲ αὗται· Χαῖρε σφόδρα, Σύγατερ Σιών, κήρυσσε, Σύγατερ Ἱερουσαλήμ· ἰδοὺ ὁ βασιλεὺς σου ἔρχεται σοι πρῶτος, ἐπιβεβηκὼς ἐπὶ ὄνον καὶ πῶλον νῖον ὑποζυγίου.

36. Ὅταν δὲ τὰς λέξεις τῶν προφητῶν λεγομένας ὡς Prophets represent different persons. ἀπὸ προσώπου ἀκούητε, μὴ ἀπ' αὐτῶν τῶν ἡμπεπνευσμένων λέγεσθαι νομίσητε, ἀλλ' ἀπὸ τοῦ κινούντος αὐτοὺς Θεοῦ λόγου. Ποτὲ μὲν γὰρ ὡς προαγγελτικῶς τὰ μέλλοντα γενήσεσθαι λέγει, ποτὲ δὲ ὡς ἀπὸ προσώπου τοῦ δεσπύτου πάντων καὶ πατρὸς Θεοῦ φθέγγεται, ποτὲ δὲ ὡς ἀπὸ προσώπου τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ποτὲ δὲ ὡς ἀπὸ προσώπου λαῶν ἀποκρινομένων τῷ κυρίῳ ἢ τῷ πατρὶ αὐτοῦ· ὑποῖον καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν παρ' ὑμῖν συγγραφέων ἰδεῖν ἔστιν, ἕνα μὲν τὸν τὰ πάντα συγγράφοντα ὄντα, πρῶ-10 σωπα δὲ τὰ διαλεγόμενα παραφέροντα. Ὅπερ μὴ νοήσαντες οἱ ἔχοντες τὰς βίβλους τῶν προφητῶν Ἰουδαῖοι, οὐκ ἐγνώρισαν οὐδὲ παραγενόμενον τὸν Χριστόν, ἀλλὰ καὶ

ἡμᾶς τοὺς λέγοντας παραγεγενῆσθαι αὐτόν, καὶ ὡς προ-  
 15 ἐκεκλήρυκτο ἀποδεικνύοντας ἑσταυρῶσθαι ὑπ' αὐτῶν, μισοῦ-  
 σιν.

37. Ἴνα δὲ καὶ τοῦτο ὑμῖν φανερὸν γένηται, ἀπὸ προσώ-  
 The Father που τοῦ πατρὸς ἐλέχθησαν διὰ Ἡσαίου τοῦ  
 speaks προειρημένου προφήτου οἶδε οἱ λόγοι· Ἔγνω  
 βουῶς τὸν κτησόμενον καὶ ὄνος τὴν φάτνην τοῦ κυρίου αὐ-  
 5 τοῦ, Ἰσραὴλ δέ με οὐκ ἔγνω καὶ ὁ λαός μου οὐ συνῆκεν.  
 Οὐαὶ ἔσθνος ἀμαρτωλόν, λαὸς πλήρης ἀμαρτιῶν, σπέρμα  
 πονηρὸν, υἱοὶ ἀνομοί· ἐγκατελίπετε τὸν κύριον. Καὶ πάλιν  
 ἀλλαχοῦ, ὅταν λέγῃ ὁ αὐτὸς προφήτης ὁμοίως ἀπὸ  
 τοῦ πατρὸς· Ποιοῦν μοι οἶκον οἰκοδομήσετε; λέγει κύριος.  
 10 Ὁ οὐρανός μοι ξρόνος, καὶ ἡ γῆ ὑποπόδιον τῶν ποδῶν  
 μου. Καὶ πάλιν ἀλλαχοῦ· Τὰς νομηνίας ὑμῶν καὶ τὰ  
 σάββατα μισεῖ ἡ ψυχὴ μου, καὶ μεγάλην ἡμέραν νηστείας  
 καὶ ἀργίαν οὐκ ἀνέχομαι· οὐδ' ἂν ἔρχησθε ὀφθῆναί μοι  
 εἰσακούσομαι ὑμῶν. Πλήρεις αἵματος αἱ χεῖρες ὑμῶν.  
 15 Κἂν φέρητε σεμίδαλιν, θυμίαμα, βξέλυγμά μοι ἐστί· στέαρ  
 ἄρνων καὶ αἶμα ταύρων οὐ βούλομαι. Τίς γὰρ ἐξεζήτησε  
 ταῦτα ἐκ τῶν χειρῶν ὑμῶν; Ἀλλὰ διάλυε πάντα σύνδε-  
 σμον ἀδικίας, διάσπα στραγγαλιὰς βιαίων συναλλαγμά-  
 των, ἄστεγον καὶ γυμνὸν σκέπε, διάξρυντε πεινῶντι τὸν  
 20 ἄρτον σου. Ὅποια μὲν οὖν ἐστί καὶ τὰ διδασκόμενα διὰ  
 τῶν προφητῶν ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ, νοεῖν δύνασθε.

38. Ὅταν δὲ ἀπὸ προσώπου τοῦ Χριστοῦ λέγῃ τὸ προ-  
 φητικὸν πνεῦμα, οὕτως φξέγγεται· Ἐγὼ ἐξεπέ-  
 Christ speaks. τασα τὰς χεῖράς μου ἐπὶ λαὸν ἀπειξοῦντα καὶ  
 ἀντιλέγοντα, ἐπὶ τοὺς πορευομένους ἐν ὁδῷ οὐ καλῇ. Καὶ  
 5 πάλιν· Τὸν νῶτόν μου τέξαικα εἰς μάστιγας καὶ τὰς σια-

γύνας μου εἰς ραπίσματα, τὸ δὲ πρόσωπόν μου οὐκ ἀπέστρεψα ἀπὸ αἰσχύνης ἱμπτυσμάτων. Καὶ ὁ κύριος βοηθός μου ἐγένετο· διὰ τοῦτο οὐκ ἐνετράπην, ἀλλ' ἔζηκα τὸ πρόσωπόν μου ὡς στερεὰν πέτραν, καὶ ἔγνων ὅτι οὐ μὴ αἰσχυνῶ, ὅτι ἐγγίζει ὁ δικαιώσας με. Καὶ πάλιν ὅταν λέγῃ· Αὐτοὶ ἔβαλον κλῆρον ἐπὶ τὸν ἱματισμὸν μου, καὶ ὠρυξάν μου πύδας καὶ χεῖρας. Ἐγὼ δὲ ἐκοιμήσην καὶ ὑπνώσα, καὶ ἀνέστην, ὅτι κύριος ἀντελάβετό μου. Καὶ πάλιν ὅταν λέγῃ· Ἐλάλησαν ἐν χεῖλεσιν, ἐκίνησαν κεφαλὴν λέγοντες· Ῥυσάσθω ἑαυτόν. Ἄτινα πάντα γέγονεν ὑπὸ τῶν Ἰουδαίων τῷ Χριστῷ ὡς μαθεῖν δύνασθε. Σταυρωθέντος γὰρ αὐτοῦ ἐξέστρεφον τὰ χεῖλη καὶ ἐκίνουν τὰς κεφαλὰς λέγοντες· Ὁ νεκροὺς ἀνεγείρας Ῥυσάσθω ἑαυτόν.

39. Ὅταν δὲ ὡς προφητεῦον τὰ μέλλοντα γίνεσθαι λαλῇ

The Spirit  
itself speaks.

τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα, οὕτως λέγει· Ἐκ γὰρ Σιών ἐξελεύσεται νόμος καὶ λόγος κυρίου ἐξ Ἱερουσαλήμ, καὶ κρινεῖ ἀνὰ μέσον ἔθνων καὶ ἐλέγξει λαὸν πολύν· καὶ συγκόψουσι τὰς μαχαίρας αὐτῶν εἰς ἀροτρα καὶ τὰς ζιβύνας αὐτῶν εἰς δρέπανα, καὶ οὐ μὴ λήφονται ἔθνος ἐπὶ ἔθνος μάχαιραν καὶ οὐ μὴ μάθωσιν ἔτι πολεμεῖν. Καὶ ὅτι οὕτως γέγονε, πεισθῆναι δύνασθε. Ἀπὸ γὰρ Ἱερουσαλήμ ἄνδρες δεκαδύο τὸν ἀριζμὸν ἐξῆλθον εἰς τὸν κόσμον, καὶ οὗτοι ἰδιῶται, λαλεῖν μὴ δυνάμενοι, διὰ δὲ τοῦ θεοῦ δυνάμειος ἐμήνυσαν παντὶ γένει ἀνθρώπων ὡς ἀπεστάλησαν ὑπὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδάξαι πάντας τὸν τοῦ θεοῦ λόγον· καὶ οἱ πάλοι ἀλληλοφόνονται οὐ μόνον οὐ πολεμοῦμεν τοὺς ἐχθρούς, ἀλλ' ὑπὲρ τοῦ μηδὲ ψεύδεσθαι μηδ' ἐξαπατῆσαι τοὺς ἐξετάζοντας ἰδέως ὁμολογοῦντες τὸν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἀποκνήσκομεν. Δυνατὸν γὰρ ἦν τὸ λεγόμενον·

Ἡ γλῶσσ' ὁμώμοκεν, ἡ δὲ φρὴν ἀνώμοτος, ποιεῖν ἡμᾶς εἰς τοῦτο. Γελοῖον ἦν δὴ πρᾶγμα, ὑμῖν μὲν τοὺς συντιθεμένους καὶ καταλεγομένους στρατιώτας καὶ πρὸ τῆς ἑαυτῶν ζωῆς καὶ γονέων καὶ πατρίδος καὶ πάντων τῶν οἰκείων τὴν ὑμετέραν ἀσπάζεσθαι ὁμολογίαν, μηδὲν ἄφθαρτον δυναμένων ὑμῶν αὐτοῖς παρασχεῖν, ἡμᾶς δέ, ἀφθαρσίας ἐρῶντας, μὴ πάνθ' ὑπομείναι ὑπὲρ τοῦ τὰ πο-  
 20 θούμενα παρὰ τοῦ δυναμένου δοῦναι λαβεῖν.

40. Ἀκούσατε δὲ πῶς καὶ περὶ τῶν κηρυξάντων τὴν δι-  
 25 <sup>Advent of Christ foretold.</sup> δαχὴν αὐτοῦ καὶ μηνυσάντων τὴν ἐπιφάνειαν προερέξῃ, τοῦ προειρημένου προφήτου καὶ βασιλέως οὕτως εἰπόντος διὰ τοῦ προφητικοῦ πνεύματος·  
 30 Ἡμέρα τῇ ἡμέρᾳ ἐρεύγεται ῥῆμα, καὶ νύξ τῇ νυκτὶ ἀναγ-  
 γέλλει γνῶσιν. Οὐκ εἰσὶ λαλῖαι οὐδὲ λόγοι, ὧν οὐχὶ ἀκούονται αἱ φωναὶ αὐτῶν. Εἰς πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν ἐξῆλθεν ὁ φθόγγος αὐτῶν καὶ εἰς τὰ πέρατα τῆς οἰκουμένης τὰ  
 35 ῥήματα αὐτῶν. Ἐν τῇ ἡλίῳ ἔξετο τὸ σκῆνωμα αὐτοῦ, καὶ  
 40 αὐτὸς ὡς νυμφίος ἐκπορευόμενος ἐκ παστοῦ αὐτοῦ ἀγαλλι-  
 ἀσεται ὡς γίγας δραμεῖν ὁδόν. Πρὸς τούτοις δὲ καὶ λό-  
 γων ἐτέρων τῶν προφητευθέντων δι' αὐτοῦ τοῦ Δαυὶδ κα-  
 λῶς ἔχον καὶ οἰκείως ἐπιμνησθῆναι λελογίσμεθα, ἐξ ὧν  
 45 μαθεῖν ὑμῖν πάρεστι πῶς προτρέπεται ζῆν τοὺς ἀνθρώπους  
 50 τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα καὶ πῶς μηνύει τὴν γεγεννημένην  
 Ἡρώδου τοῦ βασιλέως Ἰουδαίων καὶ αὐτῶν Ἰουδαίων  
 καὶ Πιλάτου τοῦ ὑμετέρου παρ' αὐτοῖς γενομένου ἐπιτρό-  
 που σὺν τοῖς αὐτοῦ στρατιώταις κατὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ συνέ-  
 λουσιν, καὶ ὅτι πιστεύεσθαι ἔμελλεν ὑπὸ τῶν ἐκ παντὸς  
 55 γένους ἀνθρώπων, καὶ ὅτι αὐτὸν υἱὸν καλεῖ ὁ Θεὸς καὶ  
 ὑποτάσσειν αὐτῷ πάντας ἐχθροὺς ἐπὶ γῆ, καὶ πῶς οἱ

δαίμονες, ὅσον ἐπ' αὐτοῖς, τὴν τε τοῦ πατρὸς πάντων καὶ  
 δεσπότου Θεοῦ καὶ τὴν αὐτοῦ τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐξουσίαν φυγεῖν  
 πειρῶνται, καὶ ὡς εἰς μετάνοιαν καλεῖ πάντας ὁ Θεὸς πρὶν  
 ἔλθειν τὴν ἡμέραν τῆς κρίσεως. Εἰρηνται δὲ οὕτως· Μα-  
 κάριος ἀνὴρ ὃς οὐκ ἐπηρεύθη ἐν βουλῇ ἀσεβῶν καὶ ἐν ὁδῷ  
 ἀμαρτωλῶν οὐκ ἔστη καὶ ἐπὶ καθεῖδραν λοιμῶν οὐκ ἐκάξι-  
 σεν, ἀλλ' ἢ ἐν τῇ νόμῳ κυρίου τὸ ζήτημα αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐν τῇ  
 νόμῳ αὐτοῦ μελετήσκει ἡμέρας καὶ νυκτός. Καὶ ἔσται ὡς  
 τὸ ξύλον τὸ πεφυτευμένον παρὰ τὰς διεξόδους τῶν ὑδάτων, καὶ  
 ὃ τὸν καρπὸν αὐτοῦ δώσει ἐν καιρῷ αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὸ φύλλον  
 αὐτοῦ οὐκ ἀπορρυήσεται, καὶ πάντα ὅσα αὐτῷ ποιῇ κατενοῶ-  
 ζήσεται. Οὐχ οὕτως οἱ ἀσεβεῖς, οὐχ οὕτως, ἀλλ' ἢ ὥσει  
 χνοῦς, ὃν ἐκρίπτει ὁ ἄνεμος ἀπὸ προσώπου τῆς γῆς· διὰ  
 τοῦτο οὐκ ἀναστήσονται ἀσεβεῖς ἐν κρίσει, οὐδὲ ἀμαρτωλοὶ  
 ἐν βουλῇ δικαίων, ὅτι γινώσκει κύριος ὅδῃ δικαίων, καὶ  
 ὅδῃ ἀσεβῶν ἀπολείται. ἵνα τί ἐφρυσαν ἔθνη, καὶ λαοὶ  
 ἐμελέτησαν καινά; Παρέστησαν οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς, καὶ  
 οἱ ἄρχοντες συνήχθησαν ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ κατὰ τοῦ κυρίου καὶ  
 κατὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ αὐτοῦ λέγοντες· Διαρρήξωμεν τοὺς  
 δεσμοὺς αὐτῶν καὶ ἀπορρίψωμεν ὑφ' ἡμῶν τὸν ζυγὸν αὐ-  
 τῶν. Ὁ κατοικῶν ἐν οὐρανοῖς ἐκγελάσεται αὐτούς, καὶ ὁ  
 κύριος ἐκμυκτηριεῖ αὐτούς· τότε λαλήσει πρὸς αὐτοὺς ἐν  
 ὀργῇ αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐν τῇ θυμῷ αὐτοῦ ταράξει αὐτούς. Ἐγὼ  
 δὲ κατεστάθην βασιλεὺς ὑπ' αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ Σιών ὕψος τὸ ἅγιον  
 αὐτοῦ, διαγγέλλων τὸ πρόσταγμα κυρίου. Κύριος εἶπε  
 πρὸς με· Υἱός μου εἶ σύ, ἐγὼ σήμερον γεγέννηκά σε.  
 Αἴτησαι παρ' ἐμοῦ, καὶ δώσω σοι ἔθνη τὴν κληρονομίαν  
 σου, καὶ τὴν κατάσχεσίν σου τὰ πέρατα τῆς γῆς· ποιμανεῖς  
 αὐτοὺς ἐν ῥάβδῳ σιδηρᾷ, ὡς σκεῦη κεραμῆως συντρίψεις

αὐτούς. Καὶ νῦν, βασιλεῖς, σύνετε, παιδεύθητε, πάντες οἱ κρίνοντες τὴν γῆν. Δουλεύσατε τῷ κυρίῳ ἐν φόβῳ καὶ ἀγαλλιᾶσθε αὐτῷ ἐν τρόμῳ. Δράξασθε παιδείας, μὴ ποτε ὀργισθῇ κύριος, καὶ ἀπολεῖσθε ἐξ ὁδοῦ δικαίας, ὅταν ἐκ-  
 20 καυθῇ ἐν τάχει ὁ θυμὸς αὐτοῦ. Μακάριοι πάντες οἱ πι-  
 ποιζότες ἐπ' αὐτόν.

41. Καὶ πάλιν δι' ἄλλης προφητείας μηνῦον τὸ προφη-  
 Christ's king. τικὸν πνεῦμα δι' αὐτοῦ τοῦ Δαυὶδ, ὅτι μετὰ τὸ  
 dom foretold. σταυρωθῆναι βασιλεύσει ὁ Χριστός, οὕτως εἶπεν·  
 "Αἰσατε τῷ κυρίῳ, πᾶσα ἡ γῆ, καὶ ἀναγγεῖλατε ἡμέραν ἐξ  
 5 ἡμέρας τὸ σωτήριον αὐτοῦ· ὅτι μέγας κύριος καὶ αἰνετὸς  
 σφύδρα, φοβερὸς ὑπὲρ πάντας τοὺς θεούς· ὅτι πάντες οἱ  
θεοὶ τῶν ἔθνων εἰδῶλα δαιμονίων εἰσίν, ὃ δὲ θεὸς τοὺς  
οὐρανοὺς ἐποίησε. Δόξα καὶ αἶνος κατὰ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ,  
 καὶ ἰσχύς καὶ καύχημα ἐν τύπῳ ἀγιάσματος αὐτοῦ. Δότε  
 10 τῷ κυρίῳ τῷ πατρὶ τῶν αἰώνων δόξαν. Λάβετε χάριν καὶ  
 εἰσελθετε κατὰ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ καὶ προσκυνήσατε ἐν αὐ-  
 λαῖς ἀγίαις αὐτοῦ. Φοβηθήτω ἀπὸ προσώπου αὐτοῦ  
 πᾶσα ἡ γῆ καὶ κατορθωθήτω καὶ μὴ σαλευθήτω. Εὐφραν-  
 θήτωσαν ἐν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν· ὁ κύριος ἐβασίλευσεν ἀπὸ τοῦ  
 15 ξύλου.

42. "Όταν δὲ τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα τὰ μέλλοντα γίνε-  
 Past tense for σθαι ὡς ἤδη γενόμενα λέγῃ, ὡς καὶ ἐν τοῖς προ-  
 future. εἰρημένοις δοξάσαι ἐστίν, ὅπως ἀπολογίαν μὴ  
 παράσχῃ τοῖς ἐντυγχάνουσιν, καὶ τοῦτο διασαφίσωμεν.  
 5 Τὰ πάντως ἐγνωσμένα γενησόμενα προλέγει, ὡς ἤδη γενό-  
 μενα. "Ότι δὲ οὕτως δεῖ ἐκδέχασθαι, ἐνατενίσσατε τῷ νοῖ  
 τοῖς λεγομένοις. Δαυὶδ ἔτεσι χιλίοις καὶ πεντακοσίοις  
 πρὶν ἢ Χριστὸν ἄνθρωπον γενόμενον σταυρωθῆναι τὰ

προειρημένα ἔφη, καὶ οὐδεὶς τῶν πρὸ ἐκείνου γενομένων σταυρωθεὶς εὐφροσύνην παρέσχε τοῖς ἔξνεσιν, ἀλλ' οὐδὲ τῶν μετ' ἐκείνον. Ὁ καὶ ἡμᾶς δι' Ἰησοῦς Χριστός, σταυρωθεὶς καὶ ἀποθανὼν ἀνέστη καὶ ἐβασίλευσεν ἀνελθὼν εἰς οὐρανόν, καὶ ἐπὶ τοῖς παρ' αὐτοῦ διὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐν τοῖς πᾶσιν ἔξνεσι κηρυχθεῖσιν εὐφροσύνη ἐστὶ προσδοκῶντων τὴν κατηγγελεμένην ὑπ' αὐτοῦ ἀφ' ἁρσάν. 15

43. Ὅπως δὲ μή τινες ἐκ τῶν προλελεγμένων ὑφ' ἡμῶν  
 Doctrine of εὐξάσωσι καὶ εἰμαρμένης ἀνάγκην φάσκειν  
 human responsibility. ἡμᾶς τὰ γινόμενα γίνεσθαι ἐκ τοῦ προειπεῖν  
 προεγνωσμένα, καὶ τοῦτο διαλύομεν. Τὰς τιμωρίας καὶ τὰς  
 5 κολάσεις καὶ τὰς ἀγαθὰς ἀμοιβὰς κατ' ἄξίαν τῶν πράξεων  
 ἐκάστου ἀποδίδοσθαι διὰ τῶν προφητῶν μαρτυροῦντες  
 καὶ ἀληθεῖς ἀποφαινόμεθα. Ἐπεὶ εἰ μὴ τοῦτό ἐστιν, ἀλλὰ  
 καὶ εἰμαρμένην πάντα γίνεται, οὐδὲ τὸ ἐφ' ἡμῖν ἐστὶν  
 ὅλως. Εἰ γὰρ εἴμαρται τόνδε τινὰ ἀγαθὸν εἶναι καὶ τόνδε  
 φαῦλον, οὐδ' οὗτος ἀποδεκτὸς οὐτ' ἐκείνος μεμπτός. Καὶ  
 10 αὖ εἰ μὴ προαιρέσει ἐλευθέρᾳ πρὸς τὸ φεύγειν τὰ αἰσχροῦ  
 καὶ αἰρεῖσθαι τὰ καλὰ δύναμιν ἔχει τὸ ἀνθρώπιον γένος,  
 ἀναίτιόν ἐστι τῶν ὑπωσδήποτε πραττομένων. Ἀλλ' ὅτι  
 ἐλευθέρᾳ προαιρέσει καὶ κατορθεὶς καὶ σφάλλεται, οὕτως  
 15 ἀποδείκνυμεν. Τὸν αὐτὸν ἄνθρωπον τῶν ἐναντίων τὴν μετέλευσιν  
 ποιούμενον ὁρῶμεν. Εἰ δὲ εἴμαρτο ἢ φαῦλον ἢ σπουδαῖον  
 εἶναι, οὐκ ἂν ποτε τῶν ἐναντίων δεκτικὸς ἦν καὶ πλειστάκις  
 μετετίθετο· ἀλλ' οὐδ' οἱ μὲν ἦσαν σπουδαῖοι, οἱ δὲ φαῦλοι,  
 20 ἐπεὶ τὴν εἰμαρμένην αἰτίαν φαύλων καὶ ἐναντία  
 ἐαυτῇ πράττουσαν ἂν ἀποφαινοίμεθα, ἢ ἐκείνο τὸ προειρη-  
 μένον δοῦναι ἀληθεῖς εἶναι, ὅτι οὐδὲν ἐστὶν ἀρετὴ  
 οὐδὲ κακία, ἀλλὰ δοῦναι μόνον ἢ ἀγαθὰ ἢ κακὰ νομίζεται.



ἥπερ, ὡς δείκνυσιν ὁ ἀληθὴς λόγος, μεγίστη ἀσέβεια καὶ ἀδικία ἐστίν. Ἄλλ' εἰμαρμένην φαμέν ἀπαράβατον ταύτην εἶναι, τοῖς τὰ καλὰ ἐκλεγμένοις τὰ ἄξια ἐπιτίμια, καὶ τοῖς ὁμοίως τὰ ἐναντία τὰ ἄξια ἐπίχειρα. Οὐ γὰρ ὥσπερ τὰ ἄλλα, οἷον δένδρα καὶ τετράποδα, μηδὲν δυνάμενα προαιρέσει πράττειν, ἐποίησεν ὁ Θεὸς τὸν ἄνθρωπον· οὐδὲ γὰρ ἦν ἄξιος ἀμοιβῆς ἢ ἐπαίνου, οὐκ ἀφ' ἑαυτοῦ ἐλόμενος τὸ πᾶσι ἀγαθόν, ἀλλὰ τοῦτο γενόμενος, οὐδ' εἰ κακὸς ὑπῆρχε, δικαίως κολάσεως ἐτύγχανεν, οὐκ ἀφ' ἑαυτοῦ τοιοῦτος ὢν, ἀλλ' οὐδὲν δυνάμενος εἶναι ἕτερον παρ' ὃ ἐγεγύνη.

44. Ἐδίδαξε δὲ ἡμᾶς ταῦτα τὸ ἅγιον προφητικὸν πνεῦμα, διὰ Μωϋσέως φῆσαν τῷ πρώτῳ πλασθέντι ἄνθρωπῳ εἰρησθαι ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ οὕτως· Ἴδου πρὸ προσώπου σου τὸ ἀγαθὸν καὶ τὸ κακόν, ἐκλεξαι τὸ ἀγαθόν. Καὶ πάλιν διὰ Ἡσαΐου, τοῦ ἑτέρου προφήτου, ὡς ἀπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς τῶν ὅλων καὶ δεσπότης Θεοῦ εἰς τοῦτο λεχθῆναι οὕτως· Λούσασθε, καθαρὸι γένεσθε, ἀφέλιτε τὰς πονηρίας ἀπὸ τῶν ψυχῶν ὑμῶν, μάθετε καλὸν ποιεῖν, κρίνατε ὀρφανῶ καὶ δικαιώσατε χήραν, καὶ δεῦτε καὶ δια-  
 10 λεχθῶμεν, λέγει κύριος. Καὶ ἐὰν ὦσιν αἱ ἁμαρτίαι ὑμῶν ὡς φοινικὸν, ὥσπερ ἔριον λευκανῶ, καὶ ἐὰν ὦσιν ὡς κόκκινον, ὡς χιῶνα λευκανῶ. Καὶ ἐὰν θέλητε καὶ εἰσακούσθητέ μου, τὰ ἀγαθὰ τῆς γῆς φάγεσθε, ἐὰν δὲ μὴ εἰσακούσθητέ μου, μάχαιρα ὑμᾶς κατέδεται· τὸ γὰρ στόμα κυρίου ἐλά-  
 15 λησε ταῦτα. Τὸ δὲ προειρημένον Μάχαιρα ὑμᾶς κατέδεται, οὐ λέγει διὰ μαχαιρῶν φονευθήσεσθαι τοὺς παρακούσαντας, ἀλλ' ἡ μάχαιρα τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐστὶ τὸ πῦρ, οὗ βορὰ γίνονται οἱ τὰ φαῦλα πράττειν αἰρούμενοι. Διὰ τοῦτο λέγει· Μάχαιρα ὑμᾶς κατέδεται· τὸ γὰρ στόμα κυρίου ἐλάλησεν.

Εἰ δὲ καὶ περὶ τεμνούσης καὶ αὐτίκα ἀπαλλασσοῦσης μα-  
χαίρας ἔλεγεν, οὐκ ἂν εἶπε Κατέδεταί. Ὡστε καὶ Πλάτων  
εἰπὼν· Αἰτία ἐλομένου, θεὸς δ' ἀνάτιος, παρὰ Μωϋσέως  
τοῦ προφήτου λαβὼν εἶπε. Πρεσβύτερος γὰρ Μωϋσῆς  
καὶ πάντων τῶν ἐν Ἑλλήσει συγγραφέων. Καὶ πάντα, ὅσα  
περὶ ἀθανασίας ψυχῆς ἢ τιμωριῶν τῶν μετὰ θάνατον ἢ πε-  
θεωρίας οὐρανίων ἢ τῶν ὁμοίων θυγμάτων καὶ φιλόσοφοι  
καὶ ποιηταὶ ἔφασαν, παρὰ τῶν προφητῶν τὰς ἀφορμὰς  
λαβόντες καὶ νοῆσαι δεδύνηται καὶ ἐξηγήσαντο. Ὅθεν  
παρὰ πᾶσι σπέρματα ἀληθείας δοκεῖ εἶναι· ἐλέγχονται δὲ  
μὴ ἀκριβῶς νοήσαντες, ὅταν ἐναντία αὐτοῖς ἑαυτοῖς λέγω-  
σιν. Ὡστε ὃ φάμεν, πεπροφητεῦσθαι τὰ μέλλοντα γίνε-  
σθαι, οὐ διὰ τὸ εἰμαρμένης ἀνάγκη πράττεσθαι λέγομεν,  
ἀλλὰ προγνώστου τοῦ θεοῦ ὄντος τῶν μελλόντων ὑπὸ  
πάντων ἀνθρώπων πραχθήσεσθαι, καὶ δύγατος ὄντος  
παρ' αὐτῶν κατ' ἀξίαν τῶν πράξεων ἕκαστον ἀμείψεσθαι  
τὰ μέλλοντα τῶν ἀνθρώπων, καὶ τὰ παρ' αὐτοῦ κατ' ἀξίαν  
τῶν πραττομένων ἀπαντήσεσθαι διὰ τοῦ προφητικοῦ πνεύ-  
ματος προλέγει, εἰς ἐπίστασιν καὶ ἀνάμνησιν αἰὲ ἄγων τὸ  
τῶν ἀνθρώπων γένος, δεικνὺς ὅτι καὶ μέλον ἐστὶν αὐτῷ  
καὶ προνοεῖται αὐτῶν. Κατ' ἐνέργειαν δὲ τῶν φαύλων  
δαιμόνων θάνατος ὠρίσθη κατὰ τῶν τὰς Ὑστάτου ἢ  
Σιβύλλης ἢ τῶν προφητῶν βίβλους ἀναγινωσκόντων,  
ὅπως διὰ τοῦ φόβου ἀποστρέψωσιν ἐντυγχάνοντας τοὺς  
ἀνθρώπους τῶν καλῶν γινῶσιν λαβεῖν, αὐτοῖς δὲ δουλεύ-  
οντας κατέχωσιν· ὅπερ εἰς τέλος οὐκ ἴσχυσαν πράξαι. Ὡς  
Ἀφόβως μὲν γὰρ οὐ μόνον ἐντυγχάνομεν αὐταῖς, ἀλλὰ  
καὶ ὑμῖν, ὡς ὁρᾶτε, εἰς ἐπίσκεψιν φέρομεν, ἐπιστάμενοι  
πᾶσιν εὐάρεστα φανήσεσθαι. Κἂν ὀλίγους δὲ πείσωμεν,

τὰ μέγιστα κερδήσαντες ἐσύμεθα . ὡς γεωργοὶ γὰρ ἀγαθοὶ  
 60 παρὰ τοῦ δεσπύζοντος τὴν ἀμοιβὴν ἔχομεν.

45. "Ὅτι δὲ ἂν ἀγειν τὸν Χριστὸν εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν ὁ πα-  
 Christ's thron- τῆρ τῶν πάντων Θεὸς μετὰ τὸ ἀναστῆσαι ἐκ  
 ing in Heaven  
 foretold. νεκρῶν αὐτὸν ἔμελλε, καὶ κατέχειν ἕως ἂν πα-  
 τάξῃ τοὺς ἐχθραίνοντας αὐτῷ δαίμονας, καὶ συντελεσθῇ ὁ  
 65 ἀρισμὸς τῶν προεγνωσμένων αὐτῷ ἀγαθῶν γινομένων καὶ  
 ἐναρέτων, δι' οὓς καὶ μηδέπω τὴν ἐκπύρωσιν πεποιήται,  
 ἐπακούσατε τῶν εἰρημένων διὰ Δαβὶδ τοῦ προφήτου. Ἔστι  
 δὲ ταῦτα· Εἶπεν ὁ κύριος τῷ κυρίῳ μου· Κάθου ἐκ δεξιῶν  
 μου, ἕως ἂν θῶ τοὺς ἐχθρούς σου ὑποπόδιον τῶν ποδῶν  
 10 σου. Ῥάβδον δυνάμεως ἐξαποστελεῖ σοι κύριος ἐξ Ἱερου-  
 σαλήμ· καὶ κατακυρίευσεν ἐν μέσῳ τῶν ἐχθρῶν σου. Μετὰ  
 σοῦ ἡ ἀρχὴ ἐν ἡμέρᾳ τῆς δυνάμεώς σου ἐν ταῖς λαμπρότησι  
 τῶν ἁγίων σου· ἐκ γαστρὸς πρὸ ἑωσφόρου ἐγέννησά σε.  
 Τὸ οὖν εἰρημένον Ῥάβδον δυνάμεως ἐξαποστελεῖ σοι ἐξ  
 15 Ἱερουσαλήμ, προαγγελτικὸν τοῦ λόγου τοῦ ἰσχυροῦ, δυνά-  
 μιν ἀπὸ Ἱερουσαλήμ οἱ ἀπόστολοι αὐτοῦ ἐξελεῖς ὡς πανταχοῦ  
 ἐκήρυξαν, καὶ, καίπερ θανάτου ὀρισθέντος κατὰ τῶν διδα-  
 σκόντων ἢ ὕλως ὑμολογούντων τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Χριστοῦ,  
 ἡμεῖς πανταχοῦ καὶ ἀσπαζόμεθα καὶ διδάσκομεν. Εἰ δὲ  
 20 καὶ ὑμεῖς ὡς ἐχθροὶ ἐντεύξεσθε τοῖσδε τοῖς λόγοις, οὐ  
 πλέον τι δύνασθε, ὡς προέφημεν, τοῦ φονεύειν· ὕπερ ἡμῖν  
 μὲν οὐδεμίαν βλάβην φέρει, ὑμῖν δὲ καὶ πᾶσι τοῖς ἀδίκως  
 ἐχθραίνουσιν καὶ μὴ μετατιθεμένοις κύλασιν διὰ πυρὸς αἰω-  
 νίαν ἐργάζεται.

46. Ἵνα δὲ μή τινες ἀλογισταίνοντες, εἰς ἀποτροπὴν τῶν  
 δεδιδαγμένων ὑφ' ἡμῶν, εἰπωσι πρὸ ἐτῶν ἑκατὸν πεντήκον-  
 τα γεγενῆσθαι τὸν Χριστὸν λέγειν ἡμᾶς ἐπὶ Κυρηναίου,

The Word in  
the world be-  
fore Christ is  
Christ.

δεδιδαχέναι δὲ ἃ φάμεν διδάξαι αὐτὸν ὕστερον  
 χρόνοις ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου, καὶ ἐπικαλῶσιν, ὡς  
 ἀνευζύνων ὕντων τῶν προγεγεννημένων πάν-  
 των ἀνθρώπων, φθάσαντες τὴν ἀπορίαν λυσόμεθα. Τὸν  
 Χριστὸν πρωτότοκον τοῦ Θεοῦ εἶναι ἐδιδάχθημεν καὶ προε-  
 μηνύσαμεν λόγον ὄντα, οὗ πᾶν γένος ἀνθρώπων μετέσχε.  
 Καὶ οἱ μετὰ λόγου βιώσαντες Χριστιανοὶ εἰσι, κἂν ἄξειν 13  
 ἐνομίσθησαν, οἷον ἐν Ἑλλήσι μὲν Σωκράτης καὶ Ἡράκλει-  
 τος καὶ οἱ ὅμοιοι αὐτοῖς, ἐν βαρβάροις δὲ Ἀβραὰμ καὶ  
 Ἀνανίας καὶ Ἀζαρίας καὶ Μισαήλ καὶ Ἡλίας καὶ ἄλλοι  
 πολλοί, ὧν τὰς πράξεις ἢ τὰ ὀνόματα καταλέγειν μακρὸν  
 εἶναι ἐπιστάμενοι τανῦν παραιτούμεθα. Ὡστε καὶ οἱ προ- 15  
 γενόμενοι ἄνευ λόγου βιώσαντες ἄχρηστοι καὶ ἐχθροὶ τῷ  
 Χριστῷ ἦσαν καὶ φονεῖς τῶν μετὰ λόγου βιούντων· οἱ δὲ  
 μετὰ λόγου βιώσαντες καὶ βιούντες Χριστιανοὶ καὶ ἀφοβοὶ  
 καὶ ἀτάραχοι ὑπάρχουσι. Δι' ἣν δ' αἰτίαν διὰ δυνάμεως  
 τοῦ λόγου κατὰ τὴν τοῦ πατρὸς πάντων καὶ δεσπότου Θεοῦ 20  
 βουλήν διὰ παρθένου ἄνθρωπος ἀπεκυήθη καὶ Ἰησοῦς  
 ἐπώνομασθη, καὶ σταυρωθεὶς ἀποθανὼν ἀνέστη καὶ ἀνελή-  
 λυθεν εἰς οὐρανόν, ἐκ τῶν διὰ τοσούτων εἰρημένων ὁ νουν-  
 εχὴς καταλαβεῖν δυνήσεται. Ἡμεῖς δέ, οὐκ ἀναγκαίου  
 ὕντος τανῦν τοῦ περὶ τῆς ἀποδείξεως τούτου λόγου, ἐπὶ 25  
 τὰς ἐπειγούσας ἀποδείξεις πρὸς τὸ παρὸν χωρήσομεν.

47. Ὅτι οὖν καὶ ἐκπορῆθήσεσθαι ἢ γῇ Ἰουδαίων ἐμελ-  
 λεν, ἀκούσατε τῶν εἰρημένων ὑπὸ τοῦ προφητι-  
 κοῦ πνεύματος. Εἴρηνται δὲ οἱ λόγοι ὡς ἀπὸ  
 προσώπου λαῶν θαυμαζόντων τὰ γεγεννημένα. Εἰσὶ δὲ  
 οἵδε· Ἐγενήθη ἔρημος Σιών, ὡς ἔρημος ἐγενήθη Ἱερουσα- 5  
 λὴμ, εἰς κατάραν ὁ οἶκος, τὸ ἅγιον ἡμῶν, καὶ ἡ δόξα ἦν

Desolation of  
Judea pre-  
dicted.

εὐλόγησαν οἱ πατέρες ἡμῶν ἐγενήθη πυρίκαυστος, καὶ πάντα τὰ ἔνδοξα αὐτῆς συνέπεσε. Καὶ ἐπὶ τούτοις ἀνέσχου καὶ ἐσιώπησας καὶ ἐταπείνωσας ἡμᾶς σφόδρα. Καὶ ὅτι 10 ἡρήμωτο Ἱερουσαλήμ, ὡς προείρητο γενήσεσθαι, πεπεισμένοι ἐστέ. Εἴρηται δὲ καὶ περὶ τῆς ἐρημώσεως αὐτῆς, καὶ περὶ τοῦ μὴ ἐπιτραπήσεσθαι μηδένα αὐτῶν οἰκεῖν, διὰ Ἡσαίου τοῦ προφήτου οὕτως· Ἡ γῆ αὐτῶν ἐρημός, ἐμ- προσθεν αὐτῶν οἱ ἐχθροὶ αὐτῶν αὐτὴν φάγονται, καὶ οὐκ 15 ἔσται ἐξ αὐτῶν ὁ κατοικῶν ἐν αὐτῇ. Ὅτι δὲ φυλάσσεται ὑφ' ὑμῶν, ὅπως μηδεὶς ἐν αὐτῇ γένηται, καὶ θάνατος κατὰ τοῦ καταλαμβανομένου Ἰουδαίου εἰσιόντος ὤρισταί, ἀκριβῶς ἐπίστασθε.

48. Ὅτι δὲ καὶ θεραπεύειν πάσας νόσους καὶ νεκροὺς  
Predictions of  
 Christ's work  
 and death. ἀνεγερεῖν ὁ ἡμέτερος Χριστὺς προεφητεύθη, ἀκούσατε τῶν λελεγμένων. Ἔστι δὲ ταῦτα· Τῇ παρουσίᾳ αὐτοῦ ἀλείται χωλὸς ὡς ἔλαφος, καὶ τρανὴ 5 ἔσται γλῶσσα μογιλάλων· τυφλοὶ ἀναβλέψουσι καὶ λεπροὶ καθαρισθήσονται καὶ νεκροὶ ἀναστήσονται καὶ περιπατήσουσιν. Ὅτι τε ταῦτα ἐποίησεν, ἐκ τῶν ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου γενομένων ἄκτων μαθεῖν δύνασθε. Πῶς τε προμε- μνήνται ὑπὸ τοῦ προφητικοῦ πνεύματος ἀναιρεθησόμενος 10 ἅμα τοῖς ἐπ' αὐτὸν ἐλπίζουσιν ἀνθρώποις, ἀκούσατε τῶν λεχθέντων διὰ Ἡσαίου. Ἔστι δὲ ταῦτα· Ἰδε ὡς ὁ δίκαιος ἀπώλετο, καὶ οὐδεὶς ἐκδέχεται τῇ καρδίᾳ, καὶ ἄνδρες δίκαιοι αἰρονται, καὶ οὐδεὶς κατανοεῖ. Ἀπὸ προσώπου ἀδικίας ἦρται ὁ δίκαιος, καὶ ἔσται ἐν εἰρήνῃ ἢ ταφῇ αὐτοῦ, ἦρται 15 ἐκ τοῦ μέσου.

49. Καὶ πάλιν πῶς δι' αὐτοῦ Ἡσαίου λέλεκται, ὅτι οἱ οὐ προσδοκήσαντες αὐτὸν λαοὶ τῶν ἐθνῶν προσκυνήσουσιν

His rejection <sup>by the Jews</sup> <sup>foretold.</sup> αὐτόν, οἱ δὲ αἰὲν προσδοκῶντες Ἰουδαῖοι ἀγνοή-  
σουσι παραγενόμενον αὐτόν. Ἐλέχθησαν δὲ  
οἱ λόγοι ὡς ἀπὸ προσώπου αὐτοῦ τοῦ Χριστοῦ. Εἰσὶ δὲ 5  
οὔτοι· Ἐμφανὴς ἐγενήθη τοῖς ἐμὲ μὴ ἐπερωτῶσιν, εὐρέ-  
στην τοῖς ἐμὲ μὴ ζητοῦσιν. Εἶπον· Ἰδοὺ ἐγμι, ἔξνει, οἱ  
οὐκ ἐκάλεσαν τὸ ὄνομά μου. Ἐξεπέτασα τὰς χεῖράς μου  
ἐπὶ λαὸν ἀπειθοῦντα καὶ ἀντιλέγοντα, ἐπὶ τοὺς πορευομέ-  
νους ἐν ὁδῷ οὐ καλῇ, ἀλλ' ὀπίσω τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν αὐτῶν. 10  
Ὁ λαὸς ὁ παροξύνων ἐναντίον μου. Ἰουδαῖοι γὰρ ἔχον-  
τες τὰς προφητείας καὶ αἰὲν προσδοκῆσαντες τὸν Χριστόν,  
παραγενόμενον ἡγνύσαν, οὐ μόνον δέ, ἀλλὰ καὶ παρε-  
χρήσαντο· οἱ δὲ ἀπὸ τῶν ἔξνων μηδέποτε μηδὲν ἀκούσαν-  
τες περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ, μέχρις οὗ οἱ ἀπὸ Ἱερουσαλὴμ ἐξελ- 15  
θύντες ἀπόστολοι αὐτοῦ ἐμήνυσαν τὰ περὶ αὐτοῦ καὶ τὰς  
προφητείας παρέδωκαν, πληρωθέντες χαρᾶς καὶ πίστεως  
τοῖς εἰδώλοις ἀπειτάξαντο καὶ τῷ ἀγεννήτῳ θεῷ διὰ τοῦ  
Χριστοῦ ἑαυτοὺς ἀνέβηκαν. Ὅτι δὲ προεγινώσκετο τὰ δύσ-  
φημα ταῦτα λεχθησόμενα κατὰ τῶν τὸν Χριστόν ὁμολο- 20  
γούντων, καὶ ὡς εἶεν τάλανες οἱ δυσφημοῦντες αὐτόν καὶ  
τὰ παλαιὰ ἔξη καλὸν εἶναι τηρεῖν λέγοντες, ἀκούσατε τῶν  
βραχυεπῶς εἰρημένων διὰ Ἡσαίου. Ἔστι δὲ ταῦτα· Οὐαὶ  
τοῖς λέγουσι τὸ γλυκὺ πικρὸν καὶ τὸ πικρὸν γλυκύ.

50. Ὅτι δὲ καὶ ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν γενόμενος ἄνθρωπος παθεῖν  
καὶ ἀτιμασθῆναι ὑπέμεινε, καὶ πάλιν μετὰ δόξης  
Christ's <sup>humiliation</sup> <sup>foretold.</sup> παραγενήσεται, ἀκούσατε τῶν εἰρημένων εἰς τοῦ-  
το προφητειῶν. Ἔστι δὲ ταῦτα· Ἀνθ' ὧν παρέδωκαν εἰς  
θάνατον τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ καὶ μετὰ τῶν ἀνόμων ἐλογίσθη, 5  
αὐτὸς ἁμαρτίας πολλῶν εἴληφε καὶ τοῖς ἀνόμοις ἐξιλάσ-  
ται. Ἴδε γάρ, συνήσει ὁ παῖς μου καὶ ὑψωθήσεται καὶ

δοξασθήσεται σφόδρα. Ὁν τρόπον ἐκστήσονται πολλοὶ  
ἐπὶ σέ, οὕτως ἀδοξήσει ἀπὸ ἀνθρώπων τὸ εἶδός σου καὶ ἡ  
10 δόξα σου ἀπὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων, οὕτως θαυμάσονται ἔξῃ  
πολλά, καὶ συνέξουσιν βασιλεῖς τὸ στόμα αὐτῶν· ὅτι οἷς  
οὐκ ἀνηγγέλη περὶ αὐτοῦ ὕψονται, καὶ οἱ οὐκ ἀκηκόασι  
συνήσουσι. Κύριε, τίς ἐπίστευσε τῇ ἀκοῇ ἡμῶν, καὶ ὁ  
βραχίον κυρίου τίνι ἀπεκαλύφθη; Ἀνηγγείλαμεν ἐνώπιον  
15 αὐτοῦ ὡς παιδίον, ὡς ρίζα ἐν γῇ διεψώσῃ. Οὐκ ἔστιν  
εἶδος αὐτῷ οὐδὲ δόξα· καὶ εἶδομεν αὐτὸν καὶ οὐκ εἶχεν  
εἶδος οὐδὲ κάλλος, ἀλλὰ τὸ εἶδος αὐτοῦ ἄμιμον καὶ ἐκλεί-  
πον παρὰ τοὺς ἀνθρώπους. Ἀνθρώπος ἐν πληγῇ ὢν καὶ  
εἰδὼς φέρειν μαλακίαν, ὅτι ἀπέστραπται τὸ πρόσωπον αὐ-  
20 τοῦ, ἡτιμάσθη καὶ οὐκ ἐλογίσθη. Οὗτος τὰς ἁμαρτίας  
ἡμῶν φέρει καὶ περὶ ἡμῶν ὕδυνᾷται, καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐλογισάμεθα  
αὐτὸν εἶναι ἐν πόνῳ καὶ ἐν πληγῇ καὶ ἐν κακώσει. Αὐτὸς  
δὲ ἐτραυματίσθη διὰ τὰς ἀνομίας ἡμῶν καὶ μεμαλάκισται  
διὰ τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν· παιδεία εἰρήνης ἐπ' αὐτόν, τῷ  
25 μῶλωπι αὐτοῦ ἡμεῖς ἰάθημεν. Πάντες ὡς πρόβατα ἐπλανή-  
θημεν, ἄνθρωπος τῇ ὁδῷ αὐτοῦ ἐπλανήθη. Καὶ παρέ-  
δωκεν αὐτὸν ταῖς ἁμαρτίαις ἡμῶν, καὶ αὐτὸς διὰ τὸ κεκα-  
κῶσθαι οὐκ ἀνοίγει τὸ στόμα αὐτοῦ. Ὡς πρόβατον ἐπὶ  
σφαγὴν ἤχθη· καὶ ὡς ἄμνυς ἐναντίον τοῦ κείροντος αὐτόν  
30 ἄφωνος, οὕτως οὐκ ἀνοίγει τὸ στόμα αὐτοῦ. Ἐν τῇ τα-  
πεινώσει αὐτοῦ ἡ κρίσις αὐτοῦ ἤρθη. Μετὰ οὖν τὸ σταυ-  
ρωθῆναι αὐτόν καὶ οἱ γνώριμοι αὐτοῦ πάντες ἀπέστησαν,  
ἀρνησάμενοι αὐτόν· ὕστερον δέ, ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστάντος καὶ  
ὁφθέντος αὐτοῖς καὶ ταῖς προφητείαις ἐντυχεῖν, ἐν αἷς πάν-  
35 τα ταῦτα προεῖρητο γενησόμενα, διδάξαντος, καὶ εἰς οὐρα-  
νὸν ἀνερχόμενον ἰδύντες καὶ πιστεύσαντες καὶ δύναμιν

ἐκείθεν αὐτοῖς πεμφθεῖσαν παρ' αὐτοῦ λαβόντες καὶ εἰς πᾶν γένος ἀνθρώπων ἐλθόντες, ταῦτα ἐδίδαξαν καὶ ἀποστολοι προσηγορεύθησαν.

51. Ἵνα δὲ μηνύσῃ ἡμῖν τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα ὅτι ὁ  
The majesty of Christ. ταῦτα πάσχων ἀνεκδιήγητον ἔχει τὸ γένος καὶ  
 βασιλεύει τῶν ἐχθρῶν, ἔφη οὕτως· Τὴν γενεὰν  
 αὐτοῦ τίς διηγῆσεται; Ὅτι αἵρεται ἀπὸ τῆς γῆς ἡ ζωὴ αὐ-  
 τοῦ, ἀπὸ τῶν ἀνομιῶν αὐτῶν ἥκει εἰς θάνατον. Καὶ δώσω  
 τοὺς πονηροὺς ἀντὶ τῆς ταφῆς αὐτοῦ καὶ τοὺς πλουσίους  
 ἀντὶ τοῦ θανάτου αὐτοῦ, ὅτι ἀνομίαν οὐκ ἐποίησεν οὐδὲ  
 εὗρεθῇ δόλος ἐν τῇ στύματι αὐτοῦ. Καὶ κύριος βούλεται  
 καθαρίσαι αὐτὸν τῆς πληγῆς. Ἐὰν δώτε περὶ ἁμαρτίας,  
 ἡ ψυχὴ ὑμῶν ὑψεταὶ σπέρμα μακρόβιον. Καὶ βούλεται 10  
 κύριος ἀφελεῖν ἀπὸ πόνου τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ, δεῖξαι αὐτῇ  
 φῶς, καὶ πλάσαι τῇ συνέσει, δικαιῶσαι δίκαιον εὖ δουλεύ-  
 οντα πολλοῖς. Καὶ τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν αὐτὸς ἀνοίσει.  
 Διὰ τοῦτο αὐτὸς κληρονομήσει πολλοὺς καὶ τῶν ἰσχυρῶν  
 μεριεῖ σκύλα, ἀντὶ ὧν παρεδόθη εἰς θάνατον ἡ ψυχὴ αὐτοῦ, 15  
 καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἀνόμοις ἐλογίσθη, καὶ αὐτὸς ἁμαρτίας πολλῶν  
 ἀνήνεγκε καὶ διὰ τὰς ἀνομίας αὐτῶν αὐτὸς παρεδόθη. Ὡς  
 δὲ καὶ εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν ἔμελλεν ἀνιέναι, καθὼς προεφητεύ-  
 ῃ, ἀκούσατε. Ἐλέχθη δὲ οὕτως· Ἄρατε πύλας οὐρανῶν,  
 ἀνοίχθητε, ἵνα εἰσέλθῃ ὁ βασιλεὺς τῆς δόξης. Τίς ἐστιν 20  
 οὗτος ὁ βασιλεὺς τῆς δόξης; Κύριος κραταῖος καὶ κύριος  
 δυνατός. Ὡς δὲ καὶ ἐξ οὐρανῶν παραγίνεσθαι μετὰ δόξης  
 μέλλει, ἀκούσατε καὶ τῶν εἰρημένων εἰς τοῦτο διὰ Ἱερεμίου  
 τοῦ προφήτου. Ἔστι δὲ ταῦτα· Ἴδου ὡς υἱὸς ἀνθρώπου  
 ἔρχεται ἐπάνω τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, καὶ οἱ ἄγγελοι 25  
 αὐτοῦ σὺν αὐτῇ.



52. Ἐπειδὴ τοίνυν τὰ γενόμενα ἤδη πάντα ἀπεδείκνυμεν  
 Bare word of πρὶν ἢ γενέσθαι προκεκηρύχθαι διὰ τῶν προφη-  
 prophecy. τῶν, ἀνάγκη καὶ περὶ τῶν ὁμοίως προφητευθέν-  
 των, μελλόντων δὲ γίνεσθαι, πίστιν ἔχειν ὡς πάντως γε-  
 νησομένων. Ὃν γὰρ τρόπον τὰ ἤδη γενόμενα προκεκη-  
 ρυγμένα καὶ ἀγνοούμενα ἀπέβη, τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον καὶ τὰ  
 λείποντα, κἂν ἀγνοῖται καὶ ἀπιστῇται, ἀποβήσονται. Δύο  
 γὰρ αὐτοῦ παρουσίας προεκήρυξαν οἱ προφῆται· μίαν μὲν,  
 τὴν ἤδη γενομένην, ὡς ἀτίμου καὶ πασητοῦ ἀνθρώπου, τὴν  
 10 δὲ δευτέραν, ὅταν μετὰ δόξης ἐξ οὐρανῶν μετὰ τῆς ἀγγελι-  
 κῆς αὐτοῦ στρατιᾶς παραγενήσεσθαι κεκήρυκται, ὅτε καὶ τὰ  
 σώματα ἀνεγερῇ πάντων τῶν γενομένων ἀνθρώπων, καὶ  
 τῶν μὲν ἀζίων ἐνδύσει ἀφθαρσίαν, τῶν δ' ἀδίκων ἐν αἰσθή-  
 σει αἰώνια μετὰ τῶν φαύλων δαιμόνων εἰς τὸ αἰώνιον πῦρ  
 15 πέμψει. Ὡς δὲ καὶ ταῦτα προεῖρηται γενησόμενα, δηλώ-  
 σομεν. Ἐρρέθη δὲ διὰ Ἰεζεκιήλ τοῦ προφήτου οὕτως·  
 Συναχθήσεται ἁρμονία πρὸς ἁρμονίαν καὶ ὁστέον πρὸς  
 ὁστέον, καὶ σάρκες ἀναφύησονται. Καὶ πᾶν γόνυ κάμψει  
 τῷ κυρίῳ, καὶ πᾶσα γλῶσσα ἐξομολογήσεται αὐτῷ. Ἐν  
 20 οἷα δὲ αἰσθήσει καὶ κολάσει γενέσθαι μέλλουσιν οἱ ἄδικοι,  
 ἀκούσατε τῶν ὁμοίως εἰς τοῦτο εἰρημένων. Ἔστι δὲ ταῦ-  
 τα· Ὁ σκόληξ αὐτῶν οὐ παυθήσεται, καὶ τὸ πῦρ αὐτῶν  
 οὐ σβεσθήσεται. Καὶ τότε μετανοήσουσιν, ὅτε οὐδὲν ὠφε-  
 λήσουσι. Ποῖα δὲ μέλλουσιν οἱ λαοὶ τῶν Ἰουδαίων λέγειν  
 25 καὶ ποιεῖν, ὅταν ἴδωσιν αὐτὸν ἐν δόξῃ παραγενόμενον, διὰ  
 Ζαχαρίου τοῦ προφήτου προφητευθέντα ἐλέχθη οὕτως·  
 Ἐντελοῦμαι τοῖς τέσσαρσιν ἀνέμοις συνάξαι τὰ ἐσκορπι-  
 σμένα τέκνα, ἐντελοῦμαι τῷ βορρᾷ φέρειν, καὶ τῇ νύτῃ μὴ  
 προσκώπτειν. Καὶ τότε ἐν Ἱερουσαλὴμ κοπιεὺς μέγας, οὐ

κόπετος στόματων ἢ χειλέων, ἀλλὰ κόπετος καρδίας, καὶ οὐ μὴ σχίσωσιν αὐτῶν τὰ ἱμάτια, ἀλλὰ τὰς διανοίας. Κύβονται φυλὴ πρὸς φυλὴν, καὶ τότε ὄψονται εἰς δὴν ἐξεκέντησαν, καὶ ἐροῦσι· Τί, κύριε, ἐπλάνησας ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τῆς ὁδοῦ σου; Ἡ δόξα, ἣν εὐλόγησαν οἱ πατέρες ἡμῶν, ἐγενήθη ἡμῖν εἰς ὕνειδος. 25

53. Πολλὰς μὲν οὖν καὶ ἑτέρας προφητείας ἔχοντες εἰπεῖν ἐπ' ἀνσάμεζα, αὐτάρκεις καὶ ταύτας εἰς Importance of prophecies for faith. πεισμονὴν τοῖς τὰ ἀκουστικά καὶ νοερὰ ὧτα ἔχουσιν εἶναι λογισόμενοι, καὶ νοεῖν δύνασθαι αὐτοὺς ἡγούμενοι ὅτι οὐχ ὁμοίως τοῖς μυθοποιηθεῖσι περὶ τῶν νομοσθέντων υἱῶν τοῦ Διὸς καὶ ἡμεῖς μόνον λέγομεν, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἀποδείξει ἔχομεν. Τίνι γὰρ ἂν λύγῃ ἀνδρῶπι σταυρωθέντι ἐπειζόμεθα, ὅτι πρωτότοκος τῇ ἀγεννήτῃ θεῷ ἐστι καὶ αὐτὸς τὴν κρίσιν τοῦ παντὸς ἀνθρωπείου γένους ποιήσεται, εἰ μὴ μαρτύρια πρὶν ἢ ἐλθεῖν αὐτὸν ἀνθρωπον γένόμενον κεκηρυγμένα περὶ αὐτοῦ εὔρομεν καὶ οὕτως γενόμενα ὁρῶμεν, γῆς μὲν Ἰουδαίων ἐρήμωσιν, καὶ τοὺς ἀπὸ παντὸς ἔθνους ἀνθρώπων διὰ τῆς παρὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων αὐτοῦ διδαχῆς πεισζέοντας καὶ παραιτησαμένους τὰ παλαιά, ἐν αἷς πλανώμενοι ἀνεστράφησαν, ἔζη, αὐτοὺς ἡμᾶς ὁρῶν-15 τες, πλείονάς τε καὶ ἀληθεστέρους τοὺς ἐξ ἔθνων τῶν ἀπὸ Ἰουδαίων καὶ Σαμαρέων Χριστιανοὺς εἰδότες; Τὰ μὲν γὰρ ἄλλα πάντα γένη ἀνθρώπεια ὑπὸ τοῦ προφητικοῦ πνεύματος καλεῖται ἔζη, τὸ δὲ ἰουδαϊκὸν καὶ σαμαρειτικὸν φύλον Ἰσραὴλ καὶ οἶκος Ἰακώβ κέκληνται. Ὡς δὲ προεφητεύθη 20 ὅτι πλείονες οἱ ἀπὸ τῶν ἔθνων πιστεύοντες τῶν ἀπὸ Ἰουδαίων καὶ Σαμαρέων, τὰ προφητευθέντα ἀπαγγελοῦμεν. Ἐλέχθη δὲ οὕτως· Εὐφράνῃ στείρα ἢ οὐ τίκτουσα,

ῥῆξον καὶ βύησον ἢ οὐκ ᾠδίνουσα, ὅτι πολλὰ τὰ τέκνα τῆς ἐρήμου μᾶλλον ἢ τῆς ἐχούσης τὸν ἄνδρα. Ἐρημὰ γὰρ ἦν πάντα τὰ ἔξνη ἀληθινοῦ Θεοῦ, χειρῶν ἔργοις λατρεύοντα. Ἰουδαῖοι δὲ καὶ Σαμαρεῖς, ἔχοντες τὸν παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγον διὰ τῶν προφητῶν παραδοθέντα αὐτοῖς καὶ αἰ προσδοκίσαντες τὸν Χριστόν, παραγενόμενον ἠγνόησαν, πλὴν ὀλίγων τινῶν, οὓς προεῖπε τὸ ἅγιον προφητικὸν πνεῦμα διὰ Ἡσαίου σωθήσεσθαι. Εἶπε δὲ ὡς ἀπὸ προσώπου αὐτῶν· Εἰ μὴ κύριος ἐγκατέλιπεν ἡμῖν σπέρμα, ὡς Σόδομα καὶ Γόμορρα ἂν ἐγενήθημεν. Σύδομα γὰρ καὶ Γόμορρα πρότερος ἀσεβῶν ἀνδρῶν ἱστοροῦνται ὑπὸ Μωϋσέως γενόμεναι, ἃς πυρὶ καὶ θεῷ καύσας ὁ Θεὸς κατέστρεψε, μηδενὸς τῶν ἐν αὐταῖς σωθέντος πλὴν ἀλλοεθνῶν τινὸς Χαλδαίου τὸ γένος, ᾧ ὄνομα Λώτ, σὺν ᾧ καὶ θυγατέρες διεσώθησαν. Καὶ τὴν πᾶσαν αὐτῶν χώραν ἔρημον καὶ κεκαυμένην οὖσαν καὶ ἄγονον μένουσαν οἱ βουλόμενοι ὁρᾶν ἔχουσιν. Ὡς δὲ καὶ ἀληθέστεροι οἱ ἀπὸ τῶν ἔθνῶν καὶ πιστότεροι προεγινώσκунτο, ἀπαγγελοῦμεν τὰ εἰρημένα διὰ Ἡσαίου τοῦ προφήτου. Ἔφη δὲ οὕτως· Ἰσραὴλ ἀπερίτμητος τὴν καρδίαν, τὰ δὲ ἔξνη τὴν ἀκροβυστίαν. Τὰ τοσαῦτα γοῦν ὁρώμενα πειζὼ καὶ πίστιν αὐτοῖς τάληξίς ἀσπαζομένοις καὶ μὴ φιλοδοξοῦσι μηδὲ ὑπὸ πασῶν ἀρχομένοις μετὰ λόγου ἐμφορῆσαι δύναται.

54. Οἱ δὲ παραδιδόντες τὰ μυθοποιηθέντα ὑπὸ τῶν

How the myths  
of the heathen  
originated.

μανθάνουσι νέοις, καὶ ἐπὶ ἀπάτῃ καὶ ἀπαγωγῇ τοῦ ἀνθρωπείου γένους εἰρησῶσι ἀποδείκνυνται κατ' ἐνέργειαν τῶν φαύλων δαιμόνων. Ἀκούσαντες γὰρ διὰ τῶν προφητῶν κηρυσσόμενον παραγεννησόμενον τὸν Χριστόν,

καὶ κυλασθησομένους διὰ πυρὸς τοὺς ἀσεβεῖς τῶν ἀνθρώπων, προεβάλλοντο πολλοὺς λεχθῆναι γενομένους υἱοὺς τοῦ Διὸς, νομίζοντες δυνήσεσθαι ἐνεργῆσαι τερατολογίαν ἰγῆσασθαι τοὺς ἀνθρώπους τὰ περὶ τὸν Χριστὸν καὶ ὁμοίᾳ 10 τοῖς ὑπὸ τῶν ποιητῶν λεχθεῖσι. Καὶ ταῦτα δ' ἐλέχθη καὶ ἐν Ἑλλήσιν καὶ ἐν ἔθνεσι πᾶσιν, ὅπου μᾶλλον ἐπήκουον τῶν προφητῶν πιστευθῆσεσθαι τὸν Χριστὸν προκηρυσσόντων. Ὅτι δὲ καὶ ἀκούοντες τὰ διὰ τῶν προφητῶν λεγόμενα οὐκ ἐνόουν ἀκριβῶς, ἀλλ' ὡς πλανώμενοι ἐμμήσαντο 15 τὰ περὶ τὸν ἡμέτερον Χριστόν, διασαφίσομεν. Μωϋσῆς οὖν ὁ προφήτης, ὡς προέφημεν, πρεσβύτερος ἦν πάντων συγγραφέων, καὶ δι' αὐτοῦ, ὡς προεμνηύσαμεν, προεφητεύθη οὕτως· Οὐκ ἐκλείψει ἄρχων ἐξ Ἰουδα καὶ ἡγούμενος ἐκ τῶν μηρῶν αὐτοῦ, ἕως ἂν ἔλθῃ ὃ ὑπόκειται· καὶ αὐτὸς 20 ἔσται προσδοκία ἐθνῶν, δεσμεύων πρὸς ἁμπελον τὸν πῶλον αὐτοῦ, πλύνων τὴν στολὴν αὐτοῦ ἐν αἵματι σταφυλῆς. Τούτων οὖν τῶν προφητικῶν λόγων ἀκούσαντες οἱ δαίμονες Διόνυσον μὲν ἔφασαν γεγονέναι υἱὸν τοῦ Διὸς, εὐρετὴν δὲ γενέσθαι ἁμπέλου παρέδωκαν, καὶ ὄνον ἐν τοῖς μυστη- 25 ρίοις αὐτοῦ ἀναγράφουσι, καὶ διασπαρχθέντα αὐτὸν ἀνελιγθῆναι εἰς οὐρανὸν ἐδίδαξαν. Καὶ ἐπειδὴ διὰ τῆς Μωϋσείως προφητείας οὐ ῥητῶς ἐσημαίνετο, εἴ τε υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ ὁ παραγενησόμενός ἐστι, καὶ εἰ ὀχούμενος ἐπὶ πῶλου ἐπὶ γῆς μενεῖ ἢ εἰς οὐρανὸν ἀνελεύσεται, καὶ τὸ τοῦ πῶλου ὄνομα καὶ ὄνου πῶλον καὶ ἵππον σημαίνειν ἐδύνατο, μὴ ἐπιστάμενοι εἴτε ὄνου πῶλον ἄγων ἔσται σύμβολον τῆς παρουσίας αὐτοῦ εἴτε ἵππου ὁ προκηρυσσόμενος, καὶ υἱὸς Θεοῦ ἐστίν, ὡς προέφημεν, ἢ ἀνθρώπου, τὸν Βελλεροφόντην καὶ αὐτὸν ἐφ' ἵππου Πηγάσου, ἄνθρωπον ἐξ ἀνθρώπων 30

γενόμενον, εἰς οὐρανὸν ἔφασαν ἀνεληλυθῆναι. Ὅτε δὲ ἤκουσαν διὰ τοῦ ἄλλου προφήτου Ἡσαίου λεχθῆναι, ὅτι διὰ παρθένου τεχθήσεται καὶ δι' αὐτοῦ ἀνελεύσεται εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν, τὸν Περσεία λεχθῆναι προειβάλλοντο. Καὶ ὅτε ἔγνωσαν εἰρημένον, ὡς πρυλέλεκται ἐν ταῖς προγεγραμμέναις προφητείαις Ἰσχυρὸς ὡς γίγας δραμεῖν ὁδόν, τὸν Ἡρακλεία ἰσχυρόν καὶ ἐκπερινοστήσαντα τὴν πᾶσαν γῆν ἔφασαν. Ὅτε δὲ πάλιν ἔμαζον προφητευθέντα θεραπεύσειν αὐτὸν πᾶσαν νόσον καὶ νεκροὺς ἀνεγερεῖν, τὸν Ἀσκληπιὸν ἀπαρίνεγκαν.

55. Ἄλλ' οὐδαμοῦ οὐδ' ἐπὶ τινος τῶν λεγομένων υἱῶν τοῦ Διὸς τὸ σταυρωθῆναι ἐμιμήσαντο· οὐ γὰρ ἐνοεῖτο αὐτοῖς, συμβολικῶς, ὡς προεδείχλωται, τῶν εἰς τοῦτο εἰρημένων πάντων λελεγμένων. Ὅπερ, ὡς πρηνεῖπεν ὁ προφήτης, τὸ μέγιστον σύμβολον τῆς ἰσχύος καὶ ἀρχῆς αὐτοῦ ὑπάρχει, ὡς καὶ ἐκ τῶν ὑπ' ὕψιν πιπτόντων δέικνυται· κατανοήσατε γὰρ πάντα τὰ ἐν τῇ κόσμῳ, εἰ ἄνευ τοῦ σχήματος τούτου διοικεῖται ἡ κοινωνίαν ἔχειν δύναται. Θάλασσα μὲν γὰρ οὐ τέμνεται, ἦν μὴ τοῦτο τὸ τρώπαιον, ὃ καλεῖται ἰστίον, ἐν τῇ νηὶ σῶον μέινῃ· γῆ δὲ οὐκ ἀροῦται ἄνευ αὐτοῦ· σκαπανεῖς δὲ τὴν ἐργασίαν οὐ ποιοῦνται οὐδὲ βανασουργοὶ ὁμοίως, εἰ μὴ διὰ τῶν τὸ σχῆμα τοῦτο ἐχόντων ἐργαλείων. Τὸ δὲ ἀνθρώπειον σχῆμα οὐδενὶ ἄλλῳ τῶν ἀλόγων ζώων διαφέρει, ἢ τῇ ὁρμῇ τε εἶναι καὶ ἔκτασιν χειρῶν ἔχειν καὶ ἐν τῇ προσώπῳ ἀπὸ τοῦ μετωπίου τεταμένον τὸν λεγόμενον μυζωτῆρα φέρειν, δι' οὗ ἢ τε ἀναπνοή ἐστι τῇ ζώῳ καὶ οὐδὲν ἄλλο δέικνυσιν ἢ τὸ σχῆμα τοῦ σταυροῦ. Καὶ διὰ τοῦ προφήτου δὲ ἐλέχθη οὕτως· Πνεῦμα πρὸ προσώπου ἡμῶν Χριστός

κύριος. Καὶ τὰ παρ' ὑμῖν διὰ σύμβουλα τὴν τοῦ σχήματος τοῦ  
τούτου δύναμιν δηλοῖ, τὰ τῶν βηξίλλων καὶ τῶν τρο-  
παίων, δι' ὧν αἱ τε πρύοδοι ὑμῶν πανταχοῦ γίνονται, τῆς  
ἀρχῆς καὶ δυνάμεως τὰ σημεῖα ἐν τούτοις δεικνύντες, εἰ καὶ  
μὴ νοοῦντες τοῦτο πράττετε. Καὶ τῶν παρ' ὑμῖν ἀποζητη-  
σκόντων αὐτοκρατόρων τὰς εἰκόνας ἐπὶ τούτῳ τῷ σχήματι  
ἀνατίθετε, καὶ θεοὺς διὰ γραμμάτων ἐπονομάζετε. Καὶ διὰ  
λόγου οὖν καὶ σχήματος τοῦ φαινομένου, ὅση δύναμις,  
προτρεψάμενοι ὑμᾶς ἀνεύθυνοι οἶδαμεν λοιπὸν ὄντες, κἂν  
ὑμεῖς ἀπιστῇτε· τὸ γὰρ ἡμέτερον γέγονε καὶ πεπέραται.

56. Οὐκ ἠρκέσθησαν δὲ οἱ φαῦλοι δαίμονες πρὸ τῆς  
φανερώσεως τοῦ Χριστοῦ εἰπεῖν τοὺς λεχθέντας  
The demons still at work. υἱοὺς τῷ Διὶ γεγονέναι, ἀλλ' ἐπειδὴ, φανερω-  
θέντος αὐτοῦ καὶ γενομένου ἐν ἀνθρώποις καὶ ὅπως διὰ  
τῶν προφητῶν προεκείηρυκτο ἔμαζον, καὶ ἐν παντὶ γένει  
πιστευόμενον καὶ προσδοκώμενον ἔγνωσαν, πάλιν, ὡς  
προεδηλώσαμεν, προεβάλλοντο ἄλλους, Σίμωνα μὲν καὶ  
Μένανδρον ἀπὸ Σαμαρείας, οἱ καὶ μαγικὰς δυνάμεις ποιή-  
σαντες πολλοὺς ἐξηπάτησαν καὶ ἔτι ἀπατωμένους ἔχουσι.  
Καὶ γὰρ παρ' ὑμῖν, ὡς προέφημεν, ἐν τῇ βασιλίδι Ῥώμῃ  
ἐπὶ Κλαυδίου Καίσαρος γενομένου ὁ Σίμων καὶ τὴν ἱερὰν  
σύγκλητον καὶ τὸν δῆμον Ῥωμαίων εἰς τοσοῦτο κατεπλή-  
ξατο, ὡς θεὸς νομισθῆναι καὶ ἀνδριάντι, ὡς τοὺς ἄλλους  
παρ' ὑμῖν τιμωμένους θεοὺς, τιμῆσθαι. Ὅθεν τὴν τε  
ἱερὰν σύγκλητον καὶ τὸν δῆμον τὸν ὑμέτερον συνεπιγνώ-  
μονας ταύτης ἡμῶν τῆς ἀξιώσεως παραλαβεῖν αἰτοῦμεν,  
ἵν' εἴ τις εἴη τοῖς ἀπ' ἐκείνου διδάγμασι κατεχόμενος, τὰ λη-  
ξὶς μαζῶν τὴν πλάνην φυγεῖν δυνήσῃ. Καὶ τὸν ἀνδριάντα,  
εἰ βούλεσθε, καθαίρήσατε.

57. Οὐ γὰρ μὴ γενέσθαι τὴν ἐκπύρωσιν ἐπὶ κολάσει τῶν  
 The demons ἄσεβῶν οἱ φαῦλοι δαίμονες πείσαι δύνανται,  
 instigate  
 persecution. ὅνπερ τρόπον οὐδὲ λαθεῖν τὸν Χριστὸν παρα-  
 γυνόμενον ἴσχυσαν πρᾶξαι, ἀλλ' ἐκείνο μόνον, τοὺς ἀλό-  
 5 γως βιοῦντας καὶ ἐμπαθῶς ἐν ἔξει φαύλοις τετραμμένους  
 καὶ φιλοδοξοῦντας ἀναιρεῖν ἡμᾶς καὶ μισεῖν, δύνανται ποι-  
 ῆσαι, οὓς οὐ μόνον οὐ μισοῦμεν, ἀλλ', ὡς δείκνυται, ἐλε-  
 οῦντες μεταξέσθαι πείσαι βουλόμεθα. Οὐ γὰρ δεδοίκαμεν  
 θάνατον, τοῦ πάντως ἀποθανεῖν ὁμολογουμένου, καὶ μη-  
 10 δυνὸς ἄλλου καινοῦ ἀλλ' ἢ τῶν αὐτῶν ἐν τῇδε τῇ διοικήσει  
 ὄντων, ὧν εἰ μὲν κόρος τοὺς μετασχύντας κἂν ἐνιαυτοῦ  
 ἔχει, ἵνα αἰὲ ὥσι καὶ ἀπαθείς καὶ ἀνενδεεῖς, τοῖς ἡμετέροις  
 διδάγμασι προσέχειν δεῖ. Εἰ δ' ἀπιστοῦσι μηδὲν εἶναι  
 μετὰ θάνατον, ἀλλ' εἰς ἀναισθησίαν χωρεῖν τοὺς ἀποθνή-  
 15 σκοντας ἀποφαίνονται, παθῶν τῶν ἐνταῦθα καὶ χρειῶν  
 ἡμᾶς ρυόμενοι εὐεργετοῦσιν, ἑαυτοὺς δὲ φαύλους καὶ μισ-  
 ανθρωποὺς καὶ φιλοδύλους δεικνύουσιν· οὐ γὰρ ὡς ἀπαλ-  
 λάξοντες ἡμᾶς ἀναιροῦσιν, ἀλλ' ὡς ἀποστεροῦντες ζωῆς  
 καὶ ἡδονῆς φονεύουσι.

58. Καὶ Μαρκίωνα δὲ τὸν ἀπὸ Πόντου, ὡς προέφημεν,  
 Marcion put προεβάλλοντο οἱ φαῦλοι δαίμονες, ὃς ἀρνεῖσθαι  
 forward by  
 the demon. μὲν τὸν ποιητὴν τῶν οὐρανίων καὶ γηίνων ἀπάν-  
 των θεὸν καὶ τὸν προκηρυχθέντα διὰ τῶν προφητῶν Χρι-  
 5 στὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ καὶ νῦν διδάσκει, ἄλλον δὲ τινα καταγγέλ-  
 λει παρὰ τὸν δημιουργὸν τῶν πάντων θεὸν καὶ ὁμοίως  
 ἕτερον υἱόν· ᾧ πολλοὶ πεισθέντες, ὡς μόνῃ τάληδ' ἐπι-  
 σταμένῳ, ἡμῶν καταγελῶσιν ἀπόδειξιν μηδεμίαν περὶ ὧν  
 λέγουσιν ἔχοντες, ἀλλ' ἀλόγως ὡς ὑπὸ λύκου ἄρνες συν-  
 10 ηρπασμένοι βορὰ τῶν ἄσέων ἑογμάτων καὶ δαιμόνων

γίνονται. Οὐ γὰρ ἄλλο τι ἀγωνίζονται οἱ λεγόμενοι δαίμονες, ἢ ἀπάγειν τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἀπὸ τοῦ ποιήσαντος Θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ πρωτογόνου αὐτοῦ Χριστοῦ· καὶ τοὺς μὲν τῆς γῆς μὴ ἐπαίρεσθαι δυναμένους τοῖς γηϊνοῖς καὶ χειροποιήτοις προσήλωσαν καὶ προσηλοῦσι, τοὺς δὲ ἐπὶ Θεωρίαν ζείων 15 ὕμνωντας ὑπεκκρούοντες, ἣν μὴ λογισμὸν σώφρονα καὶ κα-  
 Ζαρὺν καὶ ἀπασι βίον ἔχωσιν, εἰς ἀσίβημα ἐμβάλλουσιν. ✓

59. Ἵνα δὲ καὶ παρὰ τῶν ἡμετέρων διδασκάλων (λέγο-  
<sup>What Plato</sup> <sup>owes to Moses.</sup> <sup>μεν</sup> ἐξ τοῦ λόγου τοῦ διὰ τῶν προφητῶν) λα-  
 βόντα τὸν Πλάτωνα μάζητε τὸ εἰπεῖν, ὅλην  
 ἄμορφον οὖσαν στρέψαντα τὸν ζεὺν κόσμον ποιῆσαι, ἀκού-  
 σατε τῶν αὐτολεξεί εἰρημένων διὰ Μωϋσέως, τοῦ προδεδη- 5  
 λωμένου πρώτου προφήτου καὶ πρεσβυτέρου τῶν ἐν Ἑλ-  
 λησι συγγραφέων, εἰ οὐ μηνῶν τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα,  
 πῶς τὴν ἀρχὴν καὶ ἐκ τίνων ἐδημιούργησεν ὁ Θεὸς τὸν  
 κόσμον, ἔφη οὕτως· Ἐν ἀρχῇ ἐποίησεν ὁ Θεὸς τὸν οὐρα-  
 νὸν καὶ τὴν γῆν. Ἡ δὲ γῆ ἦν αὐράτος καὶ ἀκατασκεύαστος, 10  
 καὶ σκύτος ἐπάνω τῆς ἀβύσσου· καὶ πνεῦμα Θεοῦ ἐπεφέρε-  
 το ἐπάνω τῶν ὑδάτων. Καὶ εἶπεν ὁ Θεός· Γενηθήτω φῶς.  
 Καὶ ἐγένετο οὕτως. Ὡστε λόγῳ Θεοῦ ἐκ τῶν ὑποκειμένων  
 καὶ προδηλωζόντων διὰ Μωϋσέως γεγενῆσθαι τὸν πάντα  
 κόσμον, καὶ Πλάτων καὶ οἱ ταῦτὰ λέγοντες καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐμά- 15  
 ζομεν, καὶ ὑμεῖς πεισθῆναι δύνασθε. Καὶ τὸ καλούμενον  
 Ἑρεβος παρὰ τοῖς ποιηταῖς εἰρῆσθαι πρότερον ὑπὸ Μωϋ-  
 σέως οἶδαμεν.

60. Καὶ τὸ ἐν τῇ παρὰ Πλάτωνι Τιμαίῳ φυσιολογού-  
<sup>Plato and</sup> <sup>the Cross.</sup> <sup>μενον</sup> περὶ τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὅτε λέγει· Ἐχί-  
 ασεν αὐτὸν ἐν τῇ παντί, παρὰ Μωϋσέως λαβὼν  
 ὁμοίως εἶπεν. Ἐν γὰρ ταῖς Μωϋσέως γραφαῖς ἀναγέ-  
 Ε



5 γραπται, ὡς κατ' ἐκείνο τοῦ καιροῦ ὅτε ἐξῆλθον ἀπὸ Αἰ-  
 γύπτου οἱ Ἰσραηλῖται καὶ γεγόνασιν ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ, ἀπήντη-  
 σαν αὐτοῖς ἰοβόλα Σηρία, ἔχιδναί τε καὶ ἀσπίδες καὶ ὄφειων  
 πᾶν γένος, ὃ ἐξανάτου τὸν λαόν· καὶ κατ' ἐπίπνοιαν καὶ  
 ἐνέργειαν τὴν παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ γενομένην λαβεῖν τὸν Μωϋ-  
 10 σία χαλκὸν καὶ ποιῆσαι τύπον σταυροῦ, καὶ τοῦτον στήσαι  
 ἐπὶ τῇ ἀγίᾳ σκηνῇ καὶ εἰπεῖν τῷ λαῷ· Ἐὰν προσβλέπητε  
 τῷ τύπῳ τούτῳ καὶ πιστεύητε ἐν αὐτῷ, σωθήσεσθε. Καὶ  
 γενομένου τούτου τοὺς μὲν ὄφεις ἀποθανεῖν ἀνέγραψε, τὸν  
 δὲ λαὸν ἐκφυγεῖν τὸν θάνατον οὕτως παρέδωκεν. Ἄ ἀγα-  
 15 γνοὺς Πλάτων καὶ μὴ ἀκριβῶς ἐπιστάμενος μηδὲ νοήσας  
 τύπον εἶναι σταυροῦ, ἀλλὰ χρίσμα νοήσας, τὴν μετὰ τὸν  
 πρῶτον Θεὸν δύναμιν κεχιάσθαι ἐν τῷ παντὶ εἶπε. Καὶ τὸ  
 εἰπεῖν αὐτὸν τρίτον, ἐπειδὴ, ὡς προείπομεν, ἐπάνω τῶν  
 ὑδάτων ἀνέγνω ὑπὸ Μωϋσέως εἰρημένον ἐπιφέρεισθαι τὸ  
 20 τοῦ Θεοῦ πνεῦμα. Δευτέραν μὲν γὰρ χώραν τῷ παρὰ Θεοῦ  
 λόγῳ, ὃν κεχιάσθαι ἐν τῷ παντὶ ἔφη, δίδωσι, τὴν δὲ τρίτην  
 τῷ λεχθέντι ἐπιφέρεισθαι τῷ ὕδατι πνεύματι, εἰπών· Τὰ δὲ  
 τρίτα περὶ τὸν τρίτον. Καὶ ὡς ἐκπύρωσιν γενήσεσθαι διὰ  
 Μωϋσέως προεμήνυσσε τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα, ἀκούσατε.  
 25 Ἐφη δὲ οὕτως· Καταβήσεται αἰίζων πῦρ καὶ καταφάγε-  
 ται μέχρι τῆς ἀβύσσου κάτω. Οὐ τὰ αὐτὰ οὖν ἡμεῖς ἄλ-  
 λους δοξάζομεν, ἀλλ' οἱ πάντες τὰ ἡμέτερα μιμούμενοι λέ-  
 γουσι. Παρ' ἡμῖν οὖν ἔστι ταῦτα ἀκοῦσαι καὶ μαθεῖν παρὰ  
 τῶν οὐδὲ τοὺς χαρακτῆρας τῶν στοιχείων ἐπισταμένων,  
 30 ἰδιωτῶν μὲν καὶ βαρβάρων τὸ φθίγμα, σοφῶν δὲ καὶ πι-  
 στῶν τὸν νοῦν ὄντων, καὶ πηρῶν καὶ χήρων τινῶν τὰς  
 ὄψεις· ὡς συνεῖναι οὐ σοφία ἀνθρωπεία ταῦτα γεγενέαι,  
 ἀλλὰ δυνάμει Θεοῦ λέγεσθαι.

61. Ὁν τρόπον δὲ καὶ ἀνεξήκαμεν ἑαυτοὺς τῷ Θεῷ και-  
 Christian νοποιεῖντες διὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἐξηγησόμεθα,  
 baptism ὅπως μὴ τοῦτο παραλιπόντες δόξωμεν πονηρεῦ-  
 ειν τι ἐν τῇ ἐξηγήσει. Ὅσοι ἂν πεισθῶσι καὶ πιστεύωσιν  
 ἀληθῇ ταῦτα τὰ ὑφ' ἡμῶν διδασκόμενα καὶ λεγόμενα εἶναι, 5  
 καὶ βιοῦν οὕτως δύνασθαι ὑπισχνῶνται, εὐχεσθαι τε καὶ  
 αἰτεῖν νηστεύοντες παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ τῶν προημαρτημένων  
 ἄφεσιν διδάσκονται, ἡμῶν συννευχομένων καὶ συννηστευ-  
 όντων αὐτοῖς. Ἐπειτα ἄγονται ὑφ' ἡμῶν ἐνθα ὕδωρ ἐστί,  
 καὶ τρόπον ἀναγεννήσεως, ὃν καὶ ἡμεῖς αὐτοὶ ἀναγεννήθη- 10  
 μεν, ἀναγεννῶνται· ἐπ' ὀνόματος γὰρ τοῦ πατρὸς τῶν  
 ὅλων καὶ δεσπότου Θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ  
 Χριστοῦ καὶ πνεύματος ἁγίου τὸ ἐν τῷ ὕδατι τότε λουτρὸν  
 ποιοῦνται. Καὶ γὰρ ὁ Χριστὸς εἶπεν· Ἄν μὴ ἀναγεννη-  
σῇτε, οὐ μὴ εἰσέλθῃτε εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν. 15  
 Ὅτι δὲ καὶ ἀδύνατον εἰς τὰς μήτρας τῶν τεκουσῶν τοὺς  
 ἅπαξ γενομένους ἐμβῆναι, φανερὸν πᾶσιν ἐστί. Καὶ διὰ  
 Ἡσαΐου τοῦ προφήτου, ὡς προεγράψαμεν, εἶρηται, τίνα  
 τρόπον φεύζονται τὰς ἁμαρτίας οἱ ἁμαρτήσαντες καὶ μετα-  
 νοοῦντες. Ἐλέχθη δὲ οὕτως· Λούσασθε, καθαροὶ γένεσθε, 20  
 ἀφέλετε τὰς πονηρίας ἀπὸ τῶν ψυχῶν ὑμῶν, μάθετε καλὸν  
 ποιεῖν, κρίνατε ὀρφανῷ καὶ δικαιώσατε χήραν, καὶ δεῦτε καὶ  
 διαλεχθῶμεν, λέγει κύριος. Καὶ ἴδαν ὧσιν αἱ ἁμαρτίαι  
 ὑμῶν ὡς φοινικιοῦν, ὡσεὶ ἔριον λευκανῷ, καὶ ἔνν ὧσιν ὡς  
 κόκκινον, ὡς χιόνα λευκανῷ. Ἐὰν δὲ μὴ εἰσακούσῃτέ μου, 25  
 μάχαιρα ὑμᾶς κατέδετα· τὸ γὰρ στόμα κυρίου ἐλάλησε  
 ταῦτα. Καὶ λόγον δὲ εἰς τοῦτο παρὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων  
 ἐμάζομεν τοῦτον. Ἐπειδὴ τὴν πρώτην γένεσιν ἡμῶν  
 ἀγνοοῦντες κατ' ἀνάγκην γεγεννήμεθα ἐξ ὑγρᾶς σπορᾶς

30 κατὰ μῖξιν τὴν τῶν γονέων πρὸς ἀλλήλους καὶ ἐν ἔξει  
 φαύλοις καὶ πονηραῖς ἀνατροφαῖς γεγόμενα, ὅπως μὴ  
 ἀνάγκης τέκνα μηδὲ ἀγνοίας μένωμεν, ἀλλὰ προαιρέσεως  
 καὶ ἐπιστήμης, ἀφέσεώς τε ἁμαρτιῶν ὑπὲρ ὧν προημάρτομεν  
 τύχωμεν, ἐν τῷ ὕδατι ἐπονομάζεται τῷ ἐλομένῳ ἀναγεννη-  
 35 θῆναι καὶ μετανοήσαντι ἐπὶ τοῖς ἡμαρτημένοις τὸ τοῦ πα-  
 τρός τῶν ὕλων καὶ δεσπότου Θεοῦ ὄνομα, αὐτὸ τοῦτο  
 μόνον ἐπιλέγοντες τοῦ τὸν λουσόμενον ἄγοντες ἐπὶ τὸ  
 λουτρὸν. Ὅνομα γὰρ τῷ ἀρρήτῳ Θεῷ οὐδεὶς ἔχει εἰπεῖν, εἰ  
 δέ τις τολμήσειεν εἶναι λέγειν, μέμνη τὴν ἄσωτον μανίαν.  
 40 Καλεῖται δὲ τοῦτο τὸ λουτρὸν φωτισμός, ὡς φωτιζομένων  
 τὴν διάνοιαν τῶν ταῦτα μανθανόντων. Καὶ ἐπ' ὀνόματος  
 δὲ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ σταυρωθέντος ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου  
 καὶ ἐπ' ὀνόματος πνεύματος ἁγίου, ὃ διὰ τῶν προφητῶν  
 προεκήρυξε τὰ κατὰ τὸν Ἰησοῦν πάντα, ὁ φωτιζόμενος  
 45 λούεται.

62. Καὶ τὸ λουτρὸν διὰ τοῦτο ἀκούσαντες οἱ δαίμονες  
 Baptism imi- διὰ τοῦ προφήτου κεκηρυγμένον ἐνήργησαν καὶ  
 tated by the  
 demons. ραντίζουσιν ἑαυτοὺς τοὺς εἰς τὰ ἱερά αὐτῶν ἀπι-  
 βαίνοντας καὶ προσιέναι αὐτοῖς μέλλοντας, λοιβὰς καὶ  
 5 κνίσας ἀποτελοῦντας· τέλειον δὲ καὶ λούεσθαι ἀπιόντας  
 πρὶν ἔλθαι ἐπὶ τὰ ἱερά, ἐνθα ἴδρυνται, ἐνεργοῦσι. Καὶ γὰρ  
 τὸ ὑπολύεσθαι ἐπιβαίνοντας τοῖς ἱεροῖς καὶ προσιόντας  
 αὐτοῖς τοὺς ξρησκεύοντας κελεύεσθαι ὑπὸ τῶν ἱερατευνόν-  
 των ἐκ τῶν συμβάντων Μωϋσεὶ τῷ εἰρημένῳ προφήτῃ  
 10 μαζύοντες οἱ δαίμονες ἐμιμήσαντο. Κατ' ἐκεῖνο γὰρ τοῦ  
 καιροῦ ὅτε Μωϋσῆς ἐκελεύσθη κατελθὼν εἰς Αἴγυπτον  
 ἐξαγαγεῖν τὸν ἐκεῖ λαὸν τῶν Ἰσραηλιτῶν, ποιμαίνοντος  
 αὐτοῦ ἐν τῇ ἀρραβικῇ γῇ πρόβατα τοῦ πρὸς μητρὸς

θείου ἐν ιδέα πυρὸς ἐκ βάτου προσωμίλησεν αὐτῷ ὁ ἡμέ-  
 ρος Χριστὸς καὶ εἶπεν· Ὑπόλυσαι τὰ ὑποδήματά σο  
 καὶ προσελθὼν ἄκουσον. Ὁ δὲ ὑπολυσάμενος καὶ προ-  
 ελθὼν ἀκήκοε κατελθεῖν εἰς Αἴγυπτον καὶ ἐξαγαγεῖν τ  
 ἐκεῖ λαὸν τῶν Ἰσραηλιτῶν, καὶ δύναμιν ἰσχυρὰν ἔλα  
 παρὰ τοῦ λαλήσαντος αὐτῷ ἐν ιδέα πυρὸς Χριστοῦ, ἡ  
 κατελθὼν ἐξήγαγε τὸν λαὸν ποιήσας μεγάλα καὶ θαυμάσ-  
 α ἡ εἰ βούλεσθε μαθεῖν, ἐκ τῶν συγγραμμάτων ἐκείνου ἀκ-  
 βῶς μαθήσεσθε.

63. Ἰουδαῖοι δὲ πάντες καὶ νῦν διδάσκουσι τὸν ἀνωι  
 God's appear- μαστον θεὸν λελαληκέναι τῷ Μωϋσῇ· ὅθεν  
 ing to Moses. προφητικὸν πνεῦμα διὰ Ἡσαίου τοῦ προεμμη-  
 μένου προφήτου ἐλέγχον αὐτοὺς, ὡς προεγράψαμεν, εἶπε  
 Ἔγνων βοῦς τὸν κτησάμενον καὶ ὕνος τὴν φάτνην τ  
 κυρίου αὐτοῦ, Ἰσραὴλ δὲ με οὐκ ἔγνω καὶ ὁ λαὸς με  
 συνῆκε. Καὶ Ἰησοῦς δὲ ὁ Χριστός, ὅτι οὐκ ἔγνωσαν Ἰε-  
 δαῖοι, τί πατὴρ καὶ τί υἱός, ὁμοίως ἐλέγχων αὐτοὺς ἡ  
 αὐτὸς εἶπεν· Οὐδεὶς ἔγνω τὸν πατέρα εἰ μὴ ὁ υἱός, οἱ  
 τὸν υἱὸν εἰ μὴ ὁ πατὴρ καὶ οἷς ἂν ἀποκαλύψῃ ὁ υἱός.  
 λόγος δὲ τοῦ θεοῦ ἐστὶν ὁ υἱὸς αὐτοῦ, ὡς προέφημ  
 Καὶ ἄγγελος δὲ καλεῖται καὶ ἀπόστολος· αὐτὸς γὰρ ἀπο-  
 γέλλει ὅσα δεῖ γνωσθῆναι, καὶ ἀποστέλλεται μηνύσων ὁ  
 ἀγγέλλεται, ὡς καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ κύριος ἡμῶν εἶπεν· Ὁ ἐμ  
 ἀκούων, ἀκούει τοῦ ἀποστείλαντός με. Καὶ ἐκ τῶν ἡ  
 Μωϋσέως δὲ συγγραμμάτων φανερόν τοῦτο γενήσεται  
 Λέλεκται δὲ ἐν αὐτοῖς οὕτως· Καὶ ἐλάλησε Μωϋσεῖ ὁ  
 γελος θεοῦ ἐν φλογὶ πυρὸς ἐκ τῆς βάτου καὶ εἶπεν· Ἐ-  
 εἰμι ὁ ὢν, θεὸς Ἀβραάμ, θεὸς Ἰσαάκ, θεὸς Ἰακώβ, ὁ ἐκ  
 τῶν πατέρων σου. Κάτελξε εἰς Αἴγυπτον καὶ ἐξάγε

τὸν λαὸν μου. Τὰ δ' ἐπόμενα ἐξ ἐκείνων βουλόμενοι μα-  
 ρεῖν δύνασθε· οὐ γὰρ δυνατόν ἐν τούτοις ἀναγράψαι  
 πάντα. Ἀλλ' εἰς ἀπύδειξιν γεγύνασιν οἶδε οἱ λόγοι, ὅτι  
 υἱὸς Θεοῦ καὶ ἀπύστολος Ἰησοῦς ὁ Χριστός ἐστι, πρότερον  
 25 λόγος ὢν, καὶ ἐν ἰδέᾳ πυρὸς ποτὲ φανείς, ποτὲ δὲ καὶ ἐν  
 εἰκόνι ἀσωμάτων· νῦν δὲ διὰ θελήματος Θεοῦ ὑπὲρ τοῦ  
 ἀνθρωπείου γένους ἄνθρωπος γενόμενος ὑπέμεινε καὶ πα-  
 ρεῖν ὅσα αὐτὸν ἐνήργησαν οἱ δαίμονες διατεξῆναι ὑπὸ τῶν  
 ἀνοήτων Ἰουδαίων. Οἵτινες ἔχοντες ῥητῶς εἰρημένον ἐν  
 30 τοῖς Μωϋσείως συντάγμασι· Καὶ ἐλάλησεν ἄγγελος τοῦ  
 Θεοῦ τῷ Μωϋσεῖ ἐν πυρὶ φλογὸς ἐν βάτῃ καὶ εἶπεν· Ἐγώ  
 εἰμι ὁ ὢν, ὁ Θεὸς Ἀβραάμ καὶ ὁ Θεὸς Ἰσαὰκ καὶ ὁ Θεὸς  
 Ἰακώβ, τὸν τῶν ὅλων πατέρα καὶ δημιουργὸν τὸν ταῦτα  
 εἰπόντα λέγουσιν εἶναι. Ὅθεν καὶ τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα  
 35 ἐλέγχον αὐτοὺς εἶπεν· Ἰσραὴλ δέ με οὐκ ἔγνω, καὶ ὁ λαὸς  
 με οὐ συνῆκε. Καὶ πάλιν ὁ Ἰησοῦς, ὡς ἐδηλώσαμεν, παρ'  
 αὐτοῖς ὢν εἶπεν· Οὐδεὶς ἔγνω τὸν πατέρα εἰ μὴ ὁ υἱός,  
 οὐδὲ τὸν υἱὸν εἰ μὴ ὁ πατήρ καὶ οἷς ἂν ὁ υἱὸς ἀποκαλύψῃ.  
 Ἰουδαῖοι οὖν ἡγησάμενοι ἀεὶ τὸν πατέρα τῶν ὅλων λελα-  
 40 ληκέναι τῷ Μωϋσεῖ, τοῦ λαλήσαντος αὐτῷ ὄντος υἱοῦ τοῦ  
 Θεοῦ, ὅς καὶ ἄγγελος καὶ ἀπύστολος κέκληται, δικαίως  
 ἐλέγχονται καὶ διὰ τοῦ προφητικοῦ πνεύματος καὶ δι' αὐτοῦ  
 τοῦ Χριστοῦ ὡς οὔτε τὸν πατέρα οὔτε τὸν υἱὸν ἔγνωσαν.  
 Οἱ γὰρ τὸν υἱὸν πατέρα φάσκοντες εἶναι ἐλέγχονται μήτε  
 45 τὸν πατέρα ἐπιστάμενοι μήτ' ὅτι ἐστὶν υἱὸς τῇ πατρὶ τῶν  
 ὅλων γινώσκοντες· ὅς λόγος καὶ πρωτότοκος ὢν τοῦ  
 Θεοῦ καὶ Θεὸς ὑπάρχει. Καὶ πρότερον διὰ τῆς τοῦ πυρὸς  
 μορφῆς καὶ εἰκόνος ἀσωμάτου τῷ Μωϋσεῖ καὶ τοῖς ἑτέροις  
 προφήταις ἐφάνη· νῦν δ' ἐν χρούοις τῆς ὑμετέρας ἀρχῆς,

ὡς προείπομεν, διὰ παρξένου ἄνθρωπος γενόμενος κατὰ τὴν τοῦ πατρὸς βουλὴν ὑπὲρ σωτηρίας τῶν πιστευόντων αὐτῷ καὶ ἐξουθενηθῆναι καὶ παθεῖν ὑπέμεινεν, ἵνα ἀποθανὼν καὶ ἀναστὰς νικήσῃ τὸν θάνατον. Τὸ δὲ εἰρημένον ἐκ βράτου τῷ Μωϋσῇ· Ἐγὼ εἰμι ὁ ὢν, ὁ Θεὸς Ἀβραὰμ καὶ ὁ Θεὸς Ἰσαὰκ καὶ ὁ Θεὸς Ἰακώβ καὶ ὁ Θεὸς τῶν πατέρων σου, σημαντικὸν τοῦ καὶ ἀποθανόντος ἐκείνου μένειν καὶ εἶναι αὐτοῦ τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἄνθρώπους· καὶ γὰρ πρῶτοι τῶν πάντων ἀνθρώπων ἐκεῖνοι περὶ Θεοῦ ζήτησιν ἡσυχολήτησαν, Ἀβραὰμ μὲν πατὴρ ὢν τοῦ Ἰσαάκ, Ἰσαὰκ δὲ τοῦ Ἰακώβ, ὡς καὶ Μωϋσῆς ἀνέγραψε.

60

64. Καὶ τὸ ἀνεγείρειν δὲ τὸ εἶδωλον τῆς λεγομένης Κύρης ἐπὶ ταῖς τῶν ὑδάτων πηγαῖς ἐνεργῆσαι τοὺς δαίμονας, λέγοντας θυγατέρα αὐτὴν εἶναι τοῦ Διὸς, μιμησαμένους τὸ διὰ Μωϋσέως εἰρημένον, ἐκ τῶν προειρημένων νοῆσαι δύνασθε. Ἐφη γὰρ ὁ Μωϋσῆς, ὡς προεγράψαμεν· Ἐν ἀρχῇ ἐποίησεν ὁ Θεὸς τὸν οὐρανὸν καὶ τὴν γῆν. Ἡ δὲ γῆ ἦν ἄυρατος καὶ ἀκατασκεύαστος, καὶ πνεῦμα Θεοῦ ἐπεφέρετο ἐπάνω τῶν ὑδάτων. Εἰς μίμησιν οὖν τοῦ λεχθέντος ἐπιφερομένου τῷ ὕδατι πνεύματος Θεοῦ τὴν Κύρην θυγατέρα τοῦ Διὸς ἔφασαν. Καὶ τὴν Ἀθηνᾶν δὲ ὁμοίως πονηρευόμενοι θυγατέρα τοῦ Διὸς ἔφασαν οὐκ ἀπὸ μίξεως, ἀλλ' ἐπειδὴ ἐννοηθέντα τὸν Θεὸν διὰ λόγου τὸν κόσμον ποιῆσαι ἔγνωσαν, ὡς τὴν πρώτην ἐννοίαν ἔφασαν τὴν Ἀθηνᾶν· ὕπερ γελοιότατον ἡγούμεθα εἶναι, τῆς ἐννοίας εἰκόνα παραφέρειν θηλειῶν μορφὴν. Καὶ ὁμοίως τοὺς ἄλλους λεγομένους υἱοὺς τοῦ Διὸς αἱ πράξεις ἐλέγχουσιν.

65. Ἡμεῖς δὲ μετὰ τὸ οὕτως λούσαι τὸν πεπεισμένον καὶ

Administration of the sacramenta συγκατατεθειμένον ἐπὶ τοὺς λεγομένους ἀδελ-  
 φούς ἄγομεν, ἔνθα συνηγμένοι εἰσὶ, κοινὰς  
 εὐχὰς ποιησόμενοι ὑπὲρ τε ἑαυτῶν καὶ τοῦ φωτισθέντος  
 5 καὶ ἄλλων πανταχοῦ πάντων ἐντόνως, ὅπως καταξιωθῶμεν  
 τὰ ἀληθῆ μαθεύοντες καὶ δι' ἔργων ἀγαθοῖ πολιτευταὶ καὶ  
 φύλακες τῶν ἐντεταλμένων εὐρεσθῆναι, ὅπως τὴν αἰώνιον  
σωτηρίαν σωθῶμεν. Ἀλλήλους φιλήματι ἀσπαζόμεθα  
παυσάμενοι τῶν εὐχῶν. Ἐπειτα προσφέρεται τῷ προε-  
 10 στώτι τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἄρτος καὶ ποτήριον ὕδατος καὶ κρᾶμα-  
 τος, καὶ οὗτος λαβὼν αἶνον καὶ δόξαν τῷ πατρὶ τῶν ὅλων  
 διὰ τοῦ ὀνόματος τοῦ υἱοῦ καὶ τοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ ἁγίου  
 ἀναπέμπει καὶ εὐχαριστίαν ὑπὲρ τοῦ κατηξιῶσθαι τούτων  
 παρ' αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ πολὺ ποιεῖται· οὐ συντελέσαντος τὰς εὐχὰς  
 15 καὶ τὴν εὐχαριστίαν πᾶς ὁ παρὼν λαὸς ἐπευφημεῖ λέγων  
 Ἀμήν. Τὸ δὲ ἀμήν τῇ ἑβραϊδὶ φωνῇ τὸ γένοιτο σημαίνει.  
Εὐχαριστήσαντος δὲ τοῦ προεστῶτος καὶ ἐπευφημήσαντος  
παντὸς τοῦ λαοῦ οἱ καλούμενοι παρ' ἡμῖν διάκονοι διδύσασιν  
ἐκάστῳ τῶν παρόντων μεταλαβεῖν ἀπὸ τοῦ εὐχαριστηθέν-  
 20 τος ἄρτου καὶ οἴνου καὶ ὕδατος καὶ τοῖς οὐ παροῦσιν ἀπο-  
φέρουσι.

66. Καὶ ἡ τροφή αὕτη καλεῖται παρ' ἡμῖν εὐχαριστία, ἥς  
 οὐδενὶ ἄλλῳ μετασχεῖν ἐξόν ἐστιν, ἢ τῷ πιστεύ-  
 25 οντι ἀληθῆ εἶναι τὰ δεδιδαγμένα ὑφ' ἡμῶν καὶ  
 λουσαμένων τὸ ὑπὲρ ἀφέσεως ἁμαρτιῶν καὶ εἰς ἀναγέννησιν  
 30 λουτρὸν καὶ οὕτως βιοῦντι ὡς ὁ Χριστὸς παρέδωκεν. Οὐ  
 γὰρ ὡς κοινὸν ἄρτον οὐδὲ κοινὸν πύμα ταῦτα λαμβάνομεν,  
 ἀλλ' ὅν τρύπον διὰ λόγου Θεοῦ σαρκοποιηθεὶς Ἰησοῦς  
 Χριστὸς ὁ σωτὴρ ἡμῶν καὶ σάρκα καὶ αἷμα ὑπὲρ σωτηρίας  
 ἡμῶν ἔσχεν, οὕτως καὶ τὴν δι' εὐχῆς λόγου τοῦ παρ' αὐτοῦ

εὐχαριστηθεῖσαν τροφήν, ἐξ ἧς αἷμα καὶ σάρκες κατὰ μετα- 10  
βολὴν τρέφονται ἡμῶν, ἐκείνου τοῦ σαρκοποιηθέντος Ἰησοῦ  
καὶ σάρκα καὶ αἷμα ἐδιδάχθημεν εἶναι. Οἱ γὰρ ἀπόστολοι  
ἐν τοῖς γενομένοις ὑπ' αὐτῶν ἀπομνημονεύμασιν, ἃ καλεῖται  
εὐαγγέλια, οὕτως παρέδωκαν ἐντετάλλαι αὐτοῖς· τὸν Ἰη-  
σοῦν λαβύντα ἄρτον εὐχαριστήσαντα εἰπεῖν· Τοῦτο ποιεῖτε 15  
εἰς τὴν ἀνάμνησίν μου, τουτό ἐστι τὸ σῶμά μου· καὶ τὸ  
ποτήριον ὁμοίως λαβύντα καὶ εὐχαριστήσαντα εἰπεῖν·  
Τοῦτό ἐστι τὸ αἷμά μου· καὶ μόνοις αὐτοῖς μεταδοῦναι.  
Ὅπερ καὶ ἐν τοῖς τοῦ Μίττρα μυστηρίοις παρέδωκεν γίνε-  
σθαι μιμησάμενοι οἱ πονηροὶ δαίμονες· ὅτι γὰρ ἄρτος καὶ 20  
ποτήριον ὕδατος τίθεται ἐν ταῖς τοῦ μνουμένου τελεταῖς  
μετ' ἐπιλύγων τινῶν, ἢ ἐπίστασθε ἢ μαθεῖν δύνασθε.

67. Ἡμεῖς δὲ μετὰ ταῦτα λοιπὸν ἀεὶ τούτων ἀλλήλους  
ἀναμνησκόμεν· καὶ οἱ ἔχοντες τοῖς λειπομέ-  
νοις πᾶσιν ἐπικουροῦμεν, καὶ σύνεσμεν ἀλλήλοις  
αἰεὶ. Ἐπὶ πᾶσί τε οἷς προσφερόμεθα εὐλογοῦμεν τὸν ποιη-  
τὴν τῶν πάντων διὰ τοῦ υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ διὰ 5  
πνεύματος τοῦ ἁγίου. Καὶ τῇ τοῦ ἡλίου λεγομένη ἡμέρᾳ  
πάντων κατὰ πόλεις ἢ ἀγροὺς μενόντων ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ συνέ-  
λευσις γίνεται, καὶ τὰ ἀπομνημονεύματα τῶν ἀποστόλων  
ἢ τὰ συγγράμματα τῶν προφητῶν ἀναγινώσκεται μέχρις  
ἐγχωρῇ. Εἴτα παυσάμενου τοῦ ἀναγινώσκοντος ὁ προε- 10  
στὼς διὰ λόγου τὴν νουθεσίαν καὶ πρόκλησιν τῆς τῶν κα-  
λῶν τούτων μιμήσεως ποιεῖται. Ἐπειτα ἀνιστάμεθα κοινῇ  
πάντες καὶ εὐχὰς πέμπομεν. Καί, ὡς προέφημεν, παυσα-  
μένων ἡμῶν τῆς εὐχῆς ἄρτος προσφέρεται καὶ οἶνος καὶ  
ὑδωρ, καὶ ὁ προεστὼς εὐχὰς ὁμοίως καὶ εὐχαριστίας, 15  
δύναμις αὐτῷ, ἀναπέμπει καὶ ὁ λαὸς ἐπευφημεῖ λέγων τὸ



ἀμὴν· καὶ ἡ διάδοσις καὶ ἡ μετάληψις ἀπὸ τῶν εὐχαριστη-  
 ζέντων ἐκάστῳ γίνεται καὶ τοῖς οὐ παροῦσι διὰ τῶν διακό-  
 νων πέμπεται. Οἱ εὐποροῦντες δὲ καὶ βουλόμενοι κατὰ  
 20 προαίρεσιν ἕκαστος τὴν ἑαυτοῦ ὁ βούλεται δίδωσι, καὶ τὸ  
 συλλεγόμενον παρὰ τῷ προεστῶτι ἀποτίθεται, καὶ αὐτὸς  
 ἐπικουρεῖ ὀρφανοῖς τε καὶ χήραις, καὶ τοῖς διὰ νόσον ἢ δι'  
 ἄλλην αἰτίαν λειπομένοις, καὶ τοῖς ἐν δεσμοῖς οὔσι, καὶ  
 τοῖς παρεπιδήμοις οὔσι ξένοις, καὶ ἀπλῶς πᾶσι τοῖς ἐν  
 30 χρεῖα οὔσι κηδεμῶν γίνεται. Τὴν δὲ τοῦ ἡλίου ἡμέραν  
 κοινῇ πάντες τὴν συνέλευσιν ποιοῦμεθα, ἐπειδὴ πρώτη  
 ἐστὶν ἡμέρα, ἐν ᾗ ὁ θεὸς τὸ σκότος καὶ τὴν ὕλην τρέψας  
 κόσμον ἐποίησε, καὶ Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ὁ ἡμέτερος σωτὴρ τῇ  
 αὐτῇ ἡμέρᾳ ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀνέστη· τῇ γὰρ πρὸ τῆς κρονικῆς  
 40 ἐσταύρωσαν αὐτὸν καὶ τῇ μετὰ τὴν κρονικὴν, ἥτις ἐστὶν  
 ἡλίου ἡμέρα, φανεῖς τοῖς ἀποστόλοις αὐτοῦ καὶ μαθηταῖς  
 ἐδίδαξε ταῦτα ἅπερ εἰς ἐπίσκεψιν καὶ ὑμῖν ἀνεδώκαμεν.

68. Καὶ εἰ μὲν δοκεῖ ὑμῖν λόγου καὶ ἀληθείας ἔχεισθαι,  
 Conclusion. τιμήσατε αὐτά, εἰ δὲ λῆρος ὑμῖν δοκεῖ, ὡς ληρω-  
 δῶν πραγμάτων καταφρονήσατε, καὶ μὴ ὡς κατ'  
 ἐχθρῶν κατὰ τῶν μηδὲν ἀδικούντων θάνατον ὀρίζετε.

5 Προλέγομεν γὰρ ὑμῖν, ὅτι οὐκ ἐκφύξεσθε τὴν ἐσομένην  
 τοῦ θεοῦ κρίσιν, ἐὰν ἐπιμένητε τῇ ἀδικίᾳ· καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐπι-  
 βοήσομεν· Ὁ φίλον τῷ θεῷ, τοῦτο γενέσθω. Καὶ ἐξ  
 ἐπιστολῆς δὲ τοῦ μεγίστου καὶ ἐπιφανεστάτου Καίσαρος  
Ἀδριανοῦ τοῦ πατρὸς ὑμῶν ἔχοντες ἀπαιτεῖν ὑμᾶς κατὰ  
 10 ἡξιώσαμεν κελεῦσαι τὰς κρίσεις γενέσθαι, οὐκ ἐκ τοῦ κεκρί-  
 σθαι τοῦτο ὑπὸ Ἀδριανοῦ μάλλον ἡξιώσαμεν, ἀλλ' ἐκ τοῦ  
 ἐπίστασθαι δίκαια ἀξιῶν τὴν προσφώνησιν καὶ ἐξήγησιν  
 πεποιήμεθα. Ὑπετάξαμεν δὲ καὶ τῆς ἐπιστολῆς Ἀδριανοῦ

τὸ ἀντίγραφον, ἵνα καὶ κατὰ τοῦτο ἀληθεύειν ἡμᾶς γνω-  
ρίζητε. Καὶ ἔστι τὸ ἀντίγραφον τοῦτο ·

15

Hadrianus Minucio Fun-  
dano.

Μινουκίῳ Φουνδανῷ.

Accepi litteras ad me  
scriptas a decessore tuo  
Serenio Graniano clarissi-  
mo viro: et non placet  
mihi relationem silentio  
praeterire, ne et innoxii  
perturbentur et calumni-  
atoribus latrocinandi tri-  
buatur occasio. Itaque si  
evidenter provinciales huic  
petitioni suae adesse valent  
adversum Christianos, ut  
pro tribunali eos in aliquo  
arguant, hoc eis exequi  
non prohibeo: precibus au-  
tem in hoc solis et adcla-  
mationibus uti, eis non  
permitto. Etenim multo  
aequius est, si quis volet  
accusare, te cognoscere de  
objectis. Si quis igitur  
accusat et probat adver-  
sum leges quicquam agere  
memoratos homines, pro

Ἐπιστολὴν ἐδεξάμην γρα-  
φεϊσάν μοι ἀπὸ Σερηνίου  
Γρανιανοῦ λαμπροτάτου ἀν-  
δρός, ὅντινα σὺ διεδέξω.  
Οὐ δοκεῖ οὖν μοι τὸ πρᾶγ-  
μα ἀζήτητον καταλιπεῖν,  
ἵνα μή τε οἱ ἄνθρωποι  
ταράττωνται καὶ τοῖς συ-  
κοφάνταις χορηγία κακουρ-  
γίας παρασχεῖται. Ἄν οὖν  
σαφῶς εἰς ταύτην τὴν  
ἀξίωσιν οἱ ἐπαρχιωταὶ δύ-  
νωνται δι᾽ ἰσχυρίζεσθαι κατὰ  
τῶν Χριστιανῶν, ὥς καὶ  
πρὸ βήματος ἀποκρίνεσθαι,  
ἐπὶ τοῦτο μόνον τραπῶσιν,  
ἀλλ' οὐκ ἀξιώσειεν οὐδέ  
μόναις βροαῖς. Πολλῇ γάρ  
μᾶλλον προσῆκον, εἴ τις  
κατηγορεῖν βούλοιτο, τοῦτό  
σε διαγινώσκειν. Εἴ τις  
οὖν κατηγορεῖ καὶ δείκνυσί  
τι παρὰ τοὺς νόμους πράτ-  
τοντας, οὕτως διόριζε κατὰ

20

25

30

35

40

merito peccatorum etiam τὴν δύναμιν τοῦ ἁμαρτή-  
supplicia statues. Illud me- ματος. Ὡς μὰ τὸν Ἡρα-  
hercle magnopere curabis, κλέα, εἴ τις συκοφαντίας  
ut si quis calumniae gratia χάριν τοῦτο προτεῖνοι, δι-  
quenquam horum postula- αλάμβανε ὑπὲρ τῆς δεινό-  
verit reum, in hunc pro sua τητος, καὶ φρόντιζε ὅπως  
nequitia suppliciis saeviori- ἂν ἐκδικήσας.  
bus vindices.

**ΤΟΥ ΑΥΤΟΥ ΙΟΥΣΤΙΝΟΥ**  
**ΑΠΟΛΟΓΙΑ ΔΕΥΤΕΡΑ ΥΠΕΡ ΧΡΙΣΤΙΑΝΩΝ**  
**ΠΡΟΣ ΤΗΝ ΡΩΜΑΙΩΝ ΣΥΓΚΛΗΤΟΝ.**

1. Καὶ τὰ χθές τε καὶ πρόην ἐν τῇ πόλει ὑμῶν γενόμενα  
Introduction. ἐπὶ Οὐρβίκου, ὧ Ῥωμαῖοι, καὶ τὰ πανταχοῦ  
ὁμοίως ὑπὸ τῶν ἡγουμένων ἀλόγως πραττόμενα  
ἐξηνάγκασέ με ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν, ὁμοιοπαθῶν ὄντων καὶ ἀδελφῶν,  
κἂν ἀγνοῇτε καὶ μὴ ξέλητε διὰ τὴν δόξαν τῶν νομιζομένων  
ἀξιωματῶν, τὴν τῶνδε τῶν λόγων σύνταξιν ποιήσασθαι.  
Πανταχοῦ γάρ, ὅς ἂν σωφρονίζηται ὑπὸ πατρὸς ἢ γείτονος  
ἢ τέκνου ἢ φίλου ἢ ἀδελφοῦ ἢ ἀνδρός ἢ γυναικὸς κατ' ἑλ-  
λειψιν, χωρὶς τῶν πεισθέντων τοὺς ἀδίκους καὶ ἀκολάστους  
ἐν αἰωνίῳ πυρὶ κολασθήσεσθαι, τοὺς δ' ἐναρέτους καὶ ὁμοί-  
ως Χριστῷ βιώσαντας ἐν ἀπαθείᾳ συγγενήσεσθαι τῷ Θεῷ  
(λέγομεν δὲ τῶν γενομένων Χριστιανῶν), διὰ τὸ δυσμετά-  
σταν καὶ φιλήδονον καὶ δυσκίνητον πρὸς τὸ καλὸν ὁρμη-  
σαι, καὶ οἱ φαῦλοι δαίμονες, ἐχθραίνοντες ἡμῖν καὶ τοὺς  
τοιούτους δικαστὰς ἔχοντες ὑποχειρίους καὶ λατρεύοντας, 15  
ὥς οὖν ἄρχοντας δαιμονιῶντας, φονεύειν ἡμᾶς παρασκευά-  
ζουσιν. Ὅπως δὲ καὶ ἡ αἰτία τοῦ παντὸς γενομένου ἐπὶ  
Οὐρβίκου φανερά ὑμῖν γένηται, τὰ πεπραγμένα ἀπαγγελῶ.

2. Γυνή-τις συνεβίου ἀνδρὶ ἀκολασταίνοντι, ἀκολασταί-

νουσα καὶ αὐτὴ πρότερον. Ἐπεὶ δὲ τὰ τοῦ  
 ὕβρις. Χριστοῦ διδάγματα ἔγνω, ἰσωφρονίσῃ καὶ τὸν  
 ἄνδρα ὁμοίως σωφρονεῖν πείθειν ἐπειράτο, τὰ διδάγματα  
 ἀναφέρουσα, τὴν τε μέλλουσαν τοῖς οὐ σωφρόνως καὶ μετὰ  
 λόγου ὀρθοῦ βιοῦσιν ἔσεσθαι ἐν αἰωνίῳ πυρὶ κόλασιν ἀπ-  
 αγγέλλουσα. Ὁ δὲ ταῖς αὐταῖς ἀσελγείαις ἐπιμένων ἀλ-  
 λοτριάν διὰ τῶν πράξεων ἐποιεῖτο τὴν γαμετήν. Ἀσεβὲς  
 γὰρ ἡγουμένη τὸ λοιπὸν ἢ γυνὴ συγκατακλίνεσθαι ἀνδρί,  
 10 παρὰ τὸν τῆς φύσεως νόμον καὶ παρὰ τὸ δίκαιον πόρου  
ἡδονῆς ἐκ παντὸς πειρωμένην ποιεῖσθαι, τῆς συζυγίας  
 χωρισθῆναι ἐβουλήθη. Καὶ ἐπεὶ ἐξεδυσωπείτο ὑπὸ τῶν  
 αὐτῆς, ἔτι προσμένειν συμβουλευόντων, ὥς εἰς ἐλπίδα με-  
 ταβολῆς ἤξοντός ποτε τοῦ ἀνδρός, βιαζομένη ἑαυτὴν ἐπί-  
 15 μενεν. Ἐπειδὴ δὲ ὁ ταύτης ἀνὴρ εἰς τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν  
 πορευθεὶς χαλεπώτερα πράττειν ἀπηγγέλθη, ὅπως μὴ  
κοινωνὸς τῶν ἀδικημάτων καὶ ἀσεβημάτων γένηται, μέ-  
 νουσα ἐν τῇ συζυγίᾳ καὶ ὁμοδίαιτος καὶ ὁμόκοιτος γινομένη,  
 τὸ λεγόμενον παρ' ὑμῖν ῥεπούδιον δοῦσα ἐχωρίσθη. Ὁ δὲ  
 20 καλὸς ἀγαθὸς ταύτης ἀνὴρ, δέον αὐτὸν χαίρειν, ὅτι ἂ  
 πάλαι μετὰ τῶν ὑπηρετῶν καὶ τῶν μισθοφόρων εὐχερῶς  
 ἔπραττε, μέλαις χαίρουσα καὶ κακίᾳ πάσῃ, τούτων μὲν τῶν  
 πράξεων πέπαντο καὶ αὐτὸν τὰ αὐτὰ παύσασθαι πράττοντα  
 ἐβούλετο, μὴ βουλομένου ἀπαλλαγείσης κατηγορίαν πε-  
 25 ποιῆται, λέγων αὐτὴν Χριστιανὴν εἶναι. Καὶ ἡ μὲν βι-  
 βλίδιόν σοι τῷ αὐτοκράτορι ἀναδέδωκε, πρότερον συγχω-  
 ρηθῆναι αὐτῇ διοικήσασθαι τὰ ἑαυτῆς ἀξιούσα, ἔπειτα ἀπο-  
 λογήσασθαι περὶ τοῦ κατηγορήματος μετὰ τὴν τῶν πραγ-  
 μάτων αὐτῆς διοίκησιν. Καὶ συνεχώρησας τοῦτο. Ὁ δὲ  
 30 ταύτης ποτὲ ἀνὴρ, πρὸς ἐκείνην μὲν μὴ δυνάμενος τανῦν

ἔτι λέγειν, πρὸς Πτολεμαῖόν τινα, ὃν Οὐρβικός ἐκολάσατο, διδάσκαλον ἐκείνης τῶν Χριστιανῶν μαθημάτων γενόμενον, ἐτράπετο διὰ τοῦδε τοῦ τρόπου. Ἐκατόνταρχον εἰς δεσμὰ ἐμβαλόντα τὸν Πτολεμαῖον, φίλον αὐτῷ ὑπάρχοντα, ἔπεισε λαβέσθαι τοῦ Πτολεμαίου καὶ ἀνερωτῆσαι αὐτὸ τοῦτο μόνον εἰ Χριστιανός ἐστι. Καὶ τὸν Πτολεμαῖον, φιλαλήτην, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἀπατηλὸν οὐδὲ ψευδολόγον τὴν γνώμην ὄντα, ὁμολογήσαντα ἑαυτὸν εἶναι Χριστιανὸν ἐν δεσμοῖς γενέσθαι ὁ ἐκατόνταρχος πεποίθηκε, καὶ ἐπὶ πολὺν χρόνον ἐν τῇ δεσμοτηρίῳ ἐκολάσατο. Τελευταῖον δὲ ὅτε ἐπὶ Οὐρβικόν 40 ἦρχε ὁ ἄνθρωπος, ὁμοίως αὐτὸ τοῦτο μόνον ἐξητάσθη εἰ εἶη Χριστιανός. Καὶ πάλιν τὰ καλὰ ἑαυτῷ συνεπιστάμενος διὰ τὴν ἀπὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδαχὴν τὸ διδασκάλιον τῆς θείας ἀρετῆς ὁμολόγησεν· ὁ γὰρ ἀρνούμενος ὅτι οὐκ ἦ κατεγνωκὼς τοῦ πράγματος ἕξαρνος γίνεται ἢ ἑαυτὸν ἀνάξιον 45 ἐπιστάμενος καὶ ἀλλότριον τοῦ πράγματος τὴν ὁμολογίαν φεύγει, ὣν οὐδὲν πρόσεστι τῇ ἀληθινῇ Χριστιανῇ. Καὶ τοῦ Οὐρβίκου κελεύσαντος αὐτὸν ἀπαχθῆναι Λούκιός τις, καὶ αὐτὸς ὣν Χριστιανός, ὅρων τὴν ἀλόγως οὕτως γενομένην κρίσιν πρὸς τὸν Οὐρβικόν ἔφη· Τίς ἡ αἰτία; Τοῦ ζῆλον 50 μίητε μοιχὸν μίητε πόρνον μίητε ἀνδροφύνον μίητε λωποδύτην μίητε ἄρπαγα μίητε ἀπλῶς ἀδίκημά τι πράξαντα ἐλεγχόμενον, ὀνόματος δὲ Χριστιανοῦ προσωφυμίαν ὁμολογοῦντα τὸν ἄνθρωπον τοῦτον ἐκολάσω; Οὐ πρέποντα εὐσεβεῖ αὐτοκράτuri οὐδὲ φιλοσόφῳ Καίσαρος παιδὶ οὐδὲ τῇ ἱερᾷ 55 συγκλήτῳ κρίνεις, ὦ Οὐρβικε. Καὶ ὅς οὐδὲν ἄλλο ἀποκρινάμενος καὶ πρὸς τὸν Λούκιον ἔφη· Δοκίς μοι καὶ σὺ εἶναι τοιοῦτος. Καὶ τοῦ Λουκίου φήσαντος Μάλιστα, πάλιν καὶ αὐτὸν ἀπαχθῆναι ἐκέλευσεν. Ὁ δὲ καὶ χάριν

οὐκ εἰδέναι ὁμολόγει, πονηρῶν δεσποτῶν τῶν τοιούτων ἀπηλ-  
 λάχθαι γινώσκων καὶ πρὸς τὸν πατέρα καὶ βασιλέα τῶν  
 οὐρανῶν πορεύεσθαι. Καὶ ἄλλος δὲ τρίτος ἐπελθὼν κο-  
 λασθῆναι προσετιμήθη.

3. Καὶ γὰρ οὖν προσδοκῶ ὑπὸ τινος τῶν ὠνομασμένων  
 ἐπιβουλευθῆναι καὶ ξύλῳ ἐμπαγῆναι, ἢ κἂν ὑπὸ  
 Justin and  
 Crescentia. Κρίσκεντος τοῦ φιλοσόφου καὶ φιλοκόμπου.

Οὐ γὰρ φιλόσοφον εἰπεῖν ἄξιον τὸν ἄνδρα, ὃς γε περὶ  
 5 ἡμῶν ἂ μὴ ἐπίσταται δημοσίᾳ καταμαρτυρεῖ, ὥς ἄξιον καὶ  
 ἀσεβῶν Χριστιανῶν ὕπνων, πρὸς χάριν καὶ ἡδονὴν τῶν  
 πολλῶν τῶν πεπλανημένων ταῦτα πράττων. Εἴτε γὰρ μὴ  
 ἐντυχὼν τοῖς τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδάγμασι κατατρέχει ἡμῶν,  
 παμπύνηρός ἐστι καὶ ιδιωτῶν πολὺ χείρων, οἱ φυλάττονται  
 10 πολλαῖς περὶ ὧν οὐκ ἐπίστανται διαλέγεσθαι καὶ ψευδο-  
 μαρτυρεῖν· ἢ εἰ ἐντυχὼν μὴ συνῆκε τὸ ἐν αὐτοῖς μεγαλεῖον,  
 ἢ συνεῖς πρὸς τὸ μὴ ὑποπτευθῆναι τοιοῦτος ταῦτα ποιεῖ,  
 πολὺ μᾶλλον ἀγεννῆς καὶ παμπύνηρος, ιδιωτικῆς καὶ ἀλό-  
 γου δόξης καὶ φόβου ἐλάττων ὢν. Καὶ γὰρ προξέντα με  
 15 καὶ ἐρωτήσαντα αὐτὸν ἐρωτήσεις τινὰς τοιαύτας καὶ μαθεῖν  
 καὶ ἐλέγχει ὅτι ἀληθῶς μηδὲν ἐπίσταται, εἰδέναι ὑμᾶς βού-  
 λομαι. Καὶ ὅτι ἀληθῆ λέγω, εἰ μὴ ἀνηνέχθησαν ὑμῖν αἱ  
 κοινωνίαι τῶν λόγων, ἔτοιμος καὶ ἐφ' ὑμῶν κοινωνεῖν τῶν  
 ἐρωτήσεων πάλιν· βασιλικὸν δ' ἂν καὶ τοῦτο ἔργον εἴη.  
 20 Εἰ δὲ καὶ ἐγνώσθησαν ὑμῖν αἱ ἐρωτήσεις μου καὶ αἱ ἐκείνου  
 ἀποκρίσεις, φανερὸν ὑμῖν ἐστίν ὅτι οὐδὲν τῶν ἡμετέρων  
 ἐπίσταται, ἢ εἰ καὶ ἐπίσταται, διὰ τοὺς ἀκούοντας δὲ οὐ  
 τολμᾷ λέγειν ὁμοίως Σωκράτει, ὥς προέφην, ὃν φιλόσοφος,  
 ἀλλὰ φιλόδοξος ἀνὴρ δείκνυται, ὅς γε μηδὲ τὸ Σωκρατικὸν  
 25 ἀξιόραστον ὄν τιμᾷ· Ἄλλ' οὐτι γὰρ πρὸ τῆς ἀληθείας τιμη-

τέος ἀνὴρ. Ἀδύνατον δὲ Κυνικῶν, ἀδιάφορον τὸ τέλος προϋεμένῳ, τὸ ἀγαθὸν εἶδέναι πλὴν ἀδιαφορίας.

4. Ὅπως δὲ μή τις εἴπῃ· Πάντες οὖν ἑαυτοὺς φονεύσαντες πορεύεσθε ἤδη παρὰ τὸν Θεὸν καὶ ἡμῖν  
Why Christians do not kill themselves. πράγματα μὴ παρέχετε, ἐρῶ, δι' ἣν αἰτίαν τοῦτο οὐ πράττομεν καὶ δι' ἣν ἐξεταζόμενοι ἀφύβως ὁμολογοῦμεν. Οὐκ εἰκὴ τὸν κόσμον πεποιηκέναι τὸν Θεὸν δειδιδάγμεθα, ἀλλ' ἡ διὰ τὸ ἀνθρώπειον γένος· χαίρειν τε τοῖς τὰ προσόντα αὐτῷ μιμουμένοις προέφημεν, ἀπαρέσκεισθαι δὲ τοῖς τὰ φαῦλα ἀσπαζομένοις ἢ λόγῳ ἢ ἔργῳ. Εἰ οὖν πάντες ἑαυτοὺς φονεύσομεν, τοῦ μὴ γεννησθῆναι τινα καὶ μασητησθῆναι εἰς τὰ Θεῷ διδάγματα, ἢ καὶ μὴ εἶναι τοῦ ἀνθρώπειον γένος, ὅσον ἐφ' ἡμῖν, αἴτιοι ἐσόμεθα, ἐναντίον τῷ τοῦ Θεοῦ βουλῇ καὶ αὐτοὶ ποιοῦντες, ἐὰν τοῦτο πράττωμεν. Ἐξεταζόμενοι δὲ οὐκ ἀρνούμεθα διὰ τὸ συνεπίστασθαι ἑαυτοῖς μηδὲν φαῦλον, ἀσεβῆς δὲ ἡγούμενοι μὴ κατὰ πάντα ἀληθεύειν, ὃ καὶ φίλον τῷ Θεῷ γινώσκουμεν, 15 ὑμᾶς δὲ καὶ τῆς ἀδίκου προλήψεως ἀπαλλάξαι νῦν σπεύδοντες.

5. Εἰ δέ τινα ὑπέλθοι καὶ ἡ ἔννοια αὕτη, ὅτι εἰ Θεὸν  
Why men are in trouble. The evil spirits. ὁμολογοῦμεν βοηθόν, οὐκ ἄν, ὥς λέγομεν, ὑπὸ ἀδίκων ἐκρατούμεθα καὶ ἐτιμωρούμεθα, καὶ τοῦτο διαλύσω. Ὁ Θεὸς τὸν πάντα κόσμον ποιήσας καὶ τὰ ἐπίγεια ἀνθρώποις ὑποτάξας καὶ τὰ οὐράνια στοι- 5 χεῖα εἰς αὐξῆσιν καρπῶν καὶ ὥρων μεταβολὰς κοσμήσας καὶ Θεῖον τούτοις νόμον τάξας, ἃ καὶ αὐτὰ δι' ἀνθρώπους φαίνεται πεποιηκώς, τὴν μὲν τῶν ἀνθρώπων καὶ τῶν ὑπὸ τὸν οὐρανὸν πρόνοιαν ἀγγέλοις, οὓς ἐπὶ τούτοις ἔταξε, παρέδωκεν. Οἱ δ' ἄγγελοι, παραβάντες τὴνδε τὴν τάξιν, 10



γυναικῶν μίξειςιν ἡττήθησαν καὶ παῖδας ἐτέκνωσαν, οἳ  
 εἰσιν οἱ λεγόμενοι δαίμονες. Καὶ προσέτι λοιπὸν τὸ ἀν-  
 θρώπιον γένος ἑαυτοῖς ἐδούλωσαν τὰ μὲν διὰ μαγικῶν  
 γραφῶν, τὰ δὲ διὰ φύβων καὶ τιμωριῶν ὧν ἐπέφερον, τὰ  
 15 δὲ διὰ διδαχῆς θυμάτων καὶ θυμαμάτων καὶ σπονδῶν, ὧν  
 ἐνδεεῖς γεγύνασι μετὰ τὸ πάξαι ἐπιθυμῶν δουλωθῆναι,  
 καὶ εἰς ἀνθρώπους φόνους, πολέμους, μοιχείας, ἀκολασίας  
 καὶ πᾶσαν κακίαν ἔσπειραν. Ὅθεν καὶ ποιηταὶ καὶ μυθο-  
 λόγοι, ἀγνοοῦντες τοὺς ἀγγέλους καὶ τοὺς ἐξ αὐτῶν γεν-  
 20 νηθέντας δαίμονας ταῦτα πράξαι εἰς ἄρρενας καὶ θηλείας  
 καὶ πόλεις καὶ ἔθνη, ἅπερ συνέγραψαν, εἰς αὐτὸν τὸν θεὸν  
 καὶ τοὺς ὡς ἀπ' αὐτοῦ σπορᾷ γενομένους υἱοὺς καὶ τῶν  
 λεχθέντων ἐκείνου ἀδελφῶν καὶ τέκνων ὁμοίως τῶν ἀπ'  
 ἐκείνων Ποσειδῶνος καὶ Πλούτωνος ἀνήνεγκαν. Ὅνό-  
 25 ματι γὰρ ἕκαστον, ὅπερ ἕκαστος ἑαυτῷ τῶν ἀγγέλων καὶ  
 τοῖς τέκνοις ἔδειτο, προσηγύρευσαν.

6. Ὅνομα δὲ τῷ πάντων πατρὶ θεόν, ἀγεννήτῳ ὄντι,  
 οὐκ ἔστιν· ὃ γὰρ ἂν καὶ ὀνόματί τι προσαγο-  
 30 ρεῖται, πρεσβύτερον ἔχει τὸν θέμενον τὸ ὄνο-  
 μα. Τὸ δὲ πατὴρ καὶ θεὸς καὶ κτίστης καὶ κύριος καὶ δε-  
35 σπότης οὐκ ὀνόματά ἐστιν, ἀλλ' ἐκ τῶν εὐποιῶν καὶ τῶν  
ἔργων προσήσεις. Ὁ δὲ υἱὸς ἐκείνου, ὁ μόνος λεγόμενος  
 κυρίως υἱός, ὁ λόγος πρὸ τῶν ποιημάτων καὶ συνῶν καὶ  
 γεννώμενος, ὅτε τὴν ἀρχὴν δι' αὐτοῦ πάντα ἔκτισε καὶ ἐκό-  
 σμησε, Χριστὸς μὲν κατὰ τὸ καὶ χρῖσθαι καὶ κοσμήσαι τὰ  
 10 πάντα δι' αὐτοῦ τὸν θεὸν λέγεται, ὄνομα καὶ αὐτὸ περιέχον  
 ἄγνωστον σημασίαν, ὃν τρόπον καὶ τὸ θεὸς προσαγόρευμα  
 οὐκ ὄνομά ἐστιν, ἀλλὰ πράγματος δυσεξηγήτου ἔμφυτος  
 τῇ φύσει τῶν ἀνθρώπων δόξα. Ἰησοῦς δὲ καὶ ἀνθρώπου

Names of God  
 and of Christ.

καὶ σωτῆρος ὄνομα καὶ σημασίαν ἔχει. Καὶ γὰρ καὶ ἄν-  
 ἄθρωπος, ὡς προέφημεν, γέγονε κατὰ τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ πα- 15  
 τρὸς βουλὴν ἀποκυθεὶς ὑπὲρ τῶν πιστευόντων ἀνθρώ-  
 πων καὶ ἐπὶ καταλύσει τῶν δαιμόνων, ὡς καὶ νῦν ἐκ τῶν  
 ὑπ' ὄψιν γινομένων μαθεῖν δύνασθε. Δαιμονιολήπτους γὰρ  
 πολλοὺς κατὰ πάντα τὸν κόσμον καὶ ἐν τῇ ἡμετέρᾳ πόλει  
 πολλοὶ τῶν ἡμετέρων ἀνθρώπων τῶν Χριστιανῶν, ἐπορ- 20  
 κίζοντες κατὰ τοῦ ὀνόματος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ σταυρω-  
 θέντος ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου, ὑπὸ τῶν ἄλλων πάντων  
 ἐπορκιστῶν καὶ ἐπαστῶν καὶ φαρμακευτῶν μὴ ἰαζέντας ἰά-  
 σαντο καὶ ἔτι νῦν ἰῶνται, καταργοῦντες καὶ ἐκδιώκοντες  
 τοὺς κατέχοντας τοὺς ἀνθρώπους δαίμονας. 25

7. Ὅθεν καὶ ἐπιμένει ὁ Θεὸς τὴν σύγχυσιν καὶ κατάλυσιν  
 τοῦ παντὸς κόσμου μὴ ποιῆσαι, ἵνα καὶ οἱ φαῦ-  
The world pre-  
served for the  
sake of Chris-  
tians. τοι ἄγγελοι καὶ δαίμονες καὶ ἄνθρωποι μηκέτι  
 ὦσι, διὰ τὸ σπέρμα τῶν Χριστιανῶν, ὃ γινώσκει ἐν τῇ φύ-  
 σει ὅτι αἰτιόν ἐστιν. Ἐπεὶ εἰ μὴ τοῦτο ἦν, οὐκ ἂν οὐδὲ 5  
 ὑμῖν ταῦτα ἔτι ποιεῖν καὶ ἐνεργεῖσθαι ὑπὸ τῶν φαύλων  
 δαιμόνων δυνατόν ἦν, ἀλλὰ τὸ πῦρ τὸ τῆς κρίσεως κατελ-  
 ζὺν ἀνέδην πάντα διέκρινεν, ὡς καὶ πρότερον ὁ κατακλυ-  
 σμὸς μηδένα λιπὼν ἀλλ' ἢ τὸν μόνον σὺν τοῖς ἰδίοις παρ'  
 ἡμῖν καλούμενον Νῶε, παρ' ὑμῖν δὲ Δευκαλίωνα, ἐξ οὗ πά- 10  
 λιν οἱ τοσοῦτοι γεγόνασιν, ὧν οἱ μὲν φαῦλοι, οἱ δὲ σπου-  
 δαῖοι. Οὕτω γὰρ ἡμεῖς τὴν ἐκπύρωσίν φαμεν γενήσεσθαι,  
 ἀλλ' οὐχ, ὡς οἱ Στωϊκοί, κατὰ τὸν τῆς εἰς ἄλληλα πάντων  
 μεταβολῆς λόγον, ὃ αἰσχιστον ἐφάνη. Ἀλλ' οὐδὲ καὶ  
 εἰμαρμένην πράττειν τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἢ πάσχειν τὰ γινό- 15  
 μενα, ἀλλὰ κατὰ μὲν τὴν προαίρεσιν ἕκαστον κατορθοῦν ἢ  
 ἁμαρτάνειν, καὶ κατὰ τὴν τῶν φαύλων δαιμόνων ἐνέργειαν

τοὺς σπουδαίους, οἷον Σωκράτην καὶ τοὺς ὁμοίους, διώ-  
 κεσθαι καὶ ἐν δεσμοῖς εἶναι, Σαρδανάπαλον δὲ καὶ Ἐπίκου-  
 20 ρον καὶ τοὺς ὁμοίους ἐν ἀφ᾽ οὐνίας καὶ δόξῃ δουκεῖν εὐδαιμο-  
 νεῖν. Ὁ μὴ νοήσαντες οἱ Στωϊκοὶ κατ' εἰμαρμένης ἀνάγκη  
 πάντα γίνεσθαι ἀπεφήναντο. Ἄλλ' ὅτι αὐτεξούσιον  
 τό τε τῶν ἀγγέλων γένος καὶ τῶν ἀνθρώπων τὴν ἀρχὴν  
 ἐποίησεν ὁ Θεός, δικαίως ὑπὲρ ὧν ἂν πλημμελήσωσι τὴν  
 25 τιμωρίαν ἐν αἰωνίῳ πυρὶ κομίσονται. Γεννητοῦ δὲ παντὸς  
 ἦδε ἡ φύσις, κακίας καὶ ἀρετῆς δεκτικὸν εἶναι· οὐ γὰρ ἂν  
 ἦν ἐπαινετὸν οὐδὲν αὐτῶν, εἰ οὐκ ἦν ἐπ' ἀμφοτέρα τρέπεσθαι  
 καὶ δύναμιν εἶχε. Δεικνύουσι δὲ τοῦτο καὶ οἱ πανταχοῦ  
 κατὰ λόγον τὸν ὁρῶν νομοθετήσαντες καὶ φιλοσοφήσαντες  
 30 ἄνθρωποι ἐκ τοῦ ὑπαγορεύειν τάδε μὲν πράττειν, τῶνδε δὲ  
 ἀπέχεσθαι. Καὶ οἱ Στωϊκοὶ φιλόσοφοι ἐν τῷ περὶ ἡθῶν  
 λόγῳ τὰ αὐτὰ τιμῶσι καρτερώς, ὥς δηλοῦσθαι ἐν τῷ περὶ  
 ἀρχῶν καὶ ἀσωμάτων λόγῳ οὐκ εὐδοῦν αὐτούς. Εἴτε  
 γὰρ κατ' εἰμαρμένην φήσουσι τὰ γινόμενα πρὸς ἀνθρώπων  
 35 γίνεσθαι, ἢ μηδὲν εἶναι θεὸν παρὰ τρεπόμενα καὶ ἀλλοιού-  
 μενα καὶ ἀναλνόμενα εἰς τὰ αὐτὰ αἰεὶ, ἢ φθαρτῶν μόνων  
 φανήσονται κατάληψιν ἐσχηκέναι καὶ αὐτὸν τὸν θεὸν διὰ τε  
 τῶν μερῶν καὶ διὰ τοῦ ὅλου ἐν πάσῃ κακίᾳ γινόμενον, ἢ  
 μηδὲν εἶναι κακίαν μηδ' ἀρετήν, ὑπὲρ καὶ παρὰ πᾶσαν σῶ-  
 40 φρονα ἔννοιαν καὶ λόγον καὶ νοῦν ἐστι.

8. Καὶ τοὺς ἀπὸ τῶν Στωϊκῶν δὲ δογμάτων, ἐπειδὴ καὶ  
 τὸν ἡθικὸν λόγον κόσμοι γεγόνασιν, ὥς καὶ ἔν  
 5 οἶδαμεν· τισιν οἱ ποιηταὶ διὰ τὸ ἔμφυτον παντὶ γένει ἀν-  
 θρώπων σπέρμα τοῦ λόγου, μεμισῆσθαι καὶ πεφονεῦσθαι  
 οἶδαμεν· Ἡράκλειτον μὲν, ὥς προέφημεν, καὶ Μουσῶνιον  
 δὲ ἐν τοῖς κατ' ἡμᾶς καὶ ἄλλους οἶδαμεν. Ὡς γὰρ ἐσημά-

The world  
 hates the bear-  
 ers of the seed.

ναμεν, πάντας τοὺς κἄν ὅπωςδὴποτε κατὰ λόγον βιοῦν σπουδάζοντας καὶ κακίαν φεύγειν μισεῖσθαι ἀεὶ ἐνήργησαν οἱ δαίμονες. Οὐδὲν δὲ θαυμαστόν, εἰ τοὺς οὐ κατὰ σπερματικοῦ λόγου μέρος, ἀλλὰ κατὰ τὴν τοῦ παντός λόγου, <sup>δ</sup> 10 ἐστὶ Χριστοῦ, γινῶσιν καὶ θεωρίαν πολὺν μᾶλλον μισεῖσθαι οἱ δαίμονες ἐλεγχόμενοι ἐνεργοῦσιν· οἱ τὴν ἀξίαν κόλασιν καὶ τιμωρίαν κομίσονται ἐν αἰωνίῳ πυρὶ ἐγκλεισζέμεντες. Εἰ γὰρ ὑπὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἤδη διὰ τοῦ ὀνόματος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ἡττῶνται, δίδαγμα ἐστὶ τῆς καὶ μελλούσης αὐτοῖς καὶ 15 τοῖς λατρεύουσιν αὐτοῖς ἐσομένης ἐν πυρὶ αἰωνίῳ κολάσεως. Οὕτως γὰρ καὶ οἱ προφῆται πάντες προεκήρυξαν γενήσεσθαι, καὶ Ἰησοῦς ὁ ἡμέτερος διδάσκαλος ἐδίδαξε.

9. Ἵνα δὲ μή τις εἴπῃ τὸ λεγόμενον ὑπὸ τῶν νομιζομένων φιλοσόφων, ὅτι κόμπτοι καὶ φόβητρά ἐστι <sup>Eternal punishment & necessity of God's existence.</sup> τὰ λεγόμενα ὑφ' ἡμῶν, ὅτι κολάζονται ἐν αἰωνίῳ πυρὶ οἱ ἄδικοι, καὶ διὰ φόβον ἀλλ' οὐ διὰ τὸ καλὸν εἶναι καὶ ἀρεστὸν ἐναρέτως βιοῦν τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἀξιούμεν, <sup>6</sup> βραχυεπῶς πρὸς τοῦτο ἀποκρινοῦμαι, ὅτι, εἰ μὴ τοῦτό ἐστιν, οὔτε ἐστὶ θεός, ἢ εἰ ἐστίν, οὐ μέλει αὐτῷ τῶν ἀνθρώπων, καὶ οὐδὲν ἐστίν ἀρετὴ οὐδὲ κακία, καί, ὥς προέφημεν, ἀδίκως τιμωροῦσιν οἱ νομοῖται τοὺς παραβαίνοντας τὰ διατεταγμένα καλά. Ἀλλ' ἐπεὶ οὐκ ἄδικοι ἐκεῖνοι καὶ ὁ αὐτῶν 10 πατήρ τὰ αὐτῷ πράττειν διὰ τοῦ λόγου διδάσκων, οἱ τούτοις συντιζέμενοι οὐκ ἄδικοι. Ἐὰν δέ τις τοὺς διαφόρους νόμους τῶν ἀνθρώπων προβάληται, λέγων ὅτι παρ' οἷς μὲν ἀνθρώποις τάδε καλά, τὰ δὲ αἰσχρὰ νενόμισται, παρ' ἄλλοις δὲ τὰ παρ' ἐκείνοις αἰσχρὰ καλά, καὶ τὰ καλὰ 15 αἰσχρὰ νομίζεται, ἀκούετω καὶ τῶν εἰς τοῦτο λεγομένων. Καὶ νόμους διατάξασθαι τῇ ἑαυτῶν κακίᾳ ὁμοίους τοὺς

πονηροὺς ἀγγέλους ἐπιστάμεθα, οἷς χαίρουσιν οἱ ὅμοιοι  
γενόμενοι ἄνθρωποι, καὶ ὁρῶντες λόγους παρελθόντων οὐ πάσας  
30 δόξας οὐδὲ πάντα δόγματα καλὰ ἀποδείκνυσιν, ἀλλὰ τὰ  
μὲν φαῦλα, τὰ δὲ ἀγαθὰ ὥστε μοι καὶ πρὸς τοὺς τοιού-  
τους τὰ αὐτὰ καὶ τὰ ὅμοια εἰρήσεται, καὶ λεχθήσεται διὰ  
πλειόνων ἢ ἐν κρίσει. Τανῦν δὲ ἐπὶ τὸ προκείμενον  
ἀνέρχομαι.

10. Μεγαλειότερα μὲν οὖν πάσης ἀνθρωπείου διδασκα-  
Comparison of *Christ with*  
Socrates. ὅλον τὸν φανέντα δι' ἡμᾶς Χριστὸν γεγονέναι,  
καὶ σῶμα καὶ λόγον καὶ ψυχὴν. Ὅσα γὰρ καλῶς αἰ  
5 ἐφθίγγαντο καὶ εὖρον οἱ φιλοσοφῆσαντες ἢ νομοθετήσαν-  
τες, κατὰ λόγου μέρος εὐρέσεως καὶ θεωρίας ἐστὶ πονηζέμενα  
αὐτοῖς. Ἐπειδὴ δὲ οὐ πάντα τὰ τοῦ λόγου ἐγνώρισαν, ὅς  
ἐστὶ Χριστός, καὶ ἐναντία ἑαυτοῖς πολλάκις εἶπον. Καὶ  
οἱ προγεγεννημένοι τοῦ Χριστοῦ κατὰ τὸ ἀνθρώπινον, λόγῳ  
10 πειραζέμενοι τὰ πράγματα θεωρῆσαι καὶ ἐλέγξαι, ὡς ἀσεβεῖς  
καὶ περιέργοι εἰς δικαστήρια ἤχθησαν. Ὁ πάντων δὲ αὐ-  
τῶν εὐτονώτερος πρὸς τοῦτο γενόμενος Σωκράτης τὰ αὐτὰ  
ἡμῖν ἐνεκλήθη· καὶ γὰρ ἔφασαν αὐτὸν καινὰ δαιμόνια εἰσ-  
φέρειν, καὶ οὐς ἡ πόλις νομίζει θεοὺς μὴ ἡγεῖσθαι αὐτόν.  
15 Ὁ δὲ δαίμονας μὲν τοὺς φαύλους καὶ τοὺς πράξαντας αἰ  
ἔφασαν οἱ ποιηταί, ἐκβαλὼν τῆς πολιτείας καὶ Ὅμηρον καὶ  
τοὺς ἄλλους ποιητάς, παραιτεῖσθαι τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἐξι-  
δαξε, πρὸς θεοῦ δὲ, τοῦ ἀγνώστου αὐτοῖς, διὰ λόγου ζητή-  
σεως ἐπίγνωσιν προὔτρεπετο εἰπὼν· Τὸν δὲ πατέρα καὶ  
20 δημιουργὸν πάντων οὐδ' εὐρεῖν ῥᾳδίον οὐδ' εὐρόντα εἰς  
πάντας εἰπεῖν ἀσφαλές. Ἄ ὁ ἡμέτερος Χριστὸς διὰ τῆς  
ἑαυτοῦ δυνάμεως ἔπραξε. Σωκράτει μὲν γὰρ οὐδεὶς ἐπέισθη

ὑπὲρ τούτου τοῦ δόγματος ἀποθνήσκειν, Χριστῷ δέ, τῷ καὶ ὑπὸ Σωκράτους ἀπὸ μέρους γνωσθέντι (λόγος γὰρ ἦν καὶ ἔστιν ὁ ἐν παντὶ ὢν, καὶ διὰ τῶν προφητῶν προειπὼν τὰς μέλλοντα γίνεσθαι καὶ δι' ἑαυτοῦ ὁμοιοπαθοῦς γενομένου καὶ διδάξαντος ταῦτα), οὐ φιλόσοφοι οὐδὲ φιλόλογοι μόνον ἐπέσκησαν, ἀλλὰ καὶ χειροτέχναι καὶ παντελῶς ἰδιῶται καὶ δόξης καὶ φύβου καὶ θανάτου καταφρονήσαντες· ἐπειδὴ δύναμις ἐστὶ τοῦ ἀρρήτου πατρὸς καὶ οὐχὶ ἀνθρώπου λόγου κατασκευή.

11. Οὐκ ἂν δὲ οὐδὲ ἐφονεύμεθα οὐδὲ δυνατώτεροι ἡμῶν ἦσαν οἱ τε ἄδικοι ἄνθρωποι καὶ δαίμονες, εἰ μὴ How Christians regard death. πάντως παντὶ γεννωμένῳ ἀνθρώπῳ καὶ θανεῖν ὠφέλιμο· ὅθεν καὶ τὸ ὄφλημα ἀποδιδόντες εὐχαριστοῦμεν. Καίτοι γε καὶ τὸ Ξενοφώντειον ἐκεῖνο νῦν ὁ πρὸς τε Κρίσκεντα καὶ τοὺς ὁμοίως αὐτῷ ἀφραίνοντας καλὸν καὶ εὐκαιρὸν εἰπεῖν ἡγούμεθα. Τὸν Ἡρακλῆα ἐπὶ τρίτοδόν τινα ἔφη ὁ Ξενοφῶν βαδίζοντα εὐρεῖν τήν τε Ἀρετὴν καὶ τὴν Κακίαν, ἐν γυναικῶν μορφαῖς φαινομένας. Καὶ τὴν μὲν Κακίαν, ἄβρᾳ ἐσῆτι καὶ ἐρωτοπεποιημένῳ καὶ 10 ἀνθρώπῳ ἐκ τῶν τοιούτων προσώπῳ, Ξελκτικὴν τε εὐζὺς πρὸς τὰς ὀφείας οὔσαν, εἰπεῖν πρὸς τὸν Ἡρακλῆα ὅτι, ἦν αὐτῇ ἔπηται, ἡδόμενόν τε καὶ κεκοσμημένον τῷ λαμπροτάτῳ καὶ ὁμοίῳ τῷ περὶ αὐτὴν κόσμῳ διαιτῆσειν αἰεὶ ποιήσει. Καὶ τὴν Ἀρετὴν ἐν αὐχμηρῷ μὲν τῷ προσώπῳ καὶ τῇ περι- 15 βολῇ οὔσαν εἰπεῖν· Ἀλλ' ἦν ἐμοὶ πείζῃ, οὐ κόσμῳ οὐδὲ κάλλει τῷ ρέοντι καὶ φθειρομένῳ ἑαυτὸν κοσμήσεις, ἀλλὰ τοῖς αἰδίοις καὶ καλοῖς κόσμοις. Καὶ πάντ' ὕντινον πεπείσμεθα φεύγοντα τὰ δοκοῦντα καλὰ, τὰ δὲ νομιζόμενα σκληρὰ καὶ ἄλογα μετερχόμενον εὐδαιμονίαν ἐκδέχεσθαι. 20

mi mi,

ὡν καταπεύουσι οὐ  
κατανοήσαντες

78

JUSTIN MARTYR.

Ἡ γὰρ κακία, πρὸβλημα ἑαυτῆς τῶν πράξεων τὰ προσύντα  
τῇ ἀρετῇ καὶ ὅντως ὄντα καλὰ διὰ μιμήσεως φθαρτῶν  
περιβαλλομένη (ἄφθαρτον γὰρ οὐδὲν ἔχει οὐδὲ ποιῆσαι  
δύναται), δουλαγωγεῖ τοὺς χαμαιπετεῖς τῶν ἀνθρώπων, τὰ  
προσύντα αὐτῇ φαῦλα τῇ ἀρετῇ περιδεῖσα. Οἱ δὲ νενοη-  
κότες τὰ προσύντα τῇ ὄντι καλὰ καὶ ἀφθαρτοὶ τῇ ἀρετῇ·  
ὁ καὶ περὶ Χριστιανῶν καὶ τῶν ἀπὸ τοῦ ἄξλου καὶ τῶν  
ἀνθρώπων τῶν τοιαῦτα πραξάντων, ὑποῖα ἔφασαν οἱ  
ποιηταὶ περὶ τῶν νομιζομένων θεῶν, ὑπολαβεῖν διὲ πάντα  
νονεχῇ, ἐκ τοῦ καὶ τοῦ φευκτοῦ καταφρονεῖν ἡμᾶς θανάτου  
λογισμὸν ἔλκοντα.

12. Καὶ γὰρ αὐτὸς ἐγώ, τοῖς Πλάτωνος χαίρων διδάγμα-  
σι, διαβαλλομένους ἀκούων Χριστιανούς,  
ὁρῶν δὲ ἀφόβους πρὸς θάνατον καὶ πάντα  
τὰ ἄλλα νομιζόμενα φοβερά, ἐνενόουν ἀδύνατον εἶναι ἐν  
κακίᾳ καὶ φιληδονίᾳ ὑπάρχειν αὐτούς. Τίς γὰρ φιλήδονος  
ἢ ἀκρατὴς καὶ ἀνθρωπίνων σαρκῶν βορὰν ἀγαθῶν ἡγού-  
μενος δύναται ἂν θάνατον ἀσπάζεσθαι, ὅπως τῶν αὐτοῦ  
ἀγαθῶν στερηθῇ, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἐκ παντὸς ζῆν μὲν αἰετὴν ἐν-  
θάδε βιοτήν καὶ λανθάνειν τοὺς ἄρχοντας ἐπειράτο, οὐχ  
ὅτι γε ἑαυτὸν κατήγγελλε φονευθησόμενον; Ἦδη καὶ τοῦτο  
ἐνήργησαν οἱ φαῦλοι δαίμονες διὰ τινων πονηρῶν ἀνθρώ-  
πων πραχθῆναι. Φονεύοντες γὰρ αὐτοὶ τινὰς ἐπὶ συκο-  
φαντίᾳ τῇ εἰς ἡμᾶς καὶ εἰς βασάνους εἴλκυσαν οἰκέτας τῶν  
ἡμετέρων ἢ παῖδας ἢ γυναῖκα, καὶ δι' αἰκισμῶν φοβερῶν  
ἐξαναγκάζουσι κατεπειν ταῦτα τὰ μυθολογούμενα, ἃ αὐτοὶ  
φανερῶς πράττουσιν· ὧν ἐπειδὴ οὐδὲν πρόσεστιν ἡμῖν, οὐ  
φροντίζομεν, θεὸν τὸν ἀγέννητον καὶ ἄρρητον μάρτυρα  
ἔχοντες τῶν τε λογισμῶν καὶ τῶν πράξεων. Τίνος γὰρ

χάριν οὐχὶ καὶ ταῦτα δημοσίᾳ ὁμολογοῦμεν ἀγαθὰ καὶ φιλοσοφίαν θεῖαν αὐτὰ ἀπεδείκνυμεν, φάσκοντες Κρόνου καὶ μὲν μυστήρια τελεῖν ἐν τῷ ἀνδροφονεῖν, καὶ ἐν τῷ αἵματος ἐμπίπλασσαι, ὡς λέγεται, τὰ ἴσα τῷ παρ' ὑμῖν τιμωμένῳ εἰδῶλῳ, ᾧ οὐ μόνον ἀλύγων ζώων αἵματα προσραίνετε, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀνθρώπεια, διὰ τοῦ παρ' ὑμῖν ἐπισημοτάτου καὶ εὐγενεστάτου ἀνδρὸς τὴν πρὸς χυσιν τοῦ τῶν φονευζέντων καὶ αἵματος ποιούμενοι, Διὸς δὲ καὶ τῶν ἄλλων θεῶν μιμηταὶ γινόμενοι ἐν τῷ ἀνδροβατεῖν καὶ γυναιξὶν ἀδεῶς μίγνυσθαι, Ἐπικούρου μὲν καὶ τὰ τῶν ποιητῶν συγγράμματα ἀπολογίαν φέροντες; Ἐπεὶ δὲ ταῦτα τὰ μαθήματα καὶ τοὺς ταῦτα πράξαντας καὶ μιμουμένους φεύγειν πείζομεν, ὡς καὶ καὶ νῦν διὰ τῶνδε τῶν λόγων ἠγωνίσμεθα, ποικίλως πολεμούμεθα· ἀλλ' οὐ φροντίζομεν, ἐπεὶ θεὸν τῶν πάντων ἐπόπτην δίκαιον οἰδᾶμεν. Εἴξε καὶ νῦν τις ἐν τραγικῇ φωνῇ ἀνέβόησεν ἐπὶ τι βῆμα ὑψηλὸν ἀναβάς· Αἰδέσθητε, αἰδέσθητε ἃ φανερώς πράττετε εἰς ἀναιτίους ἀναφέροντες, καὶ τὰ καὶ προσόντα καὶ ἑαυτοῖς καὶ τοῖς ὑμετέροις θεοῖς περιβάλλοντες τούτοις· ὧν οὐκ ἐν οὐδ' ἐπὶ ποσὺν μετουσία ἐστί. Μετάξεσθε, σωφρονίσθητε.

13. Καὶ γὰρ ἐγὼ μαζὼν περίβλημα πονηρὸν εἰς ἀπο-  
The Word has been in all men. στροφήν τῶν ἄλλων ἀνθρώπων περιτεθειμένον  
 ὑπὸ τῶν φαύλων δαιμόνων τοῖς Χριστιανῶν  
 θεοῖς διδάγμασι, καὶ ψευδολογουμένων ταῦτα καὶ τοῦ περιβλήματος κατεγέλασα καὶ τῆς παρὰ τοῖς πολλοῖς δόξης. 5  
 Χριστιανὸς εὐρεῖσθαι καὶ εὐχόμενος καὶ παμμάχως ἀγωνιζόμενος ὁμολογῶ οὐχ ὅτι ἀλλότριά ἐστι τὰ Πλάτωνος διδάγματα τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἀλλ' ὅτι οὐκ ἐστι πάντα ὅμοια, ὥστε οὐδὲ τὰ τῶν ἄλλων, Στωϊκῶν τε καὶ ποιητῶν καὶ  
 F



10 συγγραφίων. Ἐκαστος γάρ τις ἀπὸ μέρους τοῦ σπερμα-  
 τικοῦ Θείου λόγου τὸ συγγενὲς ὁρῶν καλῶς ἐφξέγξατο· οἱ  
 δὲ τάναντία αὐτοῖς ἐν κυριωτέροις εἰρηκύτες οὐκ ἐπιστήμην  
 τὴν ἀπ' αὐτῶν καὶ γινώσιν τὴν ἀνέλεγκτον φαίνονται  
 ἐσχηκέναι. Ὅσα οὖν παρὰ πᾶσι καλῶς εἴρηται, ἡμῶν τῶν  
 15 Χριστιανῶν ἐστὶ· τὸν γὰρ ἀπὸ ἀγεννήτου καὶ ἀρρήτου  
 Θεοῦ λόγον μετὰ τὸν Θεὸν προσκυνοῦμεν καὶ ἀγαπῶμεν,  
 ἐπειδὴ καὶ δι' ἡμᾶς ἄνθρωπος γέγονεν, ὅπως καὶ τῶν πα-  
 ρῶν τῶν ἡμετέρων συμμέτοχος γενόμενος καὶ ἴσιν ποιή-  
 σθαι. Οἱ γὰρ συγγραφεῖς πάντες διὰ τῆς ἐνούσης ἐμφύ-  
 20 του τοῦ λόγου σπορᾶς ἀμυδρῶς ἐδύναντο ὁρᾶν τὰ ὄντα.  
 Ἐτερον γάρ ἐστι σπέρμα τινὸς καὶ μίμημα κατὰ δύναμιν  
 δοξῆν καὶ ἕτερον αὐτὸ οὐ κατὰ χάριν τὴν ἀπ' ἐκείνου ἡ  
 μετουσία καὶ μίμησις γίνεται.

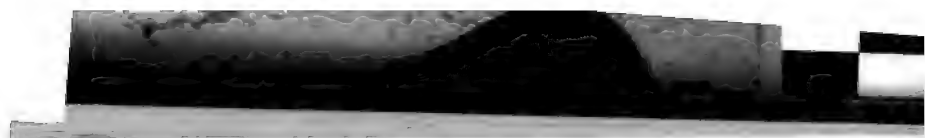
14. Καὶ ὑμᾶς οὖν ἀξιοῦμεν ὑπογράψαντας τὸ ὑμῖν δοκοῦν  
 Justin prays that  
 this appeal be  
 published. προδεῖναι τοῦτ' ὁ βιβλίδιον, ὅπως καὶ τοῖς  
 ἄλλοις τὰ ἡμέτερα γνωσθῇ καὶ δύνωνται τῆς  
 ψευδοδοξίας καὶ ἀγνοίας τῶν καλῶν ἀπαλλαγῆναι, οἱ παρὰ  
 5 τὴν ἑαυτῶν αἰτίαν ὑπεύθυνοι ταῖς τιμωρίαις γίνονται [εἰς  
 τὸ γνωσθῆναι τοῖς ἀνθρώποις ταῦτα], διὰ τὸ ἐν τῇ φύσει  
 τῇ τῶν ἀνθρώπων εἶναι τὸ γνωριστικὸν καλοῦ καὶ αἰσχροῦ,  
 καὶ διὰ τὸ ἡμῶν, οἷς οὐκ ἐπίστανται τοιαῦτα ὑποῖα λέγου-  
 σιν αἰσχρὰ καταψηφιζομένους, καὶ διὰ τὸ χαίρειν τοιαῦτα  
 10 πράξασι θεοῖς καὶ ἔτι νῦν ἀπαιτοῦσι παρὰ ἀνθρώπων τὰ  
 ὅμοια, ὡς ἐκ τοῦ καὶ ἡμῖν, ὡς τοιαῦτα πράττουσι, θάνατον  
 ἢ δεσμὰ ἢ ἄλλο τι τοιοῦτον προστιμᾶν ἑαυτοὺς κατακρίνειν,  
 ὡς μὴ δέεσθαι ἄλλων δικαστῶν.

15. Καὶ τοῦ ἐν τῷ ἐμῷ ἔξναι ἀσεβοῦς καὶ πλάνου Σιμω-  
 νιανοῦ διδάγματος κατεφρόνησα. Ἐὰν δὲ ὑμεῖς τοῦτο προ-

THE SECOND APOLOGY.

Conclusion. γράψετε, ἡμεῖς τοῖς πᾶσι φανερὸν ἂν ποιήσαιμι  
 ἵνα εἰ δύναιντο μεταδῶνται· τούτου γὰρ μόν  
 χάριν τοῖςδε τοῖς λόγους συνετάξαμεν. Οὐκ ἔστι δὲ ἡμῖν  
 τὰ διδάγματα κατὰ κρίσιν σώφρονα αἰσχροτά, ἀλλὰ πᾶς  
 μὲν φιλοσοφίας ἀνδρωπέου ὑπέρτερα· εἰ δὲ μή, κἂν Σι  
 ταδεῖοις καὶ Φιλαινιδεῖοις καὶ Ἀρχεστρατεῖοις καὶ Ἐπ  
 κουρείοις καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις τοῖς τοιούτοις ποιητικοῖς διδάγμ  
 σιν οὐχ ὅμοια, οἷς ἐντυχάνειν πᾶσι, καὶ λεγομένοις καὶ γ  
 γραμμένοις, συγκεχώρηται. Καὶ παυσόμεθα λοιπόν, ὅσ  
 ἐφ' ἡμῖν ἦν πράξαντες καὶ προσεπενεζόμενοι τῆς ἀληθείας  
 καταξιοδοῦναι τοὺς πάντες πάντας ἀνθρώπους. Εἴη οὖν κα  
 ὑμᾶς ἀξίως εὐσεβείας καὶ φιλοσοφίας τὰ δίκαια ὑπὲρ τα  
 τῶν κρίναι.

Εἰς τὴν ἐκδοκὴν τῆς ἀπολογίας  
 συνέταξε καὶ γράψαντος, ὡς καὶ  
 ἔστιν ἐν τῇ ἐκδοκῇ, ἀπὸ τοῦ  
 ἀποστολικοῦ ὁμοῦ. Εἰς τὴν ἐκδοκὴν  
 καὶ ἐκδοκῆς, ὡς καὶ ἔστιν ἐν  
 τῇ ἐκδοκῇ, ἀπὸ τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ  
 ὁμοῦ. Εἰς τὴν ἐκδοκὴν, ὡς καὶ  
 ἔστιν ἐν τῇ ἐκδοκῇ, ἀπὸ τοῦ  
 ἀποστολικοῦ ὁμοῦ. Εἰς τὴν ἐκδοκὴν,  
 ὡς καὶ ἔστιν ἐν τῇ ἐκδοκῇ, ἀπὸ  
 τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ ὁμοῦ.



## ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗ ΠΡΟΣ ΔΙΟΓΝΗΤΟΝ.

1. Ἐπειδὴ ὁρῶ, κράτιστε Διόγνητε, ὑπερσπουδακότα σε  
Introduction.  
The questions  
of Diogenes. τὴν θεοσέβειαν τῶν Χριστιανῶν μαθεῖν καὶ  
πάνυ σαφῶς καὶ ἐπιμελῶς πυνθανόμενον περὶ  
αὐτῶν, τίνοι τε θεῶ πεποιθότες καὶ πῶς ἑρσκειύοντες αὐ-  
τῶν, τὴν τε κύσμον ὑπερυπῶσι πάντες καὶ θανάτου κατα- 5  
φρονοῦσι, καὶ οὔτε τοὺς νομιζομένους ὑπὸ τῶν Ἑλλήνων  
θεοὺς λογίζονται οὔτε τὴν Ἰουδαίων δεισιδαιμονίαν φυλάσ-  
σουσι, καὶ τίνα τὴν φιλοστοργίαν ἔχουσι πρὸς ἀλλήλους,  
καὶ τί δὴ ποτε καίνυν τοῦτο γένος ἢ ἐπιτήδευμα εἰσῆλθεν  
εἰς τὸν βίον νῦν καὶ οὐ πρότερον, ἀποδέχομαι τε τῆς προ- 10  
θυμίας σε ταύτης, καὶ παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ, τοῦ καὶ τὸ λέγειν καὶ  
τὸ ἀκοῦειν ἡμῖν χορηγοῦντος, αἰτοῦμαι δοξῆναι ἐμοὶ μὲν  
εἰπεῖν οὕτως ὥς μάλιστα ἂν ἀκούσαντά σε βελτίω γενέ-  
σθαι, σοὶ δὲ οὕτως ἀκοῦσαι ὥς μὴ λυπηθῆναι τὸν εἰπόντα.
2. Ἄγε δὴ καθάρας σεαυτὸν ἀπὸ πάντων τῶν προκατε-  
The heathen  
world: the van-  
ity of its idols. χόντων σου τὴν διάνοιαν λογισμῶν, καὶ τὴν  
ἀπατῶσάν σε συνήθειαν ἀποσκευασάμενος, καὶ  
γενόμενος ὥσπερ ἐξ ἀρχῆς καινὸς ἄνθρωπος, ὥς ἂν καὶ  
λόγου καινοῦ, καθάπερ καὶ αὐτὸς ὡμολόγησας, ἀκροατῆς 5  
ἐσόμενος, ἴδε μὴ μόνον τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς ἀλλὰ καὶ τῇ φρο-  
νήσει τίνος ὑποστάσεως ἢ τίνος εἵδους τυγχάνουσιν οὐς

ἐρεῖτε καὶ νομίζετε Θεούς. Οὐχ ὁ μὲν τις λίθος ἐστὶν  
 ὁμοιος τῇ πατουμένῳ; ὁ δ' ἐστὶ χαλκὸς οὐ κρείσσων τῶν  
 10 εἰς τὴν χρῆσιν ἡμῖν κεχαλκευμένων σκευῶν, ὁ δὲ ξύλον  
 ἤδη καὶ σεσηπός, ὁ δὲ ἄργυρος χρήζων ἀνθρώπου τοῦ φυ-  
 λάξοντος ἵνα μὴ κλαπῇ, ὁ δὲ σίδηρος ὑπὸ τοῦ διεφθαρμέ-  
 νου, ὁ δὲ ὕστρακον οὐδὲν τοῦ κατεσκευασμένου πρὸς τὴν  
 ἀτιμοτάτην ὑπηρεσίαν εὐπρεπέστερον; Οὐ φθαρτῆς ὕλης  
 15 ταῦτα πάντα; Οὐχ ὑπὸ σιδήρου καὶ πυρὸς κεχαλκευμένα;  
 Οὐχ ὁ μὲν αὐτῶν λιθοξύος, ὁ δὲ χαλκεύς, ὁ δὲ ἀργυροκό-  
 πος, ὁ δὲ κεραμεὺς ἐπλασεν; Οὐ πρὶν ἢ ταῖς τέχναις τού-  
 των εἰς τὴν μορφήν τούτων ἐκτυπωθῆναι ἢν ἕκαστον αὐτῶν  
 ἐκάστω, ὥς ἔτι καὶ νῦν, μεταμεμορφωμένον; Οὐ τὰ νῦν  
 20 ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς ὕλης ὄντα σκεύη γένοιτ' ἂν, εἰ τύχοι τῶν αὐ-  
 τῶν τεχνιτῶν, ὅμοια τοιούτοις; Οὐ ταῦτα πάλιν τὰ νῦν ὑφ'  
 ὑμῶν προσκυνούμενα δύναιτ' ἂν ὑπὸ ἀνθρώπων σκεύη  
 ὅμοια γενέσθαι τοῖς λοιποῖς; Οὐ κωφὰ πάντα; Οὐ τυφλά;  
 Οὐκ ἄψυχα; Οὐκ ἀναίσθητα; Οὐκ ἀκίνητα; Οὐ πάντα ση-  
 25 πόμενα; Οὐ πάντα φθειρόμενα; Ταῦτα Θεοὺς καλεῖτε, τού-  
 τοις δουλεύετε, τούτοις προσκυνεῖτε· τέλειον δ' αὐτοῖς ἔξο-  
 μοῦσθε. Διὰ τοῦτο μισεῖτε Χριστιανοὺς ὅτι τούτους οὐχ  
 ἡγοῦνται Θεούς. Ὑμεῖς γάρ, οἱ νῦν νομίζοντες καὶ οἰόμε-  
 νοι, οὐ πολὺ πλεον αὐτῶν καταφρονεῖτε; Οὐ πολὺ μᾶλλον  
 30 αὐτοὺς χλευάζετε καὶ ὑβρίζετε, τοὺς μὲν λιθίνους καὶ  
 ὀστρακίνους σέβοντες ἀφυλάκτους, τοὺς δὲ ἀργυροὺς καὶ  
 χρυσοὺς ἐγκλείοντες ταῖς νυξί, καὶ ταῖς ἡμέραις φύλακας  
 παρακαδιστάντες, ἵνα μὴ κλαπῶσιν; Αἷς δὲ δοκεῖτε τιμαῖς  
 προσφέρειν, εἰ μὲν αἰσθάνονται, κολάζετε μᾶλλον αὐτούς·  
 35 εἰ δὲ ἀναίσθητοῦσιν, ἐλέγχοντες αἵματι καὶ κνίσαις αὐτοὺς  
 θρησκεύετε. Ταῦτ' ὑμῶν τις ὑπομεινάτω. Ταῦτα ἀνα-

σχέσω τις ἑαυτῷ γενέσθαι. Ἄλλα ἄνθρωπος μὲν οὐδὲ εἰς ταύτης τῆς κολάσεως ἐκὼν ἀνέξεται, αἰσθησιν γὰρ ἔχει καὶ λογισμὸν· ὁ δὲ λίθος ἀνέχεται, ἀναισθητὴ γάρ. Οὐκοῦν τὴν ἀναισθησίαν αὐτῶν ἐλέγχετε. Περὶ μὲν οὖν τοῦ 40 μὴ δεδουλώσθαι Χριστιανοὺς τοιοῦτοις θεοῖς πολλὰ μὲν ἂν καὶ ἄλλα εἰπῆν ἔχοιμι· εἰ δέ τιμι μὴ δοκοίη κἂν ταῦτα ἱκανά, περισσὸν ἡγοῦμαι καὶ τὸ πλείω λέγειν.

3. Ἐξῆς δὲ περὶ τοῦ μὴ κατὰ τὰ αὐτὰ Ἰουδαίους θεοσε-  
The Jews: their  
superstitious  
sacrifices. βεῖν αὐτοὺς οἶμαί σε μάλιστα ποιεῖν ἀκνῦσαι.  
 Ἰουδαῖοι τοίνυν, εἰ μὲν ἀπέχονται ταύτης τῆς  
 προειρημένης λατρείας καὶ θεὸν ἓνα τῶν πάντων σέβουσιν  
 δεσπότην ἄξιον, φρονοῦσιν· εἰ δὲ τοῖς προειρημένοις 5  
 ὁμοιοτρόπως τὴν ζρησκίαν προσάγουσιν αὐτῷ ταύτην,  
 διαμαρτάνουσιν. Ἄ γὰρ τοῖς ἀναισθήτοις καὶ κωφοῖς  
 προσφέροντες οἱ Ἕλληνες ἀφροσύνης δεῖγμα παρέχουσι,  
 ταῦθ' οὗτοι καθάπερ προσδεομένῳ τῷ θεῷ λογιζόμενοι πα-  
 ρέχειν μωρίαν εἰκύτως μᾶλλον ἡγοῦντ' ἢν, οὐ θεοσέβειαν. 10  
 Ὁ γὰρ ποιήσας τὸν οὐρανὸν καὶ τὴν γῆν καὶ πάντα τὰ ἐν  
 αὐτοῖς, καὶ πᾶσιν ἡμῖν χορηγῶν ὧν προσδεόμεθα, οὐδενὸς  
 ἂν αὐτὸς προσδέοιτο τούτων ὧν τοῖς οἰομένοις διδόναι πα-  
 ρέχει αὐτός. Οἱ δὲ γε θυσίας αὐτῷ δι' αἵματος καὶ κνίσσης  
 καὶ ὀλοκαυτωμάτων ἐπιτελεῖν οἰόμενοι, καὶ ταύταις ταῖς 15  
 τιμαῖς αὐτὸν γεραίρειν, οὐδὲν μοι δοκοῦσι διαφέρειν τῶν  
 εἰς τὰ κωφὰ τὴν αὐτὴν ἐνδεικνυμένων φιλοτιμίαν, τὰ μὴ  
 δυνάμενα τῆς τιμῆς μεταλαμβάνειν, τῷ γε δοκεῖν τινα  
 παρέχειν τῷ μηδεὶν προσδεομένῳ.

4. Ἄλλα μὴν τό γε περὶ τὰς βρώσεις αὐτῶν ψοφοδεῖς  
Their foolish  
rites, customs,  
and ceremonies. καὶ τὴν περὶ τὰ σάββατα δεισιδαιμονίαν καὶ  
 τὴν τῆς περιτομῆς ἀλαζονείαν καὶ τὴν τῆς

νηστείας καὶ νουμηνίας εἰρωνείαν, καταγέλαστα καὶ οὐδε-  
 5 νός ἄξια λόγου, οὐ νομίζω σε χρῆζειν παρ' ἐμοῦ μαθεῖν.  
 Τό τε γὰρ τῶν ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ κτισθέντων εἰς χρῆσιν ἀνθρώ-  
 πων ἃ μὲν ὡς καλῶς κτισθέντα παραδέχεσθαι, ἃ δ' ὡς  
 ἄχρηστα καὶ περισσὰ παραιτεῖσθαι, πῶς οὐκ ἀξέμιστον;  
 Τὸ δὲ καταψεύδεσθαι Θεοῦ, ὡς κωλύοντος ἐν τῇ τῶν σαβ-  
 10 βάτων ἡμέρᾳ καλὸν τι ποιεῖν, πῶς οὐκ ἀσεβές; Τὸ δὲ καὶ  
 τὴν μείωσιν τῆς σαρκὸς μαρτύριον ἐκλογῆς ἀλαζονεύεσθαι,  
 ὡς διὰ τοῦτο ἐξαιρέτως ἡγαπημένους ὑπὸ Θεοῦ, πῶς οὐ  
 χλεύης ἄξιον; Τὸ δὲ παρεδρεύοντας αὐτοὺς ἄστροις καὶ  
 σελήνῃ τὴν παρατήρησιν τῶν μηνῶν καὶ τῶν ἡμερῶν ποι-  
 15 εῖσθαι, καὶ τὰς οἰκονομίας Θεοῦ καὶ τὰς τῶν καιρῶν ἀλλα-  
 γὰς καταδιαίρειν πρὸς τὰς αὐτῶν ὁρμάς, ἃς μὲν εἰς ἑορτάς,  
 ἃς δὲ εἰς πένθη, τίς ἂν Ξεοσεβείας καὶ οὐκ ἀφροσύ-  
 νης πολὺ πλέον ἡγήσαιο το δεῖγμα; Τῆς μὲν οὖν κοινῆς  
 εἰκαιότητος καὶ ἀπάτης καὶ τῆς Ἰουδαίων πολυπραγμοσύ-  
 20 νης καὶ ἀλαζονείας ὡς ὁρθῶς ἀπέχονται Χριστιανοί,  
 ἀρκοῦντως σε νομίζω μεμαθηκέναι· τὸ δὲ τῆς ἰδίας αὐτῶν  
 Ξεοσεβείας μυστήριον μὴ προσδοκήσης δύνασθαι παρὰ  
 ἀνθρώπου μαθεῖν.

5. Χριστιανοὶ γὰρ οὔτε γῇ οὔτε φωνῇ οὔτε ἔξει διακε-

The Christians: κριμένοι τῶν λοιπῶν εἰσιν ἀνθρώπων. Οὔτε  
 their customs  
 and condition. γὰρ που πόλεις ἰδίας κατοικοῦσιν οὔτε δια-

λέκτῳ τινὶ παρηλλαγμένη χρῶνται οὔτε βίον παράσημον  
 5 ἀσκούσιν. Οὐ μὲν ἐπινοίᾳ τινὶ καὶ φροντίδι πολυπραγμό-  
 νων ἀνθρώπων μάθημα τοιοῦτ' αὐτοῖς ἐστιν εὐρημένον,  
 οὐδὲ δόγματος ἀνθρωπίνου προεστᾶσιν, ὥσπερ ἔνιοι. Κα-  
 τοικούντες δὲ πόλεις Ἑλληνίδας τε καὶ βαρβάρους, ὡς  
 ἕκαστος ἐκληρώθη, καὶ τοῖς ἐγχωρίοις ἔξουσιν ἀκολουθεῖν-

τες ἐν τε ἐσθῆτι καὶ διαίτῃ καὶ τῇ λοιπῇ βίῃ, Σαυμαστὴν 10  
καὶ ὁμολογουμένως παράδοξον ἐνδείκνυνται τὴν κατάστα-  
σιν τῆς ἑαυτῶν πολιτείας. Πατρίδας οἰκοῦσιν ἰδίας, ἀλλ'  
ὡς πόριοι· μετέχουσι πάντων ὡς πολῖται, καὶ πάντ'  
ὑπομένουσιν ὡς ξένοι· πᾶσα ξένη πατρίς ἐστιν αὐτῶν, καὶ  
πᾶσα πατρίς ξένη. Γαμοῦσιν ὡς πάντες καὶ τεκνογονοῦ- 15  
σιν, ἀλλ' οὐ ρίπτουσι τὰ γεννώμενα· τράπεζαν κοινὴν  
παρατίθενται, ἀλλ' οὐ κοίτην. Ἐν σαρκὶ τυγχάνουσιν,  
ἀλλ' οὐ κατὰ σύρκα ζῶσιν· ἐπὶ γῆς διατρίβουσιν, ἀλλ' ἐν  
οὐρανῷ πολιτεύονται· πείθονται τοῖς ὀρισμένοις νόμοις,  
καὶ τοῖς ἰδίῳ βίοις νικῶσι τοὺς νόμους. Ἀγαπῶσι πάν- 20  
τας, καὶ ὑπὸ πάντων διώκονται. Ἀγνοοῦνται, καὶ κατα-  
κρίνονται· θανατοῦνται, καὶ ζωοποιοῦνται. Πτωχεύουσι,  
καὶ πλουτίζουσι πολλούς· πάντων ὑστεροῦνται, καὶ ἐν  
πᾷσι περισσεύουσιν. Ἀτιμοῦνται, καὶ ἐν ταῖς ἀτιμίαις  
δοξάζονται· βλασφημοῦνται, καὶ δικαιοῦνται. Λοιδοροῦν- 25  
ται, καὶ εὐλογοῦσιν· ὑβρίζονται, καὶ τιμῶσιν. Ἀγαθο-  
ποιοῦντες ὡς κακοὶ κολάζονται· κολαζόμενοι χαίρουσιν  
ὡς ζωοποιοῦμενοι. Ὑπὸ Ἰουδαίων ὡς ἀλλόφυλοι πολε-  
μοῦνται καὶ ὑπὸ Ἑλλήνων διώκονται· καὶ τὴν αἰτίαν τῆς  
ἐχθρᾶς εἰπεῖν οἱ μισοῦντες οὐκ ἔχουσιν.

6. Ἀπλῶς δ' εἰπεῖν· ὕπερ ἐστὶν ἐν σώματι ψυχῇ, τοῦτ'  
They are the εἰσὶν ἐν κόσμῳ Χριστιανοί. Ἔσπαρται κατὰ  
soul of the  
world. πάντων τῶν τοῦ σώματος μελῶν ἢ ψυχῇ· καὶ  
Χριστιανοὶ κατὰ τὰς τοῦ κόσμου τόλεις. Οἱκτεῖ μὲν ἐν τῇ  
σώματι ψυχῇ, οὐκ ἔστι δὲ ἐκ τοῦ σώματος· καὶ Χριστιανοὶ 5  
ἐν κόσμῳ οἰκοῦσιν, οὐκ εἰσὶ δὲ ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου. Ἀόρατος  
ἢ ψυχῇ ἐν ὁρατῇ φρουρεῖται τῇ σώματι· καὶ Χριστιανοὶ  
γινώσκονται μὲν ὄντες ἐν τῇ κόσμῳ, ἀόρατος δὲ αὐτῶν ἢ



Θεοσέβεια μένει. Μισεῖ τὴν ψυχὴν ἢ σὰρξ καὶ πολεμεῖ  
 10 μηδὲν ἀδικουμένη, διότι ταῖς ἡδοναῖς κωλύεται χρῆσθαι·  
 μισεῖ καὶ Χριστιανούς ὁ κόσμος μηδὲν ἀδικούμενος, ὅτι ταῖς  
 ἡδοναῖς ἀντιτάσσονται. Ἡ ψυχὴ τὴν μισοῦσαν ἀγαπᾷ  
 σάρκα καὶ τὰ μέλη· καὶ Χριστιανοὶ τοὺς μισοῦντας ἀγα-  
 πῶσιν. Ἐγκέκλεισται μὲν ἡ ψυχὴ τῷ σώματι, συνέχει δὲ  
 15 αὐτὴ τὸ σῶμα· καὶ Χριστιανοὶ κατέχονται μὲν ὡς ἐν φρον-  
 ρᾷ τῷ κόσμῳ, αὐτοὶ δὲ συνέχουσι τὸν κόσμον. Ἀθάνατος  
 ἡ ψυχὴ ἐν θνητῷ σκηνώματι κατοικεῖ· καὶ Χριστιανοὶ πα-  
 ροικοῦσιν ἐν φθαρτοῖς, τὴν ἐν οὐρανοῖς ἀφθαρσίαν προσδε-  
 χόμενοι. Κακουργουμένη σιτίοις καὶ ποτοῖς ἡ ψυχὴ βελ-  
 20 τιοῦται· καὶ Χριστιανοὶ κολαζόμενοι κατ' ἡμέραν πλεονά-  
 ζουσι μᾶλλον. Εἰς τοιαύτην αὐτοὺς τάξιν ἔθετο ὁ Θεός,  
 ἣν οὐ ξεμιτὸν αὐτοῖς παραιτήσασθαι.

7. Οὐ γὰρ ἐπίγειον, ὡς ἔφην, εὖρημα τοῦτ' αὐτοῖς παρε-  
 1 Their religion  
 not of man,  
 but of God. δόξη, οὐδὲ θνητὴν ἐπίνοιαν φυλάσσειν οὕτως  
 ἀξιοῦσιν ἐπιμελῶς, οὐδὲ ἀνθρωπίνων οἰκονο-  
 μίαν μυστηρίων πεπίστευνται. Ἄλλ' αὐτὸς ἀληθῶς ὁ  
 5 παντοκράτωρ καὶ παντοκτίστης καὶ ἀύρατος Θεός, αὐτὸς  
 ἀπ' οὐρανῶν τὴν ἀλήθειαν καὶ τὸν λόγον τὸν ἅγιον καὶ  
 ἀπερινόητον ἀνθρώποις ἐνίδρυσε καὶ ἐγκατεστήριξε ταῖς  
 καρδίαις αὐτῶν· οὐ, καθάπερ ἂν τις εἰκάσειεν ἄνθρωπος,  
 ὑπὲρ τινὰ πέμψας ἢ ἄγγελον ἢ ἄρχοντα ἢ τινα τῶν  
 10 διεπόντων τὰ ἐπίγεια ἢ τινα τῶν πεπιστευμένων τὰς ἐν οὐ-  
 ρανοῖς διοικήσεις, ἀλλ' αὐτὸν τὸν τεχνίτην καὶ δημιουργὸν  
 τῶν ὕλων, ὃς τοὺς οὐρανούς ἐκτισεν, ὃς τὴν θάλασσαν ἰδίους  
 ὕροις ἐνέκλεισεν, οὗ τὰ μυστήρια πιστῶς πάντα φυλάσσει  
 τὰ στοιχεῖα, παρ' οὗ τὰ μέτρα τῶν τῆς ἡμέρας δρόμων εἴλη-  
 15 φε φυλάσσειν ἡλιος, ὃς πειθαρχεῖ σελήνῃ ἐν νυκτὶ φαίνειν

κελεύοντι, ᾧ πειθαρχεῖ τὰ ἄστροι τῇ τῆς σελήνης ἀκολου-  
 ζοῦντα δρόμῳ, ᾧ πάντα διατέτακται καὶ διώριστα καὶ ὑπο-  
 τέτακται, οὐρανοὶ καὶ τὰ ἐν οὐρανοῖς, γῆ καὶ τὰ ἐν τῇ γῇ,  
 θάλασσα καὶ τὰ ἐν τῇ θαλάσῃ, πῦρ, αἶρ, ἄβυσσος, τὰ ἐν  
 ὕψει, τὰ ἐν βάθει, τὰ ἐν τῇ μεταξύ. Τοῦτον πρὸς αὐ-  
 τοὺς ἀπέστειλεν. Ἄρα γε, ὡς ἀνθρώπων ἄν τις λογι-  
 σαιτο, ἐπὶ τυραννίδι καὶ φύβῳ καὶ καταπλήξει; Οὐμενοῦν·  
 ἀλλ' ἐν ἐπιεικείᾳ καὶ πραύτητι. Ὡς βασιλεὺς πέμπων  
 υἱὸν βασιλέα ἐπεμψεν, ὡς θεὸν ἐπεμψεν, ὡς πρὸς ἀνθρώ-  
 πους ἐπεμψεν, ὡς σώζων ἐπεμψεν, ὡς πείζων, οὐ βιαζόμε-  
 νος· βία γὰρ οὐ πρόσσετι τῷ θεῷ. Ἐπεμψεν ὡς καλῶν,  
 οὐ διώκων· ἐπεμψεν ὡς ἀγαπῶν, οὐ κρίνων. Πέμψει γὰρ  
 αὐτὸν κρίνοντα· καὶ τίς αὐτοῦ τὴν παρουσίαν ὑποστήσει-  
 ται; . . . [Οὐχ ὕρῃς] παραβαλλομένους θηρίοις, ἵνα  
 ἀρνήσωνται τὸν κύριον, καὶ μὴ νικωμένους; Οὐχ ὕρῃς  
 ὅσῳ πλείονες κολάζονται, τοσούτῳ πλεονάζοντας ἄλλους;  
 Ταῦτα ἀνθρώπου οὐ δοκεῖ τὰ ἔργα, ταῦτα δύνάμις ἐστι  
 θεοῦ· ταῦτα τῆς παρουσίας αὐτοῦ δείγματα.

8. Τίς γὰρ ὅλως ἀνθρώπων ἠπίστατο τί ποτ' ἐστὶ θεός,  
 πρὶν αὐτὸν ἐλθεῖν; Ἡ τοὺς κενοὺς καὶ ληρώ-  
 δεις ἐκείνων λόγους ἀποδέχῃ τῶν ἀξιοπίστων  
 φιλοσόφων; ὧν οἱ μὲν τινες πῦρ ἔφασαν εἶναι  
 τὸν θεόν (οὐ μέλλουσι χωρήσειν αὐτοί, τοῦτο καλοῦσι  
 θεόν), οἱ δὲ ὕδωρ, οἱ δ' ἄλλο τι τῶν στοιχείων τῶν ἐκτισμέ-  
 νων ὑπὸ θεοῦ. Καίτοι γε, εἴ τις τούτων τῶν λόγων ἀποδεκ-  
 τός ἐστι, δύναιτ' ἂν καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν κτισμάτων ἐν ἑκάστων  
 ὁμοίως ἀποφαίνεσθαι θεόν. Ἀλλὰ ταῦτα μὲν τερατεία καὶ  
 πλάνη τῶν γοήτων ἐστίν. Ἀνθρώπων δὲ οὐδεὶς οὔτε εἶδεν  
 οὔτε ἐγνώρισεν· αὐτὸς δὲ ἑαυτὸν ἐπέδειξεν. Ἐπέδειξε δὲ

The wretched  
 state of the  
 world before  
 the Son of  
 God came.

5

διὰ πίστεως, ἣ μόνη θεὸν ἰδεῖν συγκεχώρηται. Ὁ γὰρ  
 δεσπότης καὶ δημιουργὸς τῶν ὕλων θεός, ὁ ποιήσας τὰ  
 πάντα καὶ κατὰ τάξιν διακρίνας, οὐ μόνον φιλάνθρωπος  
 15 ἐγένετο ἀλλὰ καὶ μακρόθυμος. Ἀλλ' οὗτος ἦν μὲν αἰ-  
 τοιούτος καὶ ἔστι καὶ ἔσται, χρηστὸς καὶ ἀγαθὸς καὶ ἀόργη-  
 τος καὶ ἀληθής, καὶ μόνος ἀγαθός ἐστιν· ἐννοήσας δὲ με-  
 γάλην καὶ ἄφραστον ἐννοίαν ἀνεκοινώσατο μόνῃ τῇ παιδί.  
 Ἐν ὅσῳ μὲν οὖν κατεῖχεν ἐν μυστηρίῳ καὶ διετίρει τὴν σο-  
 20 φὴν αὐτοῦ βουλήν, ἀμελεῖν ἡμῶν καὶ ἀφροντιστεῖν ἰδοίκε·  
 ἐπεὶ δὲ ἀπεκάλυψε διὰ τοῦ ἀγαπητοῦ παιδὸς καὶ ἐφάνερωσε  
 τὰ ἐξ ἀρχῆς ἡτοιμασμένα, πάντ' ἅμα παρέσχεν ἡμῖν, καὶ  
 μετασχεῖν τῶν εὐεργεσιῶν αὐτοῦ καὶ ἰδεῖν καὶ νοῆσαι ἃ τίς  
 ἂν πώποτε προσεδόκησεν ἡμῶν;

9. Πάντ' οὖν ἤδη παρ' ἑαυτῇ σὺν τῇ παιδί οἰκονομῇ κώς,  
 μέχρι μὲν οὖν τοῦ πρόσθεν χρόνου εἴασεν ἡμᾶς  
 10 ὥς ἐβουλόμεθα ἀτάκτοις φοραῖς φέρεσθαι, ἡδο-  
 ναῖς καὶ ἐπιθυμίαις ἀπαγομένους, οὐ πάντως ἐφελδόμενος  
 τοῖς ἁμαρτίμασιν ἡμῶν, ἀλλ' ἀνεχόμενος, οὐδὲ τῇ τότε τῆς  
 ἀδικίας καιρῷ συνευδοκῶν, ἀλλὰ τὸν νῦν τῆς δικαιοσύνης  
 δημιουργῶν, ἵνα ἐν τῇ τότε χρόνῳ ἐλεγχθέντες ἐκ τῶν ἰδί-  
 15 ων ἔργων ἀνάξιοι ζωῆς νῦν ὑπὸ τῆς τοῦ θεοῦ χρηστότητος  
 ἀξιωζώμεν, καὶ τὸ κατ' ἑαυτοὺς φανερώσαιτες ἀδύνατον  
 εἰσελθεῖν εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ τῇ δυνάμει τοῦ θεοῦ  
 δυνατοὶ γενηζώμεν. Ἐπεὶ δὲ πεπλήρωτο μὲν ἡ ἡμετέρα  
 ἀδικία, καὶ τελείως πεφάνερωτο ὅτι ὁ μισθὸς αὐτῆς κόλασις  
 καὶ θάνατος προσεδόκατο, ἤλξε δὲ ὁ καιρὸς ὃν θεὸς προέζε-  
 20 το λοιπὸν φανερώσαι τὴν ἑαυτοῦ χρηστότητα καὶ δύναμιν (ὧ  
 15 τῆς ὑπερβαλλούσης φιλάνθρωπίας καὶ ἀγάπης τοῦ θεοῦ),  
 οὐκ ἐμίσησεν ἡμᾶς οὐδὲ ἀπώσατο οὐδὲ ἐμνησικακήσεν, ἀλλὰ

*John*

Reasons why  
 He came so  
 late.

ἑμακροζύμησιν, ἡνέσχετο, αὐτὸς τὰς ἡμετέρας ἁμαρτίας ἀνεδέξατο, αὐτὸς τὸν ἴδιον υἱὸν ἀπίδοδοτο λύτρον ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν, τὸν ἅγιον ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀνόμων, τὸν ἄκακον ὑπὲρ τῶν κακῶν, τὸν δίκαιον ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀδίκων, τὸν ἄφθαρτον ὑπὲρ τῶν φθαρτῶν, τὸν ἀθάνατον ὑπὲρ τῶν θνητῶν. Τί γὰρ ἄλλο τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν ἡδυνήθη καλύψαι ἢ ἐκείνου δικαιοσύνη; Ἐν τίνι δικαιωθῆναι δυνατόν τοὺς ἀνόμους ἡμᾶς καὶ ἀσιβεῖς ἢ ἐν μόνῳ τῷ υἱῷ τοῦ Θεοῦ; Ὡς τῆς γλυκείας ἀνταλλαγῆς, ὡς τῆς ἀνεξιχνιάστου δημιουργίας, ὡς τῶν ἀπρησθού- κήτων ἐνέργεισιν· ἵνα ἀνομία μὲν πολλῶν ἐν δικαίῳ ἐνὶ κρυβῇ, δικαιοσύνη δὲ ἐνὸς πολλοὺς ἀνόμους δικαιώσῃ. Ἐλίγξας οὖν ἐν μὲν τῷ πρόσθεν χρόνῳ τὸ ἀδύνατον τῆς ἡμετέρας φύσεως εἰς τὸ τυχεῖν ζωῆς, νῦν δὲ τὸν σωτήρα δείξας δυνατόν σώζειν καὶ τὰ ἀδύνατα, ἐξ ἀμφοτέρων ἰβου- λήθη πιστεύειν ἡμᾶς τῇ χρηστότητι αὐτοῦ, αὐτὸν ἡγίσσαι τροφία, πατέρα, διδάσκαλον, σύμβουλον, ἰατρίον, νοῦν, φῶς, τιμὴν, δόξαν, ἰσχύιν, ζωὴν, περὶ ἐνδύσειος καὶ τροφῆς μὴ μεριμνᾶν.

10. Ταύτην καὶ σὺ τὴν πίστιν ἐν ποσέσει, καταλάβεις  
Conclusion. Exhortation to Diognetus to become a Christian. ἂν πρῶτον μὲν ἐπίγνωσιν πατρός. Ὁ γὰρ Θεὸς τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἡγάπησεν, δι' οὓς ἐποίησεν τὸν κόσμον, οἷς ὑπέταξε πάντα τὰ ἐν [τῇ γῇ], οἷς λόγον ἔδωκεν, οἷς νοῦν, οἷς μύνοις αἶνω] πρὸς αὐτὸν ὕμῶν ἐπέτρεψεν, οὓς ἐκ τῆς ἰδίας εἰκόνος ἔπλασε, πρὸς οὓς ἀπέστειλε τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ τὸν μονογενῆ, ὡς τὴν ἐν οὐρανῷ βασιλείαν ἐπηγγείλατο καὶ δώσει τοῖς ἀγαπήσασιν αὐτόν. Ἐπιγνοὺς δὲ τίνος οἱ πληρωθήσεσθαι χαρᾶς; Ἡ πῶς ἀγαπήσεις τὸν οὕτως προαγαπήσαντά σε; Ἀγαπήσας δὲ μὴ μιμητὴς ἴσῃ αὐτοῦ τῆς χρηστότητος. Καὶ μὴ θαυμάσῃς

εἰ δύναται μμητῆς ἄνθρωπος γενέσθαι θεοῦ. Δύναται  
 ζέλοντος αὐτοῦ. Οὐ γάρ τὸ καταδυναστεύειν τῶν πλη-  
 σίων οὐδὲ τὸ πλεόν ἔχειν βούλεσθαι τῶν ἀσθενεστέρων  
 15 οὐδὲ τὸ πλουτεῖν καὶ βιάζεσθαι τοὺς ὑποδεεστέρους εὐδαι-  
 μονεῖν ἐστίν, οὐδὲ ἐν τούτοις δύναταί τις μμήσασθαι θεόν,  
 ἀλλὰ ταῦτα ἐκτὸς τῆς ἐκείνου μεγαλειότητος. Ἄλλ' ὅστις  
 τὸ τοῦ πλησίον ἀναδέχεται βάρος, ὅς ἐν ᾧ κρείσσων ἐστὶν  
 ἕτερον τὸν ἐλαττούμενον εὐεργετεῖν ἐξέλει, ὅς ἂ παρὰ τοῦ  
 20 θεοῦ λαβὼν ἔχει, ταῦτα τοῖς ἐπιδεομένοις χορηγῶν θεὸς  
 γίνεται τῶν λαμβανόντων, οὗτος μμητῆς ἐστι θεοῦ. Τύτε  
 θεῖαση τυγχάνων ἐπὶ γῆς ὅτι θεὸς ἐν οὐρανοῖς πολιτεύεται,  
 τύτε μυστήρια θεοῦ λαλεῖν ἄρξῃ, τύτε τοὺς κολαζομένους  
 ἐπὶ τῇ μὴ ξέλειν ἀρνίσασθαι θεὸν καὶ ἀγαπήσεις καὶ θαυ-  
 25 μάσεις, τύτε τῆς ἀπάτης τοῦ κόσμου καὶ τῆς πλάνης κατα-  
 γνῶσθαι, ὅταν τὸ ἀληθῶς ἐν οὐρανῷ ζῇ ἐπιγνῶς, ὅταν τοῦ  
 δοκοῦντος ἐνθάδε θανάτου καταφρονήσῃς, ὅταν τὸν ὄντως  
 θάνατον φοβηθῇς, ὅς φυλάσσεται τοῖς κατακριζησομένοις  
 εἰς τὸ πῦρ τὸ αἰώνιον, ὃ τοὺς παραδοξέντας αὐτῷ μέχρι  
 30 τέλους κολάσει· τύτε τοὺς ὑπομένοντας ὑπὲρ δικαιοσύνης  
 θαυμάσεις τὸ πῦρ τὸ πρῶσ[καιρον], καὶ μακαρίσεις, ὅταν  
 ἐκεῖνο τὸ πῦρ ἐπιγνῶς. . . .

[11. Οὐ ξίνα ὁμιλῶ οὐδὲ παραλόγως ζητῶ, ἀλλὰ ἀπο-

Addition by another hand. I speak with authority. I know whereof I affirm. στόλων γενόμενος μαθητῆς γίνομαι διδάσκα-  
 35 λος ἐθῶν, τὰ παραδοξέντα ἀξίως ὑπηρετῶν  
 γινομένοις ἀληθείας μαθηταῖς. Τίς γὰρ ὁρ-  
 40 θῶς διδαχθεὶς καὶ λόγῳ προσφιλῆς γεννηθεὶς οὐκ ἐπι-  
 ζητεῖ σαφῶς μαθεῖν τὰ διὰ λόγου δειχθέντα φανερώς μα-

ζηταῖς, οἷς ἐφάνέρωσεν ὁ λόγος φανείς, παρρησίᾳ λαλῶν, ὑπὸ ἀπίστων μὴ νοούμενος, μαζηταῖς δὲ διηγούμενος, οἱ πιστοὶ λογιζέμεντες ὑπ' αὐτοῦ ἔγνωσαν πατρὸς μυστήρια; Οὐ χάριν ἀπέστειλε λόγον, ἵνα κύσμῳ φανῇ· ὅς, ὑπὸ λαοῦ 10 ἀτιμασζείς, διὰ ἀποστόλων κηρυχζείς, ὑπὸ ἐξῶν ἐπιστεύθη. Οὗτος ὁ ἀπ' ἀρχῆς, ὁ καινὸς φανείς καὶ παλαιὸς εὐρεζείς καὶ πάντοτε νέος ἐν ἁγίων καρδίαις γεννώμενος. Οὗτος ὁ αἰεὶ, ὁ σήμερον υἱὸς λογιζοίς, δι' οὗ πλουτίζεται ἡ ἐκκλησία καὶ χάρις ἀπλουμένη ἐν ἁγίοις πληθύνεται, 15 παρέχουσα νοῦν, φανεροῦσα μυστήρια, διαγγέλλουσα καιροὺς, χαίρουσα ἐπὶ πιστοῖς, ἐπιζητοῦσι δωρουμένη, οἷς ὕρκια πίστεως οὐ βραύεται οὐδὲ ὕρια πατέρων παρορίζεται. Εἴτα φόβος νόμου ἄδεται καὶ προφητῶν χάρις γινώσκειται καὶ εὐαγγελίων πίστις ἱδρύεται καὶ ἀποστόλων 20 παράδοσις φυλάσσεται καὶ ἐκκλησίας χαρὰ σκιρτᾷ. Ἐν χάριν μὴ λυπῶν ἐπιγνώσῃ ὁ λόγος ὁμιλεῖ, δι' ὧν βούλεται, ὅτε θέλει. Ὅσα γὰρ θελήματι τοῦ κελεύοντος λόγου ἐκινήθημεν ἐξειπεῖν μετὰ πόνου, ἐξ ἀγάπης τῶν ἀποκαλυφθέντων ἡμῖν γινόμενα ὑμῖν κοινωνοί.

25

12. Οἷς ἐντυχόντες καὶ ἀκούσαντες μετὰ σπουδῆς εἰσεσσεύσασθε, ὅσα παρέχει ὁ θεὸς τοῖς ἀγαπῶσιν ὁρθῶς, οἱ γενομένοι παράδεισος τρυφῆς, πάγκαρπον ξύλον, εὐξαλοῦν, ἀνατείλαντες ἐν ἑαυτοῖς, ποικίλοις καρποῖς κεκοσμημένοι. Ἐν γὰρ τούτῳ τῷ χωρίῳ ξύλον γνώσεως καὶ ξύλον ζωῆς πεφύτευται· ἀλλ' οὐ τὸ τῆς γνώσεως ἀναιρεῖ, ἀλλ' ἡ παρακοὴ ἀναιρεῖ. Οὐδὲ γὰρ ἄσχημα τὰ γεγραμμένα, ὡς θεὸς ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ξύλον γνώσεως καὶ ξύλον ζωῆς ἐν μέσῳ παραδείσου ἐφύτευσε, διὰ γνώσεως ζωὴν ἐπιδεικνύς· ἢ μὴ καθαρῶς χρησάμενοι οἱ ἀπ' ἀρχῆς πλάνη 10

Read and hear-  
en, and you will  
learn.

3

τοῦ ὕφους γεγύμνωνται. Οὐδὲ γὰρ ζωὴ ἄνευ γνώσεως,  
οὐδὲ γνῶσις ἀσφαλὴς ἄνευ ζωῆς ἀληθοῦς. Διὸ πλησίον  
ἐκάτερον πεφύτευται. Ἦν δύναμιν ἐνιδὼν ὁ ἀπόστολος,  
τὴν τε ἄνευ ἀληθείας προστάγματος εἰς ζωὴν ἀσκουμένην  
15 γνῶσιν μεμφόμενος, λέγει· Ἡ γνῶσις φυσιοῖ, ἡ δὲ ἀγάπη  
οἰκοδομεῖ. Ὁ γὰρ νομίζων εἰδέναι τι ἄνευ γνώσεως ἀλη-  
θοῦς καὶ μαρτυρουμένης ὑπὸ τῆς ζωῆς οὐκ ἔγνω· ὑπὸ τοῦ  
ὕφους πλανᾶται, μὴ ἀγαπήσας τὸ ζῆν· ὁ δὲ μετὰ φόβου  
ἐπιγνοὺς καὶ ζωὴν ἐπιζητῶν, ἐπ' ἐλπίδι φυτεύει, καρπὸν  
20 προσδοκῶν. Ἦτω σοι καρδία γνῶσις, ζωὴ δὲ λόγος ἀλη-  
θείας, χωρούμενος. Οὗ ξύλον φέρων καὶ καρπὸν [αἰ]ρῶν  
τρυγίσεις αἰεὶ τὰ παρὰ ξειῇ ποζούμενα, ὧν ὕφεις οὐχ ὕπτει-  
ται· οὐδὲ πλάνη συγχρωτίζεται. Εὖα οὐδὲ φθείρεται, ἀλλὰ  
παρθένος πιστεύεται· καὶ σωτήριον δείκνυται, καὶ ἀπύστο-  
25 λοι συνετίζονται, καὶ τὸ κυρίου πάσχα προέρχεται, καὶ  
κηροὶ συνάγονται καὶ μετὰ κόσμου ἀρμύζονται, καὶ διδά-  
σκων ἀγίους ὁ λόγος εὐφραίνεται, εἰ' οὗ πατὴρ δοξάζεται·  
ὧς ἡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας. Ἀμήν.]

---

**ANALYSES AND NOTES.**

---





1

## THE FIRST APOLOGY.

---

THE date of the First Apology has always been a matter of dispute. The extremes vary between 138 and 160, between the accession of Antoninus Pius and the last year of his reign.

Semisch maintains that the absence of the designation of Caesar from the name of M. Aurelius in the address proves that the Apology was composed between 138 and 139; that is, after the accession of Antoninus Pius and before the elevation of M. Aurelius to the rank of Caesar. But this argument falls away if we read with Ueberweg and others καὶ Καίσαρι Οὐρητισίμῳ in c. 1, 2.

On the other hand, recent critics, Ueberweg, Cavedoni, Böhringer, Volkmar, and Keim, insist on a later date. Before 147 Marcionism had not spread so widely as is represented by Justin himself (cc. 26, 58), and the whole tone of Justin towards Marcion has the bitterness of personal controversy; and if the Apology was written at Rome, as Eusebius asserts, the date of Marcion's work at Rome, which did not begin to be felt before 142, must go far to determine the question. Too much stress must not be laid on Justin's statement that 150 years had passed since the birth of Christ, for Justin's chronology is not the most accurate; but this date coincides most remarkably with the nine hundredth year of the city, 147 A.D., when M. Aurelius, on occasion of the *ludi saeculares*, was made tribune and joint regent. A fitter opportunity could hardly have been found for our Christian philosopher to present his remonstrance in the name

---

of piety and philosophy against the shameless treatment to which the Christians were subjected.

The argument drawn from the surname of Lucius Verus is of little weight either way. The title was merely official; and in point of fact the boyhood of Verus, according to his biographer, was marked by unusual love of literature.

---

#### ANALYSIS OF THE FIRST APOLOGY.

(After Otto.)

The First Apology may be divided into three parts.

I. In the First Part Justin shows—

1. That the Christians ought not to be condemned without a fair hearing.
2. That they are innocent of all crime.

II. In the Second Part he gives the arguments for the truth of the Christian religion.

III. In the Third Part he describes the worship of the Christians.

I. After the address (c. 1) Justin boldly demands justice (c. 2), and claims for the Christians the privileges of all defendants (c. 3). It is unjust to condemn Christians for the mere name's sake without hearing their case (c. 4)—an injustice which is to be traced to the instigation of the demons (c. 5). The Christians are no atheists; they worship God the Father, the Son, the Holy Spirit (c. 6). If some Christians have been convicted of crime, the innocent are not to be punished for the guilty (c. 7). Nay, the innocence of the Christians is the more manifest in that they prefer death to falsehood (c. 8). Nor are the Christians to be blamed for their refusal to worship images—an absurd worship (c. 9); nor for believing that God does not need their gifts—God the creator of all

things (c. 10). The state has nothing to fear from them. Christ's kingdom is not of this world (c. 11). No better subjects of the Empire than the Christians (c. 12). To show the proper attitude of the question in its political bearings, Justin goes back to the refutation of the charges which he has already repelled, re-affirms that the Christians are not atheists, and emphasizes the purity of their worship of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost (c. 13); the wonderful change in character and life since they forsook the service of demons (c. 14); and brings forward some of the great doctrines of Christ, which are scrupulously observed by the Christians—of chastity, of love to all, of charity to the poor (c. 15); of patience, of the avoidance of swearing (c. 16); of obedience to kings, of payment of tribute (c. 17). If such citizens as these are to be despised, the Martyr, rising to prophetic height, threatens the Emperors with judgment to come, which even the Gentiles believe, how much more the Christians, who also hope for the resurrection of the body (c. 18)—no more difficult thing for God than creation itself (c. 19). Doctrines akin to this Gentiles have taught. Hence it is not just that the Christians alone should be persecuted (c. 20). In like manner there is no absurdity in what the Christians teach concerning the Son of God, his generation, incarnation, death, resurrection, and ascension, in view of the manifold extravagances of the poets concerning the sons of Zeus (cc. 21, 22).

II. Justin undertakes to prove three things:

1. That truth is taught by the Christians alone.
  2. That the Son of God was truly incarnate.
  3. That the fables of mythology were invented by demons to discredit the advent of Christ, and make that appear to be a fable likewise (c. 23).
-

1. Truth is taught by the Christians alone because they alone are not allowed to say what others say. *Others* may worship what they will. *They* are persecuted by reason of the truth (c. 24). Next, because it is love of the truth alone that makes them worship the true God in the face of death (c. 25). Finally, because those who corrupt the truth of the Christian religion by errors do not suffer persecution. [Digression, which in a more methodical writer would give rise to a suspicion of dislocation.] The mention of charges of gross immorality brought against the heretics suggests to Justin a new exemplification of the purity of the true Christian life. Christians are so far from committing crime that they do not deem it right even to expose infants (c. 27). Those who slander Christians are doing themselves grievous hurt, and will be sent into hell-fire with the devil and his host (c. 28). The Christians do not engage in marriage except for the sake of begetting children; and if they abstain from marriage, they preserve their chastity inviolate (c. 29).

2. The Son of God was truly incarnate. This is proved by various prophecies (cc. 30-35), for the interpretation of which Justin gives certain rules (c. 36), with instances in which the Father speaks (c. 37), the Son (c. 38), the Holy Spirit (c. 38). To these he adds prophecies concerning the apostles (c. 40), the kingdom of Christ (c. 41), and remarks by the way that in the prophetic writings the future is often represented as the past (c. 42). But fatalism is by no means the result of these predictions (c. 43); man's will is free (c. 44). Justin then speaks of Christ's ascension as foretold by the prophets (c. 45), and maintains that those who went astray from the truth before the incarnation of Christ were responsible, as the seeds of the Logos were in all

(c. 46). He then proceeds to the prophecies of the siege of Jerusalem (c. 47), of Christ's power (c. 48), of the conversion of the Gentiles and the reprobation of the Jews (c. 49), of Christ's death and resurrection (c. 50), and ineffable generation (c. 51). From the fulfilment of these prophecies he concludes that those which have not been fulfilled must be considered as confirmed (c. 52), for all can see with their own eyes the fulfilment of the prophecies concerning the conversion of the Gentiles and the reprobation of the Jews (c. 53).

3. The fables concerning the sons of Zeus have been invented by the inspiration of demons in order that the coming of the Son of God might seem to be a fable, and these fables have been spread abroad by poets as it were in imitation of divine prophets (c. 54). Nevertheless the demons did not suspect the mystery of the cross, the power and use of which are commended by various objects of great importance (c. 55). With the same end in view, the demons put forward Simon, Menander, Marcion (c. 56); and failing in much, they have succeeded in making the Christians hated by the wicked. But what is death to the Christian? (c. 57). The true objects of pity are not the Christians, but those who become the prey of the godless doctrines of the heretics and the evil spirits, who inspire them. The only safeguard against this danger is a pure life (c. 58). Such truth as the heathen world has is derived truth. So Plato has borrowed from the books of Moses what he taught concerning the creation of the world (c. 59), the chiasm of the Son, and the mystery of the third about the third (c. 60).

III. Justin now sets forth how the Christians consecrate themselves to God in baptism (c. 61). To the imitation of this rite, so far as it was foreshadowed in the

prophetic books, are due the sprinklings and washings of the Gentiles. Likewise they learned from what Christ said to Moses the putting off their shoes when they entered their temples (c. 52)—from what Christ said, for it was Christ that appeared to Moses, the Son, not the Father. But the Jews, who maintain that it was the Father, know neither Father nor Son (c. 63). To the cunning device of the demons are further due the fables concerning Persephone and Athena (c. 64). Justin next sets forth how the first eucharist after baptism is celebrated (c. 65), what it means (c. 66), and the whole course of proceeding in the assemblies of the Christians (c. 67).

In conclusion, he urges the Emperors to act with candor and justice, and subjoins a rescript of Hadrian in favor of the Christians (c. 68).

## NOTES.

### ABBREVIATIONS.

- A=First Apology.  
B=Second Apology.  
D. S.=Douglass Series.  
E. ad D.=Epistula ad Diognetum.  
L. H.=Latin Hymns (Douglass Series).

ΠΡΩΤΗ: Both MSS. have *ἐντρίπα*. The citations in Eusebius prove that this was the first, and it has long been edited as such. It is often called *Apologia Maior*. ΠΡΩΤΕΡΑ would be more correct than ΠΡΩΤΗ.

### 1. ADDRESS.

1. *Εὐσεβεί*: Lat. *Piō*. The origin of this surname is much disputed. See Class. Dict.

2. *Σεβαστῶ*: A translation of *Augustus*. *Augustus* was originally a religious word, usually combined by Cicero with *sanctus*. *Σεβαστῶ Εὐσεβεί* is the more common order (Volkmar).—*Καίσαρι*: For *Καίσαρι, καὶ Οὐγῆρ*. Sylburg, Ritter, Cavedoni, and Teberweg would read *καὶ Καίσαρι Οὐ*. (See p. 97.)—*Οὐγῆρισσῖμος*: M. Aurelius Antoninus. His name was at first M. Annius Verus. Hadrian called him playfully Verissimus.

3. *Αὐγκίῳ*: L. Ceionius Commodus, afterwards the emperor L. Aurelius Verus. He was the son of Aelius Caesar, who had been adopted by Hadrian, but died before his adoptive father. When Hadrian thereupon adopted Antoninus Pius, he required him to adopt M. Annius Verus and L. Ceionius.—*φιλοσόφῳ*: Surname common to the two princes. Eusebius, who cites this passage (H. E. 4, 12), reads *φιλοσόφου* to balance *Εὐσεβοῦς*; but there is no



ἡ μὲν φιλῶσα, ἐπὶ θυγατρὶ ἀλλὰ καὶ  
 πατρὶ. αὐτὸς Chp. 1. 5 M.

104

# NOTES.

real difficulty in using the attribute of a lad, even if the Apology be put in 138-9 with Semisch, instead of after 147 with Volkmar.

4. ἔραστῇ: Ἔρως is passionate love (love of the sexes); hence ἔραστῆς is complimentary when the object is noble. Comp. ὁ ἔρως τῆς ὑπερβαλλούσης καζαρότητος, Orig. c. Celsum, 1, 26. Justin himself is called by Euseb. H. E. 4, 8: γνήσιος τῆς ἀληθοῦς φιλοσοφίας ἔραστῆς.—*ἐρεῖ* . . . *συγκλήτῳ*: *Senatus ordo ille sanctissimus*, Quint. Declam. 329, p. 669. *Iura magistratusque legunt sanctumque senatum*, [Verg.] Aen. 1, 426. Otto comp. Cic. Div. 1, 12, 20; Hor. Od. 4, 5, 3; Iuv. 11, 29.

5. Ῥωμαίων: This is not the only combination in which the gen. is preferred in Greek, the adjective in Latin.—*τῶν ἐκ παντὸς γένους ἀνθρώπων*: 'Men of every race.' Christianity had spread very widely. See cc. 31. 40; also Ep. ad D. 6, and the classic passage in Tertull. Apol. 37 (p. 91 D. S.): *Hesterni sumus et vestra omnia implevimus*, etc.

6. ἐπηρεαζομένων: Aristot. Rhet. 2, 2: *ἔστιν ὁ ἐπηρεασμὸς ἰμπεδισμὸς ταῖς βουλήσιν, οὐχ ἵνα τι αὐτῷ ἀλλ' ἵνα μὴ ἐκείνῳ*. Hence the translation of Matt. 5, 44: *ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐπηρεαζόντων ὑμᾶς*, 'despitefully use you,' a passage which Justin evidently had in mind. Comp. Athenag. Suppl. 2, 6: *ὑμῶν ἡδὲ ἔργον ἀποσκευάσαι ἡμῶν νόμῳ τὴν ἐπὶ ἡρείαν*. Also 9, 36.

7. Πρίσκου: Ἰουστίνος Πρίσκου simply denotes the origin, ὁ Πρίσκου would serve to distinguish, as τοῦ (νιού) Βαρκείου below.—Φλαουίας Νέας πόλεως: The modern Nablûs, near the ruins of the ancient Sichem. It was called Flavia in honor of Flavius Vespasianus (Vespasian).

8. τῆς Συρίας Παλαιστίνης: We should expect Συρίας τῆς Παλαιστίνης (comp. Herod. 3, 91), and this is the order in Eusebius. Chorographic genitive.—*εἰς αὐτῶν ὦν*: We owe the ὦν to Eusebius. 'Being one of them,' not 'who am one of them.' The participle without the article is seldom used as the identifying relative, and usually shows a closer connection.—*προσφώνησιν*: 'Address.' See c. 68, 12.

9. ἐντευξιν: In this sense of 'petition' (originally 'interview') the word is very common in later Greek.—*ποιεῖσθαι*: *Ποιεῖσθαι* with abstracts is used in the same sense as the corresponding verb. So *ἐντευξιν ποιεῖσθαι*=*ἐντυχάνειν*. Only this turn has the

advantage of number and article and other modifiers. See Index for examples.

## 2. JUSTIN DEMANDS JUSTICE.

1. κατ' ἀλήθειαν = ἀληθῶς.

2. στίργειν: So Plato, *De Republ.* 6, 485 C: τὴν ἀλήθειαν στίργειν. Στοργή is natural affection, explained by Athenag. *Res.* 12, 49: ὁλεῖ τινι ρυσικῇ καὶ στοργῇ κινούμενος. Στίργειν and ἀγαπᾶν are often used alike, whereas φιλεῖν—according to Bugge and Curtius (*Studien*, 6, 426), fr. σνΔ, *suus*, 'own'—is more familiar, ἱρᾶν more passionate.—ὑπαγορεύει: Later writers are very fond of compounds of ἀγορεύειν in *all* the tenses. Ὑπαγ. 'dictate,' literally; then figuratively, c. 12, 31.

3. παραιτούμενους: 'Asking to be excused from,' 'deprecating' (*Plat. Protag.* 358 A), then 'declining,' 'refusing,' as here. A common use from Polybius on, often in Plutarch. *Comp.* 2 *Tim.* 2, 23; Athenag. *Res.* 16, 77.—παλαιών: Not πολλῶν as Joannes Damascenus cites it. Much stress was laid by the opponents of Christianity on its novelty. See E. ad D. 1. *Comp.* the answer of Clem. Alex. *Protrept.* 1, 6: παλαιά ἢ πλάνη, καινὸν δὲ ἡ ἀλήθεια φαίνεται. Παλαιός (*vetus*) refers to *duration*, ἀρχαῖος (*antiquus*) to *origin*. Donaldson (*New Crat.* p. 15) illustrates the difference happily by a slight change in a verse of Sophocles (*Trach.* 533) to describe a bone of the Deinotherion: ὅστον παλαιὸν ἀρχαίου ποτὶ θηρός. *Comp.* *Hebr.* 8, 13.—ἐξακολουθεῖν: There is possibly a touch of servility in the compound. But *comp.* c. 10, 16.

4. εἰν: Ἐάν (ἦν, εἰν) introduces a form of conditional proposition, which may be called the anticipatory condition. This is the common form, 1. Of the future condition; 2. Of the universal condition (good for all time). Anticipation is not expectation. Expectation looks forward. Anticipation treats the future as present. Though there is no necessary 'prospect of realization,' a misleading phrase, the anticipatory condition is used chiefly in practical matters, and is the invariable form in laws (legal condition).—φαῦλαι: The regular antithesis of φαῦλος is σπουδαῖος, e. g. in Athenagor. *Res.* 19, 92.—μὴ εἶσθαι: The regular negative of the infinitive as such, that is, as a verbal noun, is μὴ. Here it is an object.

q. answer to a name  
 διακειμένη answer *adnom*

7. *κάν*: *Και εἰ*, 'even if,' gives an extreme case; *εἰ και*, 'albeit,' presents a proposition as a matter of indifference, but *εἰ και* varies. *Κάν=και ἰάν* is so common a formula that it is often used where *άν* is not wanted, and is often simply=*και*.

8. *ὅτι λήγεσθε*: Depends on *ἀκούετε*. 'You hear that you are called.' As *ἀκούειν* itself familiarly means 'hear one's self called,' 'be called,' Stephanus proposed to drop *ὅτι* *λήγεσθε* and mend Justin's Greek—no superhuman task.

10. *εἰ δὲ καὶ ὑπάρχετε*: *Εἰ* here is 'whether'='whether or no,' as often; *καί*, 'actually,' 'really.' 'ὑπάρχειν, originally of a 'basis,' 'something to fall back on,' fades gradually after Demosthenes into a mere copulative verb.

11. *κολακεύοντες*: The fut. part. with a verb of motion *implies* purpose. The purpose lies in the peculiar combination, for with other verbs *ὥς* *must* be used.

12. *οὐδὲ πρὸς χάριν ὁμλήσοντας*: Comp. Plat. Gorg. 521 A: *πρὸς χάριν ὁμλήσοντα . . . κολακεύοντα*. — *ἀπειτήσοντας*: Notice the boldness in *ἀπ*.

13. *ἀκριβῇ καὶ ἐξεταστικὸν λόγον*: Comp. Plat. Critias, 107 D: *τὰ θνητὰ ἀκριβῶς ἐξετάζομεν*. 'Εξέτασις often of a judicial examination.

14. *προσεληλυθαιμεν*: We should expect the perfect, which Otto has in his last edition (1873), but occasionally the composer of a letter in Greek takes the point of view of the receiver, as in Latin. Grabe cites Athenag. Suppl. 2, and Thirlby, Theophil. ad Autolyc. 8, 4, as an imitation of this passage.—*τὴν κρίσιν ποιήσασθαι*: c. 1, 9.—*μὴ . . . κατεχομένους*: The negative here is regular, as the participle belongs to the infinitive.—*προλήψει καὶ ἀνθρωπορρεσκεία*: *Πρόληψις* not in its philosophical sense, but='prejudice,' *praesumptio*, Tertull. Apol. 49 (p. 111 D. S.). Comp. *κατὰ κοινὴν πρόληψιν*, Athenag. Suppl. 3, 17; combined with *φιλονεικία*, Origen, c. Cels. 1, 52. 'Ἀνθρωπαρίσκια, not a classic word; comp. Eph. 3, 6; Col. 3, 22.

15. *χρονίᾳ*: The adjective where we should use the adverb.

16. *καθ' ἑαυτῶν=καθ' ἑμῶν αὐτῶν*. The reflexive of the third person is often used for the other two, especially in the plural, as we say, 'I hate self.'—*πρὸς οὐδενός*: *Πρός* is a favorite preposition with persons, wider than *ὑπό* with the passive. See c. 4, 84.

17. *πίσσεσθαι δύνασθαι*: Verbs of will and power (auxiliary verbs) seldom take the fut. inf., the use of which tense is chiefly confined to oratio obliqua relations. Occasional exceptions occur. So notably in Thucydides, 1, 27; 3, 28; 6, 6. 57.

18. *λελογίσμεθα*: Verbs of reflection and calculation may take the construction of verbs of thinking, in which case they take the inf. as here, or of verbs of knowing, in which case they take *ᾧς* with the ind., as in cc. 8, 1; 12, 41; 19, 14; or the participle, c. 40, 13.—*ἐλεγχόμεθα*: *Ἐλεγχός ἐστι προφορά ἀμαρτίας εἰς τὸ μίσον φέρουσα*, Clem. Alex. Paedag. 1, 9, 78.

19. *διγνώσμεθα*: The combination of *ἦν* with subj. and ind. is rare. *Εἰ* must be understood with the ind. as *ἰάν* with the subj. in the combination *εἰ* w. ind. and subj.—*ἀποκτείναι*: The *sentiment* is found in Plato. Socrates says (Apol. 30 C): *ἐμὶ μὲν γὰρ οὐδὲν ἂν βλάψειεν οὔτε Μίλητος οὔτε Ἄνυτος· οὐδὲ γὰρ ἂν εὖναιτο*. The *language*, with its effective rhetorical position, is traditional. *Ἐμὶ δὲ Ἄνυτος καὶ Μίλητος ἀποκτείναι μὲν δύνανται, βλάψαι δὲ οὐ*, Epictet. Enchir. 53, 3; Diss. 1, 29, 18; 2, 2, 15; 3, 3, 21. Comp. Max. Tyr. Diss. 18, 8; Origen, c. Cels. 8, 8.

### 3. RIGHT TO A FAIR TRIAL.

1. *δοῦναι*: *δοκεῖν* more commonly means 'seen' than 'think;' the more usual construction would be, *μὴ ἀλογος φωνὴ εἶδεν τινὶ ταῦτα*.

2. *ἀξιόμην*: Here in its proper sense.—*κατηγορούμενα αὐτῶν*: Verbs which take the gen. of the person and acc. of the thing retain the gen. when turned into the passive. *Κατηγορεῖν* not invariably in a bad sense. See c. 4, 4. *αὐτῶν*=*τῶν Χριστιανῶν*.

3. *ἔχοντα*: Verbs of perception (knowing and showing) take *ᾧς* or *ὧς* with the finite verb of intellectual perception (c. 2, 8), the participle of actual or intellectual perception. There are exceptions, but in view of the mass of examples the exceptions vanish. But in later Greek the line between verbs of perception and verbs of conception (thinking) is often effaced.—*ἀποδεικνύονται*: The tendency in the decline of a language is towards a mechanical syntax, as, for instance, in American English; hence often in later Greek neut. pl. with a plural verb. See cc. 50, 10; 52, 7. In a classic writer the plural might be justified by the variety of the charges.

4. *κολάζεσθαι*: *Κόλασις ψυχῆς θεραπεία ἐπὶ ἀμαρτήματι γενομένη*, [Plato] *Deff.* 416. The philosophical distinction between *κόλασις*, 'chastisement,' and *τιμωρία*, 'punishment,' the one *reformatory*, the other *punitivæ* (*Ar. Rhet.* 1, 10, 17; *Aul. Gell.* 6, 14), is often practically neglected. See Ast on Plato, *Protag.* 324 B; *Clem. Alex. Paed.* 1, 8, 70. *κ.* and *τ.* combined, c. 43, 4; B 8, 12.—*πρέπον ἔστιν*: When the participle is used in the predicate, it regularly becomes an adjective. So *πρίπων* often. So *μῖλον ἴστι*, c. 44, 39; *ἰξόν ἴστι*, c. 66, 2. But comp. c. 19, 5.—*ἄλλον γε κολάζειν*: So Beckmann for the untenable *μᾶλλον ἐὶ κολάζειν*, which some editors have tortured themselves to explain, others (*Sylburg, Maran*) have tried to emend, yet others (*Thirlby, Otto*) have thought it best to drop. 'We think it meet that we should be punished as it is proper to punish any other.' We expect the same measure to be meted to us as to other offenders. The omission of *μᾶλλον* *δὲ κολάζειν* is ticklish in view of the parallel in *Athenag. Suppl.* 2, 6: *κολάζεσθαι οὐ παραιτούμεθα ἀλλὰ καὶ ἥτις πικροτάτη καὶ ἀνηλεὲς τιμωρία ὑπέχειν ἀξιοῦμεν*, an evident exaggeration of our passage. In his last edition *Otto* has accepted the conjecture of *Bellios*, *ὡς πρίπων ἴστιν ἀλόγως* (for *τοῖς ἀλόγως*) *κολάζειν*.

5. *εἰ . . . ἔχοι*: *Εἰ* with opt. in the protasis and the opt. and *ἂν* in the apodosis is the ideal condition of the Greek language. It is one of the commonest and steadiest forms, equivalents being less freely employed for the opt. with *ἂν*. It is the condition of the fancy, and is chiefly used for illustration, or when an element of hope or fear (wish) comes in. In later Greek *εἰ* with the opt. is not so sharply distinguished from *ἰάν* with the subj. as in the classic period, and occasional deviations are to be found in all stages.—*ἔχοι*=*ἔναιτο*. No over-subtle distinction is to be made, as is shown by *Xen. Oec.* 1, 2, where *ἔχομεν ἂν*=*ἐνναιμεθ' ἂν*.

6. *φήμην*: Remember that to the Greeks *φήμη* was far more mysterious and potent than 'rumor' is to us.—*πονηρὰν*: *Πονηρός* = *ὁ δραστήκιος τοῦ κακοῦ*. *Π.* is 'troublesome,' 'mischievous,' as *φαῦλος* is 'worthless,' 'vile;' used of persons or personified things. In Plato it is opposed to *χρηστός*, combined with *ἀχρηστος*, *αἰσχροός*.

7. *ἐαντούς*=*ἐμᾶς αὐτούς*. See c. 2, 16.—*οἱ οὐ κρίσει κτλ.*: The negative of the causal relative in classic Gr. is regularly *οὐ*, but as the cause may be based on character, and thus conceived as

*Quint. 2, 128: φήμης ἐν δὲ τῇ ἐξοχῇ*

a condition (logical), the negative *μή* is occasionally found even in the best times with the causal relative, and becomes the rule at a later period. Here we have the classic usage, but comp. c. 5, 9.—*τὰ πράγματα ἐπάγειν*: *Ἐπάγειν* is often used in the sense of bringing some evil on one, *ἀτην, πῆμα, νόσους, αἰρίαν, εἰκην καὶ κόλασιν ἐπάγειν* (Origen, c. Cels. 4, 99). *Τὰ πράγματα*, 'this trouble,' but I should not expect *τά*. Otto now takes *τὰ πράγματα* as 'this suit.'

8. *πρόκλησιν*: *Πρόκλησις, prolocutio*, demand of final adjustment. Otto now edits *πρόσκλησιν*, after Thirlby.—*ταύτην*: For *τοῦτο*, by attraction of gender.

9. *τὸ . . . παρέχειν*: The article simply adds to the inf. a demonstrative force. So c. 12, 35. Apposition to *ταύτην*. 'The good old rule that.' Observe that the articular infinitive often involves an imperative notion (obligation, necessity, and the like). So in titles of tracts: *περὶ τοῦ μὴ ῥαδίως πιστεῖν διαβολῇ* (Lucian). Comp. Lat. gerundive, e. g. *de contemnenda morte*.—*εὐθύνην*=*εἰθύναν*, 'straightening of accounts,' hence 'account.'

10. *βίου καὶ λόγου*: *λόγου*=*μαθημάτων*.—*ἐληπτον*=*ἀνεπιληπτον*, for which it is perhaps miswritten.—*παρέχειν*: The difference between *παρίχειν* (c. 4, 25) and *παρίχεσθαι* is not to be urged. Notice, however, that the active is used of agreeable or disagreeable actions; the middle of agreeable actions chiefly.

12. *τὴν ψῆφον τίθεσθαι*=*ψῆφον φέρειν*. A familiar expression.

13. *Οὕτως*=protasis of a condit. sentence, e. g. *εἰ . . . τιθοῖντο*.

14. *τις*: Plato. To us a curious affectation (Thirlby). But comp. Tit. 1, 12 (of Epimenides): *εἰπὶ τις ἐξ αὐτῶν ἱεὶς αὐτῶν προφήτης κτλ.* So Imit. Christ. 1, 13, 5: *Unde quidam (= Orilius) dixit: Principiis obsta.—Ἄν μὴ οἱ ἄρχοντες κτλ.*: The sentiment is a rough approximation to Plato, De Rep. 5, 473 D: *ἰάν μὴ ἡ οἱ φιλόσοφοι βασιλεύσωσιν ἐν ταῖς πόλεσιν ἢ οἱ βασιλεῖς . . . φιλοσοφήσωσιν, οὐκ ἔστι κακῶν πυλᾶ ταῖς πόλεσι*. Comp. also [Plato] Ep. 7, 326 B. The looseness of this quotation has been noticed in connection with Justin's manner of citing the Gospels. The reference to the passage of Plato is peculiarly apt, as the sentence was a favorite one with both the Antonines. The editors cite Aurel. Vict. Hist. Rom. Brev. p. 258, ed. Lugd.; Capitol. Vit. M. Ant. 27.

15. φιλοσοφήσῃσι: Tr. 'become philosophers.' When the present denotes a state, the aorist, which is the tense of attainment, denotes an entrance upon that state (ingressive aorist). The upshot is an outset. So εὐδαιμονῆσαι, 'to become happy.'

16. Ἡμέτερον ἔργον: Ἔργον common, but not necessary.

17. μαθημάτων = λόγον. — ἐπίσκεψιν: 'Inspection.' — μήπως . . . δόλῃσωμεν: The MSS. have ὅπως ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀγνοεῖν—αὐτῶν αὐτοῖς δόλῃσωμεν. No end of conjectures might be cited. For ὅπως some read ὅπως μή, more in accordance with Justin's usage than Thirlby's μήπως (Otto). Αὐτῶν is simply impossible; it cannot be dependent on τυφλώττοντες (Maran), as this would require οἱ τυφλώττοντες; it cannot be the correlative of ὧν on account of its position. For αὐτοῖς I read with Grabe αὐτοί. Otto now reads ὅπως μὴ αὐτοὶ ἑαυτοῖς. I doubt the correctness of the dative in the sense of εἰς w. acc. See Eur. Phoen. 763: πατήρ δ' εἰς αὐτὸν ἀμαθίαν δόλῃσκάνει. Notice here that Justin never uses αὐτόν and the rest, but always ἑαυτόν. For Justin's sense of responsibility, comp. Dial. c. Tr. 58: ἥς χάριτος καὶ πάντας κοινωνοὺς ἀμισῶρι καὶ ἀφθόνως παρακαλῶ γίνεσθαι ὅπως μὴ καὶ τούτου χάριν κρῖσιν δόλῃσω.

18. νομίζοντων: 'Think fit,' just as οἶμαι = οἶμαι δεῖν. See Xen. Hell. 4, 7, 4 (with Breitenbach's note); 5, 1, 15. So ἡγεῖται φερεῖν, 'thinks he must bear,' Dial. c. T. 35.

19. πλημμελεῖσι: 'Trespass.' The notion of a false step lies in the πλημμέλεια of the LXX. as well as in the 'trespass' of the A. V. Plato, Legg. 3, 691 A: ὁ μὲν οὖν ἐμμελῶς ἡμῶν, ὁ δὲ πλημμελῶς ἐν τούτοις πᾶσι κινεῖται.—τυφλώττοντες: Not earlier than Polybius; used chiefly in a metaphorical sense. Comp. Fr. areugler and areuglement (different fr. cécité).—δόλῃσωμεν: Rare and chiefly late 1 aor. of δόλῃσκάνω.

20. αἰρεῖ λόγος: A common classical phrase: *ratio erincit*. Comp. the use of αἰρεῖν in the courts.

21. Ἀναπολόγητον: Διὸ ἀναπολόγητος εἰ, ὦ ἄνθρωπε, πᾶς ὁ κρίνων, Rom. 2, 1. — λοιπόν: 'For the rest,' often employed like the Lat. *ceterum*, a later usage, found everywhere in this stage, e. g. Athenag. Suppl. 3, 13; Theophil. ad Autolyc. 1, 10; Clem. Alex. Protrept. 2, 5; Ep. Eccl. Vien. et Lugd. ap. Euseb. H. E. 5, 1, 33. 36.

22. ὑπάρξει: Sc. τὸ μὴ τὰ δίκαια ποιῆσαι.—πρὸς θεόν: 'Against

ὁ μὲν οὖν ἐμμελῶς ἡμῶν, ὁ δὲ πλημμελῶς ἐν τούτοις πᾶσι κινεῖται.

Schen. 1. 229

God.' Πρὸς on account of the ἀπολογεῖσθαι in ἀναπολόγητον. 'In the sight of' would be πρὸς Θεοῦ.

#### 4. WHY CONDEMN A NAME?

1. *προσωπία*: I read with Grabe the nom. instead of the dative. So also Otto *now*. Athenag. (Suppl. 2, 8) has this passage in view when he writes οὐδὲν εἰ ὄνομα ἐφ' ἑαυτοῦ καὶ εἰ αὐτοῦ οὐ πονηρὸν οὔτε χρηστὸν νομίζεται.—*ἄνευ*: 'Without,' is the strict negation of union, *χωρίς* is rather 'apart from,' 'irrespective of,' but it seems impossible to make a sharp distinction.

2. *ὑποκπιτουσῶν*: An Aristotelian word, frequently used by Clem. Alex. This line of argument is common after Justin.

3. *ἐπεί*: Adversative, 'whereas,' 'and yet.' Just below the same conjunction is causal.—*ὅσον γε*: The MSS. have *ὅσον τε*. This epitatic *τε* is not in use with *ὅσον* in Attic prose. Sylburg replaced the familiar restrictive *ὅσον γε*.—*κατηγορουμένων*: 'Predicated,' 'applied.' Comp. 'category' and 'predicament.' See Athenag. Suppl. 5, 19, and especially 11, 47: *τί τὸ ὑποκείμενον καὶ τί τὸ κατηγορούμενον*, 'subject and predicate.' Also c. 7, 9.

4. *χρηστότατοι*: The confusion between *ι* and *η* began early. See c. 29, 7; B 3, 3. *Christus* was often written *Chrestus*, *Christianus*, *Chrestianus*. See Tertull. Apol. 3 (p. 33, D. S.). The Christian writers are far from averse to *paronomasia*, and the play on *Χριστός* and *χρηστός* was especially welcome. Comp. Theophil. ad Autol. 1, 12: *ἐγὼ μὲν ὁμολογῶ εἶναι Χριστιανὸς καὶ φορῶ τὸ θεοφιλὲς ὄνομα τοῦτο ἑλπίζων εἶναι εὐχρηστος τῷ Θεῷ*. Of the various words for 'good,' *χρηστός* emphasizes 'kindness,' *bonté* (*bonitas*). The true etymology of *Χριστός* is given, B 6, 9.—*ὑπάρχον*: Quite colorless. See c. 1, 10.—*τοῦτο*: Anticipates the infinitive, as often.

5. *ἡγοῦμεθα*: *ἡγεῖσθαι* is *ducere*, 'deem,' often of solid conviction as opposed to *οἰεσθαι*, *opinari*, 'fancy,' 'ween.' *Νομίζω*, 'take,' has little color.—*πάλιν*: The periodology is not elegant.

6. *εἰ . . . εὐρισκόμεθα*: The logical condition (ind. or equivalent in both members) brings the condition to the test of fact. The case is either so or not so. With the unreal condition (*εἰ* ind.—ind. with *ἄν*), the condition fails. With the ideal condition the test may never be applied, indeed, may not be applicable. The



anticipatory condition is preferred in most future relations to the logical (ei w. fut. ind.), from which it differs in tone and in exactness.—διὰ τε . . . καὶ διὰ: Normal position.

7. πολιτεῖαν: Πολιτεία, 1. Conduct as citizens; 2. Conduct generally. In the latter sense very common in this class of literature.

8. ἀδικοῦντες: Εὐρίσκειν is a verb of perception; hence the participle. See c. 3, 8.—ἀγωνιάσαι: The history of ἀγών and its derivatives from the simple 'gathering' of Homer, through 'contest' and 'struggle' to 'agony' is significant. 'Ἀγωνιᾶν in the sense of 'being eager for the fray,' 'earnestly endeavoring,' takes the inf. (as Orig. c. Cels. 7, 10); in the sense of 'fearing' or 'apprehending,' the subj., as here.

9. τοῖς μὴ ἐλεγχομένοις: The generic (conditional) participle with the article regularly takes the neg. μὴ, and this rule is extended (more and more in later Greek) to individuals, who may be thus classified. The neg. οὐ is used, 1. Of actual cases considered as such; 2. When οὐ forms a familiar and close union with the participle. This close union is sufficiently symbolized by the absence of accent. So οὐ ἐνναρόν=ἀένναρον.—τῇ δίκῃ: Μετὰ δίκης or ἐν δίκῃ is the rule; δίκῃ, Plato, Critias, 112 E; τῇ δίκῃ, Legg. 7, 808 E. Personification, 'to justice,' 'at the hands of justice' would be more vivid.—ἐφ' ἡγήσῃτε: C. 3, 19.

10. οὐκ ἂν . . . γένοιτο: The opt. with ἂν is the potential of the Greek language. It expresses the conviction of the speaker as a conviction. The future element is the ascertainment of the predicate. With the pres. opt. the action itself may be present or future; with the aor. it is future. As the aor. is naturally associated with the negative, the aor. opt. and ἂν with neg. is very common. The transl. with the negat. is often 'can,' with the positive 'must.' Remember that the English language has nothing to correspond to the Gr. future, and the English future is often as good a rendering of the opt. and ἂν as it is of the Gr. future.

11. ἢν μὴ τι: 'Unless something,' ἢν μηδέν, 'if nothing.'

12. Καὶ γάρ: Καὶ repeats with emphasis the predicative notion of the preceding sentence. 'And' (I may well say so) 'for.' But sometimes καὶ belongs to a single word, as c. 62, 6; B 10, 13; 13, 1. —ἐφ' ὧν: Ἐπὶ with gen. often of tribunals. So ἐπὶ δικάσιων.

Others wish to read *ἐξ ὑμῶν*, i. e. the Pagans. Πάντας does not necessarily exclude the partitive: τὰ γὰρ ἀναγκαῖα ὑπάρχοντά ἐστι πᾶσι τοῖς ἐν ταύτῃ τῇ πόλει, Plato, Legg. 6, 774 C.

13. *πρὶν ἀλεγθῆναι*: After positive sentences *πρὶν* commonly takes the inf.; after neg. sentences, it has the construction of *ἕως*, 'until,' when the meaning is that of *ἕως*. This is the Attic rule, but there are exceptions, so that it is safer to say that, 1. When *πρὶν* must be translated 'before,' it must have the inf.; 2. When it may be translated 'until,' it may take the finite constructions of *ἕως*, 'until.' *Πρὶν* commonly takes the aor. on account of the negative sense which lies in the comparative *πρὶν* = *πρ(ο)-ι(ο)ν, prius*. In Attic prose *πρὶν* seldom has *ῆ*. In Justin *πρὶν ῆ* is the more common with the inf. Observe that in this stage we often find *πρὶν* with subj. (opt.) after positive clauses, contrary to Attic rule, e. g., Origen. c. Cels. 1, 42; 2, 42; 6, 68; 7, 20.—*ἴθι ἡμῶν*: 'In our case.'

14. *καίπερ* . . . *ὀφείλετε*: *Καίπερ*, with a finite verb in the sense of *εἰ καὶ* or *καίτοι*, is very rare in the classic time. See c. 7, 7.

18. *μὴ εἶναι φήσας*: The neg. of the inf. after verbs of saying and thinking is regularly *οὐ*. Here the neg. may be explained by the conditional clause, but in this period the neg. *μὴ* is employed anywhere with the inf. Even in the classic time, verbs of saying and thinking, which involve the will, take more or less frequently *μὴ*, and regularly when averment is meant (so verbs of swearing always, as *ὀμνύναι*). The later use of *ὅτι μὴ* in oratio obliqua is a part of the same development. See c. 24, 1.

19. *ὡς μὴδὲν* . . . *ἐχόντες*: Regularly *οὐκ εἶν*. 'Ὡς with the participle is a post-Homeric growth of the language, and forms a kind of oratio obliqua. That it is not felt as a conditional participle is shown. 1. By the neg. *οὐ*, except when the leading verb demands *μὴ*; 2. By the use of the fut. part., which is not regularly used as the protasis of an abridged conditional sentence. While the combination may often be translated 'as if,' yet 'thinking,' 'expecting,' 'hoping,' are really more accurate. 'Ὡς with the part. may be compared with the subjunctive of partial obliquity (e. g. *quod w. subj.*) in Latin. In this stage *μὴ* is often found without good reason, i. e. without a preceding imperative, inf., or the like.

Thom  
= c. 1  
= 11. 16  
II 90 16  
- 5/2.)

Phil. 1. 1. 344

20. *ἴσον*: Acc. abs., the regular absolute construction for the impersonal verb, oftenest in an adversative sense 'whereas.' See c. 27, 11; B 2, 20.

22. *Ὅν τρόπον*: This adverbial acc. is common enough in classical Greek, very common in LXX. Justin uses it regularly instead of *οὕτως* . . . *ὥς*, so that it amounts to a trick. See Index.—*παραλαβόντες* . . . *παρὰ τοῦ διδασκάλου*: *Παραλαμβάνειν* is often used of being taught. Plato, Theaet. 198 B: *καὶ καλοῦμιν γε παραδιδόντα μὲν διδάσκειν, παραλαμβάνοντα δὲ μανθάνειν*. 1 Cor. 11, 23: *ἐγὼ γὰρ παρίλαβον ἀπὸ τοῦ κυρίου ὃ καὶ παρίδωκα ὑμῖν*.—*Χριστοῦ*: Matt. 10, 33.

24. *μὴ ἀρνεῖσθαι*: 'Not to deny' (him).—*παρακλείονται*: 'Act as exhorters,' encourage others to become Christians by their bold confession. Justin is speaking from his own experience. See Introd. xi., and comp. Tertull. Apol. sub fin.: *Illa ipsa obstinatio, quam exprobratis, magistra est*. However, the absolute use of *παρακλ.* is not satisfactory, and Thirlby's suggestion, *παρατροῦνται*, is worth considering.

25. *κακῶς ζῶντες*: We should expect *οἱ κ. ζ.* (Ashton). A fling at the Gnostics. See c. 26, 32 (Otto).—*ἀφορμαί*: 'Starting-points,' 'capital,' 'handles.' See c. 44, 27.—*ἄλλως*: 'Idly,' 'thoughtlessly,' 'rashly.'

26. *καταλέγειν*: Not so formal as *κατηγορεῖν*. Verbs compounded with the *κατά* of hostility take the gen. when the simple verb does not take a personal object.

27. *οὐκ* . . . *οὐδέ*: The second negative subdivides the first, as often in old and idiomatic English.—*μέν=μήν*.—*καὶ γάρ τοι*: On *καὶ γάρ* see l. 12; *τοι* (of disputed origin) always appeals to the consciousness of the hearer.

28. *σχῆμα*: 'Attire,' 'garb.' *Σχῆμα*, *habitus*, 'position,' 'posture,' 'bearing,' with reference to the external effect; *μορφή*, 'mould,' 'form,' with reference to the embodiment of an organic principle. Comp. Rom. 12, 2: *μὴ συσχηματίζεσθαι τῷ αἰῶνι τούτῳ ἀλλὰ μεταμορφοῦσθαι τῇ ἀνακαινώσει τοῦ νοῦς ὑμῶν* with 2 Cor. 11, 14: *αὐτὸς ὁ σατανᾶς μετασχηματίζεται εἰς ἄγγελον φωτός*. Of course *μορφή* may appear as *σχῆμα*. So *σχῆμα* of sex. Dialog. c.T. 23; Constt. Apostt. 6, 11.—*ἐπιγράφονται*: 'Assume' as a false name. Comp. Clem. Alex. Protrept. 2, 25: *τὸν πολλοῖς*

ἡπιγραφόμενον ψευδωνύμους θεούς, ὥσπερ ὁ ἐκ τῆς πόρνης τοῖς πολλοῖς ἡπιγράφεται πατήρας ἀγνοία τοῦ πρὸς ἀλήθειαν πατρός.

81. τῶν παλαιῶν: Depends on οἱ δοξάσαντες (Maran).

82. ἀθέτητα: Comp. Athenag. Suppl. 3, 12: τρία ἐπιφημίζουσιν ἡμῖν ἐγκλήματα, ἀθεότητα, θύιστεια εἰκνα, Οἰδιποδείους μίξεις. Remember that the Christians were called ἀθεοί. The popular cry was αἶρε τοὺς ἀθείους. See the famous account of the martyrdom of Polycarp in Euseb. H. E. 4, 15, 18 (p. 113, D. S.). Julian's regular name for the Christian religion was ἀθείτης, e. g. Ep. 49. Of course the Christians retorted. Comp. Origen, c. Cels. 1, 1: ἡ ἀθεος πολυθεότης. — ἀσελγή: 'ἀσελγής is a hard word to fix. Passow (Rost) observes that ἀσελγής is not used of women until the time of Plutarch and Lucian. 'Ἀσίλγεια, according to Gregory of Nazianz. Carm. 34, 57–8, is the opposite of σωφροσύνη. Calvin says (ad Gal. 5, 10): *Lascivia est tamquam instructum; nam qui petulanter ac dissolute se gerunt, illis Graeci vocant ἀσίλγεις.*

83. καταγγέλλουσι: Κατά implies long-windedness, 'trumpet.'

84. ἐκείνων: The philosophers.—πρὸς ἡμῶν: See c. 2, 17.

85. εὐφώνως ὑβρίζουσι: One of Justin's few telling phrases, copied by Theophil. ad Autolyc. 3, 30. Comp. also 3, 8: εὐφρονότερον ᾄδουσι τὰς χαλεπὰς πράξεις, and 15.—τούτους: The gods. Depends on ὑβρίζουσι. Xenophanes had said hundreds of years before: πάντα θεοῖς ἀνίστηκαν "Ομηρός δ' "Ἡσίοδός τε | ὅσσα παρ' ἀνθρώποισιν ὀνειδέα καὶ ψόγος ἴστιν.

### 5. CHRISTIANS NO ATHEISTS.

1. Τί δὴ οὖν ἂν εἴη: An impatient question, as is shown by εἴη. The mood of the question is the mood of the expected or anticipated answer. With the opt. and ἂν the speaker answers himself. Being in effect a negative (c. 4, 10), translate it by 'can.' 'What then can all this mean?'—Ἐφ' ἡμῶν: 'In our case.'—ἐπισχευόμενον: 'Although we promise,' i. e., 'declare.' Adversative relations are expressed by the participle.

2. μηδὲν εἰδικέν: The neg. μηδέν because of the asseveration. See c. 4, 18.

4. δαιμόνων: On the demons as the instigators of persecutions see c. 44; B 1. 5, 8; Dialog. c. Tryph. 39; Tertull. Apol. 27.—μὴ φροντίζοντες=οἵτινες μὴ φροντίζετε. The causal participle, like

the causal relative (c. 3, 6), has regularly *ὅ* in classic Gr., but even there *μή* is found, because the cause may be considered as a characteristic. Comp. Lat. *qui* w. subj. and *qui* w. ind. In later Gr. *μή* meets us at every turn.

5. *Ἐλρήσεται*: This fut. perf. is often used of bold and final utterance, e. g. Eur. Ion, 760; Dem. 44, 4; Din. 1, 10. So also *λελίξεται*, Plat. De Rep. 5, 457 B; very often in Origen, c. Cels. 1, 46. 70; 2, 26. 75; 3, 22; 4, 4. 60. 70, al.

6. *ἐπιφανείας ποιησάμενοι* = *ἐπιφάνιντες*. See c. 1, 9.

8. *ὥς καταπληγῆναι*: *Ὡς* or *ὥς* (neg. *μή*) gives the tendency or adaptation to a result ('so as'), which is often conveniently translated 'so that,' the proper rendering of *ὥστε* (seldom *ὥς*) with the finite verb (neg. *οὐ*). — *τοὺς οἷ*: The article is little used in Attic prose as a substantive antecedent. Most of the examples are from Plato. Otto cites fr. Justin, D. c. T. 47: *τὰ ὅσα*, Cohort. 2: *τὸν ὄν*. Add Clem. Alex. Protrept. 6. 70: *τοὺς ὅσοι*, Paedag. 3, 8, 41: *τῶν ὅσα*, Origen, c. Cels. 1, 12: *τῶν ὅσοι*, and elsewhere; Euseb. H. E. 4, 10, 17: *τοὺς οἷς*.

9. *μη ἐπιστάμενοι δαίμονας εἶναι φαύλους*: On *μή* see l. 4. *Ἐπιστάσθαι* as a verb of knowing takes the constructions mentioned c. 3, 3, but later writers are prone to use the inf. with such verbs. Herodotus treats *ἰ* as a verb of thinking, and even in Attic it is not unfrequently found with acc. and inf. 'E. as *existimare* in Athenag. Suppl. 1, 1.

14. *καὶ αὐτόν*: So now Otto after Thirlby for *αὐτοί*.

15. *ἐνήργησαν . . . ἀποκτείνειν*: 'Caused the killing,' 'caused to be killed,' so-called active for passive inf. Otto has allowed himself to print in the last ed. *ἀποκτείνεσθαι*. Even Justin would have preferred *ἀποθανεῖν*.

16. *ὡς ἔθεον*: Sc. *ὕψα*. — *καινὰ δαιμόνια*: See Xen. Mem. 1, 1; Plat. Apol. 24 B and B 10.

17. *ἐφ' ἡμῶν*: As above. l. 1.

18. *ἰν*: Due to Otto. — *ὑπὸ λόγου ἡλέγχθη ταῦτα*: See Introd.

19. *βαρβάρους*: Calmly historical; 'non-Hellenic.' Some of the other Fathers show much more feeling on the subject. So notably Justin's disciple Tatian, c. Gr. 1, 30. 35. 42. Comp. Origen, c. Cels. 1, 2.

22. *μή ὁρθῶς θεοὺς*: The MSS. have *ὁρθοίς*, which Otto (after

See Plato's Politeia 264



strained. If the passage is to be emended, I would suggest τοῦ τῶν ἄλλων . . . στρατοῦ ἀρχιστράτηγον. The mass of similar words might have led to the dropping of ἀρχιστράτηγον. Christ is identified with the ἀρχιστράτηγος of Joshua 5, 14, in Dial. c. T. 61, and, unless I am mistaken, Eusebius, a great admirer of Justin, has this passage in his mind (H. E. 1, 3) when he calls Christ τὸν τῆς κατ' οὐρανὸν λογικῆς καὶ ἀθανάτου στρατιᾶς ἀρχιστράτηγον. As to τῶν ἄλλων ἀγγέλων, every novice knows that in Gr. ἄλλος (ὁ ἄλλος) does not necessarily include as 'another,' 'the other' in English, and even if it did here, Christ is often called an angel. So c. 63, 41, and in the Dial. c. T. passim, e. g. 59.

7. πνεῦμά τε τὸ προφητικόν: The copulatives may be worth noticing. Father and Son are closely connected by τε . . . καί, the Spirit coming in afterwards. Πν. τὸ πρ. is in the third attributive position; the first being τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα (συντομία, Aristotle), the second, τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ προφητικόν (ὄγκος). The third is, or affects to be, easy, hence often in Herodotus ἀπλῶς.

8. προσκυνούμεν: See c. 16, 20.

10. παραδιδόντες: See c. 4, 23.

#### 7. THE LIFE IS THE TRUE TEST.

1. Ἀλλὰ φήσει . . . καταδικάζετε: The sense of this passage seems to be: 'But it will be said that some Christians have been convicted of being malefactors. Well, that ought not to prevent you from examining them all. For in the case of others when you condemn them, you condemn them upon examination of their conduct, and not on account of those previously convicted. Each man must be proved guilty. There must be no prejudice, no πρόληψις.'—Καὶ γάρ: Elliptical. See c. 4, 12.

4. προελεγχθέντας: So Perionius and others for προλεχθέντας, 'aforesaid,' which makes no satisfactory sense, whether referred to the Christians with Otto, or to the demons with Trollope. For 'aforesaid,' προειρημένους would be more common.—καταδικάζετε: With acc. Exceptional. See c. 3, 2.

5. ἐν τρόπῳ: See c. 4, 22.

6. τὰ αὐτοῖς: Αὐτοῖς, *ipsis*, instead of the reflexive αὐτοῖς, which

Justin does not use for *λαυοῖς* (Otto). See c. 32, 8.—*ἐκ παντός*: 'Generally,' B 12, 8.

7. *καίπερ . . . ὅντων*: The participle is the regular form of the adversative, which states an opposing *fact*, while the concessive grants an opposing *notion*. The neg. of the adversative is *οὐ* (*οὐκί*), of the concessive *μή* (*μηκί*). The participle is often strengthened by *καί, καίπερ*, 'even,' 'ever so.'

9. *ἐπικατηγορούμενον*: Not in a bad sense, though it may be so used. *Ἐπικατηγορεῖν*, a common word in Sext. Empir. Indifferent, Athenag. Suppl. 5, 19; good, l. c. 23, 115; bad, l. c. 31, 155; Tatian, ad Gr. 27. With the thought comp. Origen, c. Cels. 2, 27: *ὥσπερ οὐ φιλοσοφίας ἐγκλημά εἰσιν οἱ σοφισταὶ ἢ οἱ Ἐπικούρειοι ἢ οἱ Περιπατητικοὶ ἢ οἱ τινὲς ποτ' ἂν ὦσιν οἱ φιλοδοξοῦντες, οὕτως οὐ τῶν ἀληθινῶν Χριστιανῶν ἐγκλημα οἱ μεταχαράττοντες τὰ εὐαγγέλια ἐπὶ*.

12. *ὡς ἔδικος*: 'As=ut.'

13. *φάνηται*: Notice the rare 2 aor. middle. The tense matches *ἐλεγχθεῖς=ἰάν ἐλεγχθῇ*.

14. *Οὐ γὰρ . . . ἀξιόσμεν*: A reference to the clause in Hadrian's rescript, in which calumniators of Christians are threatened with punishment (Grabe).

#### 8. THIS LIFE IS NOT WORTH A LIE. 'WE ASPIRE WHILE WE EXPIRE.'

1. *Δογίσασθε ὅτι*: 'Count upon it (as a fact) that.' See c. 2, 18.—*ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν*: Otto comp. Plato, Apol. 30 D: *πολλοῦ ἔγω γὰρ ὑπὲρ ἱμαντοῦ ἀπολογέσθαι*. . . . *ἀλλ' ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν*.—*ἔφημεν=εἰρήσαμεν*. Notice the form. Buttmann (Ausführ. Gr. § 109, Anm. 3\*) denies the existence of a special aor. in *η*. Here it is, though late. Not in Veitch.—*ἐφ' ἡμῖν*: 'In our power,' a very common use of the preposition, especially in the Stoic school, in which *τὰ ἐφ' ἡμῖν, τὰ οὐκ ἐφ' ἡμῖν*, were catch-words, e. g. Epictet. Enchir. 1, 1, 2.

3. *ψευδολογούντες=ἐπὶ τῷ ψευδολογεῖν*, 'on condition of lying.'—*τοῦ αἰωνίου*: Τοῦ of the ideal standard. Comp. Soph. Ai. 473: *αἰσχρὸν γὰρ ἀνδρὶ τοῦ μακροῦ χρόνιον βίου | κακοῖσιν ὅστις μηδεὶν ἐξαλλάσσεται*.

4. *μετὰ θεοῦ*: Krüger, with his wonted Laconism, defines *σύν* as *coherence*, *μετά* as *coexistence*, and points to the narrowing effect of



*σύν* in composition with *μετά*; Kühner, on the other hand, seems to make *μετά* the closer, *σύν* the wider. More important than either view is the result of Tycho Mommsen's researches, 'that the use of *σύν* with the dative is almost wholly restricted to the higher forms of poetry and Xenophon, who has a leaning to poetical and religious phraseology, while *μετά* is reserved for prose, and for such forms of poetry as approximate most closely to it.' Notice the standing (religious) phrase, *σύν Θεῷ*. Athenag. (Suppl. 31, 157) refines on *μετά Θεοῦ* and *σύν Θεῷ*. At all events *μετά* is much more common. So Isocrates does not use *σύν* at all (as Haupt observed long ago), and even in Xenophon's *Memorabilia*, according to Prof. Price's count, *μετά* w. gen. occurs sixteen times, *σύν* only nine times.

6. *παισθέντες καὶ πιστεύοντες*: Justin often combines the passive of *πείθω* and *πιστεύω*. Generally he uses them in their genetic order, *πιστεύειν* being the result of *πεισθῆναι*. But when he wishes to emphasize conviction as a living, working principle, he reverses the usual arrangement, as in c. 17, 14, which shows that he does not use them as synonyms. Belief is conceived by the Gr. now as knowledge (*ὄρι*), now as thought, now as an intellectual perception, now as dependent on the will (neg. *μή*). So verbs causative of belief, such as *πείθω*. Comp. Plat. Theaet. 201 B: τὸ πείσαι δ' οὐχὶ δοξάσαι λέγεις ποιῆσαι;

8. *πείσαντας*: When action is to be produced, *πείθειν* takes the inf.; when belief, *ὄρι* (of objective knowledge), sometimes the inf. Here *πείσαντας* is a verb of showing. See c. 8. 3.—*παρ' αὐτῷ*: *Παρά* with persons of characteristic locality, e. g. *παρὰ τῷ στρατηγῷ*, 'at head-quarters,' *παρὰ τῷ διδασκάλῳ*, 'at school,' *παρ' αὐτῷ*, 'with Him' 'in Heaven.'

12. *Ῥαδάμανθυν καὶ Μίνω*: Plato, Gorg. 523 E. Justin almost always treats his old master tenderly. There is a perceptible difference of tone in the other Fathers, who adduce the same parallel, as Athenag. Suppl. 12, 50.

18. *παρ' αὐτούς*: 'Before their bar.' *Ἐπειδὴν ἀφίκωνται παρὰ τὸν δικαστήν*, Plato, l. c. 524 E.

14. *κάν τοῖς αὐτοῖς*: *Κάν* for *καί*, with Davis.

15. *γινομένων*: Gen. absolute without a subject, not uncommon. Supply *ἀνθρώπων*, if need be: 'while men are living in the same

59: ἐπὶ τῇ θείᾳ μετ' αὐτῶν.  
 29, 29: καὶ τὸν μετ' αὐτῶν.  
 καὶ 26; 19: τὸν μετ' αὐτῶν σὺν αὐτοῖς

bodies with their souls, and are doomed to eternal punishment.' The passage is generally considered corrupt, but nothing satisfactory has been suggested by way of emendation.

16. χιλιονταετη: Late for χιλιετη. See Plato, Phaedr. 249 A; De Republ. 10, 615 A.

17. Εἰ . . . φήσει τις: Harsher and rarer form of the fut. conditional, with the same tone as our English 'shall.'

18. πρὸς ἡμᾶς . . . ἔτερον: The passage is commonly edited thus: Εἰ . . . φήσει τις πρὸς ἡμᾶς, ἥτοι ἡ πλάνη ἴσθιν ἄλλου πρὸς ἔτερον, which is supposed to mean: 'If any one shall say to us that this is incredible or impossible, well, this is a common error, a mistake of one thing for another, a mere mistake in detail, eternity for a thousand years, or some such matter.' I have followed Thirlby and Davis, to whom even Otto has at last succumbed, 'This error is our affair, and nobody's else.' Comp. Athenag. Suppl. 36, 170: οἷς ἀπατῶμεν ἑαυτοὺς λόγοις ἀδικοῦμεν οὐδὲν, and Arnob. 2, 53: *Sed stulte istud credimus. Quid ad eos? Ineptissime, fatue. Ubi vobis nocemus vel quam vobis facimus aut iuramus iniuriam*, etc. Otto adds Tertull. Apol. 38 (p. 92 D. S.): *nostra iniuria est, non vestra*.

19. μέχρις οὐ . . . ἐλεγχόμεθα: 'So long as we are not convicted of doing any actual wrong.' Temporal conjunctions, as such, take the subj. in fut. and generic relations. With the ind. (pres. perf. and fut.) they assume a causal sense. But this is not to be insisted on in later writers.—μηδέν: Perh. μηδὲν. See Athenag. l. c.—ἐδικοῦντες: 'Ελεγχόμεθα is a verb of showing (causative of perception). See c. 3, 3.

#### 9. IDOL WORSHIP IS IDLE WORSHIP.

2. ναοῖς: Ναός is here the *cella*; ἱερόν (l. 20) is used in a wider sense.—ταῦτα: Sc. εἰδῶτα. On the subject see Athenag. Suppl. 26.

4. μὴ ἔχοντα: As μὴ is the regular negative with the articular participle, so when the partic. is predicative and the article omitted μὴ is often retained in later Gr., sometimes in classic.

7. Τί γὰρ δεῖ εἰδῶσιν ὑμῖν λέγειν: A favorite rhetorical turn. Μακρηγορεῖν ἰν εἰδῶσιν οὐ βουλόμενος, Thuc. 2, 36; ἱστοραμένοις εὖ οὐκ ἂν τις λέγοι, Hdt. 7, 8, 2. See also c. 21, 20.

8. ἀ τὴν ἑλὴν διατιθέασι: 'What they do with, how they treat,

etc.' 'Α is a cognate accusative (accus. of the inner object) dependent on διατιθίσαι. Comp. Dial. c. T. 18: τοὺς τὰ τοιαῦτα διατιθίντας ἡμᾶς; Orig. c. Cels. 3, 5: πολλὰ διαθίντες οἱ παλαὶ Αἰγύπτιοι τὸ Ἑβραίων γένος, and 6, 74; Plat. Legg. 5, 728 B: ψυχὴν ἀτιμώτατα διατιθεῖς. Also Ep. Eccl. V. et L. ap. Euseb. H. E. 5, 1, 27 (p. 133, D. S.).

9. ζιόντες . . . τύπτοντες: Comp. Isa. 40, 18; 44, 9 sqq.; Theophil. ad Autol. 2, 2.

15. ὅτι . . . ἐπίστασθε: C. 5, 10.—δουλαίς: C. 4, 82.

18. Ὁ τῆς ἐμβροντησίας: The gen. of emotion after an interjection. See E. ad D. 9, 14. 24. 25. Notice the accent of ὦ. 'Εμβρόντητος of an *attonitus*, a stupid, staring ass, a familiar word: ὠμβρόντητι σύ, Ar. Eccl. 793, 'You thundering fool;' ἡλιθίους τε καὶ ἐμβροντήτους, Plat. Alcib. II. 140 C; Orig. c. Cels. 7, 16. 34; 8, 15. 'Εμβροντησία, Plut. Mor. 1119 B.—ἀνθρώπους . . . λέγεσθαι: 'That debauched men should be said to form gods,' etc. Λίγεσθαι for λίγεσθε, Stephan.

20. φύλακας: See E. ad D. 2, 2.

21. μὴ συνορῶντες: The neg. is regular; σ. is an integral part of the inf. sentence. See c. 2, 4. Συνορᾶν, used chiefly of intellectual perception. So Athenag. Res. 15, 66.

#### 10. PROPER WORSHIP OF GOD.

1. οὐ: Read with Nolte οὐδέ. So Otto (1875).—δέσθαι: The open forms of this verb are often found in the MSS. and editions of Xenophon. So in later writers. e. g. B 14, 13; Constt. Apostt. 1, 8. With the thought comp. Athenag. Suppl. 10.

2. παρειλήφμεν: Thalemann. So also Otto, now, for προσειλήφμεν. See c. 4, 23. Προσλαμβάνειν is rather 'to assume.'—παρέχοντα: Intellectual perception. See c. 3, 3.

3. ἐκείνους: Object of προσέχεισθαι, 'accept.'—προσδέχεσθαι . . . δεδιδάγμεθα: The regular construction would be ὅτι w. finite verb. See cc. 3, 8; 5, 10.

4. καὶ πεποισμεθα καὶ πιστεύομεν: See c. 3, 6.

7. τῷ μηδενὶ . . . καλουμένῳ: See c. 4, 9.—θετῷ: See B 6, 1: Ὄνομα δὲ τῷ πάντων πατρὶ θετὸν, ἀγεννήτῳ ὄντι, οὐκ ἴσιν.—Καὶ πάντα κτί.: The rest of the chapter is very important for Justin's anthropology, which seems to lack clearness and consistency.

8. τὴν ἀρχήν: Is often used with the negative, which loves strong expression, 'not the beginning' = 'not at all.' It is found with the neg. c. 29, 2, Athenag. Res. 2, 13; positively, c. 28, 10, Dialog. c. Tr. cc. 27. 46. The meaning here is much disputed. 'To begin with' seems to answer the conditions best.

9. δι' ἀνθρώπους: Comp. E. ad D. 10, Athenag. Suppl. 13, 3, and see Origen, c. Cels. 4, 24, in defence of this position against the mockery of Celsus.—οἱ . . . δείξωσι: 'If they show themselves worthy to (in the sight of) His counsel by means of works,' 'commend themselves to His counsel as worthy.'—ἀξίους: Absolute as in c. 52, 13. The gen. is readily supplied, if needful, fr. τῆς μετ' αὐτοῦ ἀναστροφῆς. Ἄξιος with dat. and gen., Xen. Mem. 1, 2, 62, An. 4, 1, 28; Plat. Conv. 185 B.

11. καταξιώθῃναι: ~~Ver. as fut.~~ See c. 12, 23. With the expression comp. c. 26, 4, and Theophil. ad Autolyc. 2, 33.—παρελήφαμεν: For the MS. προσελήφαμεν.

16. τὸ γενέσθαι: Theoretically the inf. with the article ought to have no more time than any other verbal noun, τὸ πράξαι no more than ἡ πράξις, τὸ πεπράχθαι than τὸ πᾶγμα. But practically the inf. is often used to sum up the contents of a finite clause, when it must have some temporal relation other than continuance, attainment, completion. This is inevitable when the article is used with the fut. inf. or the inf. with αἶν, which belong necessarily to oratio obliqua. In this passage, however, the simple abstract notion 'our birth' suffices.—ἡμέτερον=ἡμῶν.—τὸ δ' ἐξακολουθήσαι: According to rigid grammar, i. depends on πείθει, but the article holds up the inf. more distinctly as an object of thought. Comp. c. 3, 9. As for our birth, that was not in our power. 'As for our following what is pleasing in His sight, it is He that persuades us thereto.'

18. πείθει τε καὶ εἰς πίστιν ἄγει: Comp. c. 8, 6.

19. τὸ μὴ εἰργεσθαι: On the inf. see c. 3, 9; on μὴ, c. 2, 4. Some read τῷ with the MSS. 'And we think that [this] is [so] (is done) for the sake of all men, on account of (τῷ=εἰς τὸ) their not being kept,' etc. Not satisfactory. Otto now edits τό.

21. Ὅπερ . . . ταῦτα: So the MSS. No change is necessary. So Thuc. 6, 17: ὅτι . . . ταῦτα, and Xen. Cyr. 1, 6, 11, with the commentators.

22. ὁ λόγος θεῖος ὦν: 'The Logos being divine,' 'by its divine power.' Perionius writes θεῖος ἄν, to give the ordinary conditional form to the sentence.—εἰργάσατο, εἰ μὴ: 'Did (actually) work, only;' εἰ μὴ being restrictive. Εἰργάσατ' ἄν, εἰ μὴ: 'would have wrought (but did not), had not.' But perhaps it would be better not to refine; ἄν may readily have been dropped after ὦν.

23. πολλὰ ψευδῆ καὶ ἀλῆα: See cc. 23, 14; 26, 32; B 12, 15; Athenag. Suppl. 3, 12.

25. ὦν οὐδὲν πρόσσειν: Short relative clausulae have a peculiar emphasis. With the phrase comp. B 2, 47; 12, 16.

#### 11. 'MY KINGDOM IS NOT OF THIS WORLD.'

1. προσδοκῶντας: 'Ακούω, as a verb of knowing, takes the participle, or δεῖ; as a verb of thinking, the inf.; of actual perception, the gen. and partic.

2. ἀνθρώπινον: Fem., as in Plato, Legg. 5, 737 B. — λάγειν: 'Mean.'—ὑπελήφατε: 'Have taken up the impression,' often of a false impression; hence it is necessary to define it. Comp. [Plat.] Deff. 413 A: ὑπόληψις ὁρᾷ, and Aristot. Eth. Magn. 1, 85, 15: ἡ ὑπόληψις ἴστιν, ἣ ἐπὶ ἀπάντων ἱεραυτοτερίζομεν, πρὸς τὸ καὶ εἶναι ταῦτα οὕτω καὶ μὴ εἶναι.

3. ἡμῶν . . . λεγόντων: Gen. absol., although ἡμᾶς precedes. The deviation is justified by the strong contrast. See c. 62, 12. —λεγόντων: 'Whereas we mean.' Adversative participle; so γινώσκοντας, 'although we know.' Γινώσκοντες, which some retain, would refer to the emperors.

5. θάνατον τὴν ζημίαν: Θάνατος ἡ ζημία is a very common judicial phrase.

6. κείσθαι: Practical perf. pass. of τίθημι. Τίθειμαι is little used in classic authors. The inf. after γινώσκω is more common when γ. means 'to believe.'—Εἰ προσεδωκώμεν: On the unreal conditional, see c. 4, 6.

7. ὅπως μὴ ἀναιρώμεθα: Ὅπως has among its numerous constructions the constructions of ἵνα. Whenever the neg. is used with tenses of continuance, the combination has a peculiar stress; ὅπως μὴ ἀναιρώμεθα=τοῦ μὴ ἀναιρεῖσθαι. On the sequence, see c. 12, 9.

8. ὅπως . . . τύχωμεν: Aorist of final attainment.

10. *πεφροντίκαμεν*: Emotional perfects denote (in conform with the original symbolism of reduplication) not complete but intense action. So *τεθαύμακα*, *εἰδία*, and the like. He the present translation.—*τοῦ καὶ πάντως ἀποθανεῖν*: So c. 57, 9: *πάντως ἀποθανεῖν*, 'death at any rate.' The article with the is often contemptuous. 'This thing of dying,' 'this inevitable doom of death.' See note on c. 29, 4.—*ὀφειλομένου*: Comp. famous passage in Eur. Alc. 418-9: *γίγνωσκε εἰ | ὥς πᾶσιν | κατθανεῖν ὀφείλεται*. So Menan. Monos. 69: *βροτοῖς ἄπ' ἀποθανεῖν ὀφείλεται*. Also B 11, 3: *πάντως παντὶ γενορ ἄνδρῶπι καὶ θανεῖν ὀφείλετο*.

12. 'AS EVER IN OUR GREAT TASKMASTER'S EYE.'

1. *Ἀρωγοὶ κτί.*: We are great helps to you because we help ourselves responsible to God, whose eye nothing can escape whereas the wicked count on your blindness.

2. *ταῦτα δοξάζομεν*: *Ταῦτα* anticipates the inf. clause A 4 —*ὥς*: As if he were about to use *ιστί*, a slight want of sequel which is more common with *ὅτι*. An example with *ὥς*, Isae. 6,

4. *ἐνάρετον*: A late word.—*πρὸς ὀλίγον*: 'For a little while' in Luc. D. D. 18, 1; Plut. Mor. 116 A; Hermias, 2. In the be period only with a subst., as *πρὸς γῆρας*, π. τὸ γῆρας.

7. *γινώσκων . . . πορεύεσθαι*: 'Knowing that he is on his way' On the inf., see c. 11, 6.

10. *τύχοι*: The MSS. have *τύχη*. I have written *τύχοι* (and has Otto now), though examples of change of mood are not wanting. In the later period *-η* and *-οι* were pronounced alike. *τύχοι* opt. after a past tense because it is a past tense, whereas in c. 7 the subj. is used after *κἂν ἡγοούμεθα* because it = *οἱκ' ἀρνούμεθα*—*ἀπηλλαγμένοι εἴη*: The perf. is little used in the final sentence except of resulting condition. So especially in the periphrastic form, as Dial. c. T. 16: *ἵνα ἦτε ἀπὸ τῶν ἄλλων ἐθνῶν ἀφωρισμένοι*. c. 56: *ἵνα πεπεισμένοι ᾦτε*.

11. *Ὅτ' γὰρ κτί.*: The MSS. have *Ὅ γάρ* and a period at *ἀκούσι*, which does not give a clear sense (unless we read *παύονται* *πειρῶνται*, and omit the first *λανθάνειν*), and leaves an incredible asyndeton at *εἰ ἔμαζον*. *Ὅι* (Thirlby), with the punctuation given makes the passage transparent.—*καί μιν* = *τεθειμένοις*. See c. 11

12. **λανθάνειν ἀδικούντες**: A number of verbs of manner, such as *λανθάνω*, *τυγχάνω*, *φθάνω*, take participial constructions. We often translate by an adverb or some other turn, as, to our conception, the participle contains the main notion. That the actions are coincident is shown by the fact that the combinations may be reversed: *λαθὼν ἐποίησε* occurs as well as *ἐλαθε ποιήσας*. The typical construction is identity of tenses, so far as continuance, attainment, and completion are concerned, but the rule is not closely observed except with *φθάνω*.

14. **ἐμαθεν καὶ ἐπείσθησαν**: Justin's favorite chain-shot style (coupled synonyms). See Introd. xxxii.—*ἐπικείμενα*: Sc. *ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ* (Trollope).

17. **θεδίναι μή**: The moods after verbs of fearing have some marked peculiarities. So the pres. subj. is used not only as a fut. but also as a present (future ascertainment of a present action); the aor. subj. is invariably fut. (both ascertainment and action).—**δικαιοπραγήσωσι**: Ingressive aorist. Comp. c. 3, 13. Trollope and others are shocked at Justin's unmannerliness.

18. **κολάσσετε**: The MSS. have *κολάζετε*, for which I read with Thirlby, Braun, and Otto (2) *κολάσετε*, others *κολάζητε*. There is not much choice. True, the fut. ind. is the normal construction after the relative of adaptation; but after *ἔχω* (*οὐκ ἔχω*) the subj. is often found by an early and natural confusion of relative and interrogative. *Οὐκ ἔχετε ὃν κολάσετε*, 'You have not any one to punish,' and *οὐκ ἔχετε ὅτινα κολάζητε*, 'You do not know whom to punish,' are not kept apart as *nihil habeo quod, non habeo quid*, in Latin.—**ἔξετε**: Change to the future construction, found rather after such verbs as *ὄρᾶν*, *βλέπειν*, and the like. After *εἰδοίκα*, Xen. Cyr. 2, 3, 6; after *φοβοῦμαι*, Plat. Phileb. 13 A. Otto comp. 2 Cor. 12, 20, 21 (Tisch.).—**δημίων**: Classical word for 'executioners.'

20. **ἐκ δαιμόνων**: 'Εξ of the source, not equivalent to *ὑπό*, with which it is seldom parallel in Attic prose. Comp. Athenag. Res. 20, 96: *ἐκ Θεοῦ καὶ παρὰ Θεοῦ*.

22. **ὅς γε**: The restrictive relative (= *qui quidem*) is often causal. Comp. B 3, 4.

23. **πράξει**: The aor. inf. is often used for the fut. inf. after verbs of hoping and promising, in which wish or will intrudes. See cc. 14, 20; 15, 18; B 3, 1. This is extended to other verbs, and

we find the simple aor. inf. where the rule would require the fut. inf. or the aor. inf. with *ἄν*, which H. Stephanus desiderates here. Remember, however, that *ἄν* is often dropped by accident.

26. *ἔσονται καὶ*: *Καὶ* is superfluous for our idiom in the second clause of a correlative sentence. For the Greek it seems to give a co-ordinate balance.

27. *καλλιεργήσετε*: 'Sacrifice acceptably' = 'succeed.' The sacr. sense seems to have died out in ordinary parlance. 'Justin's meaning is that their persecutors will not succeed in their attempts against the Christians, since Christ himself has promised to support them in making a wise choice; at the same time that their faith is confirmed by the fact that their very sufferings are so many fulfilments of his predictions, and consequently so many proofs of his divinity' (Trollope).

28. *οὐ βασιλικώτατον*: So-called superlative for compar. The superl. enhances the comparative. The gen. of the standard after compar. ('than') is now commonly explained as a whence case (abl.). Otto cites Cohort. 9. 35 (*πρεσβύτερος*), 12 (*ἀρχαιοτάτην*), 21 (*πρώτους*). It is characteristic of the philology of the last century that Thirlby calls the construction *absurda Atticorum elegantia*, and avails himself of Philemon (fr. inc. 109), *θανεῖν ἀριστόν ἐστιν ἢ ζῆν ἀβλίως*, to deliver an ugly blow at Bentley.

29. *οὐδένα οἶδαμεν ὄντα*: See c. 3, 3. *Οἶδαμεν* rare in Attic. Common form in the κοινὴ διάλεκτος.

30. *πενίας*: The plural of abstracts is frequently used distributively in Greek, rarely in English. For *πενίαι* comp. Plato, De Rep. 10, 618 B; Legg. 10, 890 C; Prot. 353 D, al. — *πατρικάς*: 'Hereditary.'

31. *ὅσα ἄν*: The relative with *ἄν* and subj. is in some respects parallel with *ἵαν* (c. 2, 18). But observe that the relative with *ἄν* and subj. is *always* generic in prose. — *ὑπαγορεύσῃ* = *ὑπέιπῃ*. See c. 2, 2.

32. *μὴ δεῖν*: Comp. c. 4, 24. Add imper. notion in *ὑπαγορεύσῃ*. — *ὁ νουνεχῆς*: The Stoic definition of *νουνεχία* is *ἐπιστήμη ἐπιτελετική τοῦ ἐκάστῃ σκοποῦ*. — *οὐχ αἰρήσεται*: So-called gnomic or sententious future. — *Γενήσονται... προεῖπε*: *Εἰπεῖν*, in the sense of 'say' (not 'order'), commonly takes *οἶ* or *ὥς* in classic Greek; but the exceptions are far more numerous than one should suppose from



the way in which the rule is stated, as Thuc. 7, 85, 2; Hdt. 1, 30; 2, 30; Andoc. 1, 57; Xen. Hell. 1, 6, 7; 2, 2, 15; Cyr. 5, 5, 24; Plato, Gorg. 478 A; Legg. 2, 654 A; 5, 736 C; Clitoph. 409 A. 410 B; Aeschin. 3, 88; Lysurg. c. Leocr. 50, to say nothing of the poets, such as Pind. Ol. 7, 62; Soph. Antig. 753, etc. For later Greek, examples are not necessary: Luc. Peregrin. 18; Theophil. ad Autol. 2, 8; 3, 3; Athenag. Suppl. 20, 85; 23, 113 (ἐξείπειν γεν-  
 νᾶσθαι); Origen, c. Cels. Praef. 5; 3, 6. 35. 66. So cc. 33, 11; 46, 3, and often in D. c. T. The rule, however, is not without its reason. Εἰπεῖν originally gives the exact utterance (ἔπος). So in Homer (ῥέει-ειπεν). When the ὅτι form of o. obliqua became common, it was natural that this form, which is nearest to oratio recta, should be retained.

33. ταῦτα πάντα: Sc. ὅτι οὐ καλλιερίσετε.—φημί serves to resume, as in Eng. 'I say.'

34. ἀπόστολος: Is a term of special dignity in Greek. Comp. cc. 31, 17; 33, 17, and c. 63, 12: ἄγγελος καλεῖται καὶ ἀπόστολος: also Hebr. 3, 9: κατανοήσατε τὸν ἀπόστολον καὶ ἀρχιερέα τῆς ὁμο-  
 λογίας ἡμῶν X. 'I.

35. τὸ ἱππονόμισθαι: See c. 3, 9.—Χριστιανοί: Familiar concord with the subject of the leading verb.

37. γινόμενα: Participle with φαίνομαι as a verb of showing, c. 3, 3. Notice the more common use of γίνομαι (for γίγνομαι) in later Greek.

38. φθάσας=πρότερον: a pleonasm with προείπεν. See note on c. 12, 12. So Origen, c. Cels. 2, 29: φθάσαντες εἰρήκαμεν. So 5, 1: φθάσαντες ἀπηντήσαμεν, 23, 11: φθάσαντες εἶπον.—γενίσθαι=γενήσεσθαι, which we should expect, but see l. 23.—ὅπερ: 'The very thing which,' 'the very thing which is peculiarly.' Comp. c. 18, 3.—πρὶν ἢ: C. 4, 13.

39. εἰπεῖν: '(Namely) telling before a thing happens, and then to have the thing shown as happening just as it has been fore-  
 told.' Εἰπεῖν: So the editors for εἶπε.

40. Ἦν: So called for ἐξῆν. 'But there were such a thing as not adding.' 'We might stop here (ἐπὶ τούτοις) and add nothing.' In such phrases ἄν is said to be omitted. The difference is commonly stated thus (after Hermann): Ἦν ἄν, 'it would be possible' (in other circumstances), but, as it is (ἦν ἔει), it is im-

possible. 'Hν, 'it were possible,' but it is not, will not be, done. This distinction does not hold throughout. Observe that the phenomenon is confined to the imperf. tense of abstract relations, such as, *ἰδεῖν*, *ἰχρῆν*, (*χρῆν*, Athenag. Suppl. 32, 158), *ἐνυατὸν ἦν* (c. 39, 15; Dialog. c. T. 24). The imperf. itself is a suspended fut. of the past=*ἰμελλε* and fut. inf.

41. *λογισαμένους ὅτι*: C. 2, 18.

42. *ῥᾶν*: By frequent usage with the standard suppressed, *ῥᾶν* has lost something of its comparative color. Comp. *ocius*, *propius*, and 'near.'

44. *εἰδότες ὅτι*: C. 3, 3.—*οὐκ εἰδύνατον*: Two conflicting negatives are frequently used in Gr. to produce a strong affirmative by litotes. The English language, though greatly influenced by classical and Scriptural example, does not go so far in the use of the figure. This passage from *οὐκ . . . φυνγεῖν* has been appropriated by Irenaeus, Adv. Haer. 3, 2 (Grabe).

### 13. 'OUR REASONABLE SERVICE.'

1. *ὡς οὐκ ἔσμέν*: Depends on *τίς* . . . *οὐχ ὁμολογήσει*; (l. 12).

2. *ἀνεδεῖ αἱμάτων*: The plural conception is different in different languages. Comp. c. 12, 30. *Αἵματα* is very common: 'streams of blood,' or 'gouts of blood,' as the case may be. Braun has accumulated parallels for the thought from both profane and patristic writers, as Eur. Herc. Fur. 1348: *δεῖται γὰρ ὁ θεός, εἴπερ ἔστ' ὄντως θεός, οὐδενός*, and Clem. Alex. Strom. 6 p. 635: *ἀνευδεῖς δὲ μόνος ὁ θεός*. See the Second Satire of Persius.

4. *λόγῳ εὐχῆς*: Comp. 2 Cor. 5, 19: *τὸν λόγον τῆς καταλλαγῆς*, Hebr. 13, 22: *τοῦ λόγου τῆς παρακλήσεως*. Gregory of Nyssa distinguishes *εὐχή* and *προσευχή*: *εὐχή μὲν ἔστιν ἱπαγγεῖλια τινὸς τῶν κατ' εὐσέβειαν ἀφιερουμένων, προσευχή δὲ αἰτησις ἀγαθῶν μετὰ λειτουργίας προσαγομένη θεῷ*. See my note on Pers. 2, 3. The distinction is not to be pressed.—*ἰφ' οἷς*=*ἐπὶ τούτοις ᾗ*.—*προσφερόμεθα*: 'Take to ourselves,' 'eat and drink,' 'enjoy,' as in Xen. Cyr. 4, 2, 41; Athenag. Res. 5, 24; 6, 28. The translation 'offer,' 'sacrifice,' is without warrant for the middle. So below, c. 67, 4: *ἐπὶ πᾶσιν οἷς προσφερόμεθα εὐλογοῦμεν κτί*.

5. *ὅση δύναμις*: A common phrase, at every turn in Orig. c. Cels., 'to the extent of our power.' See cc. 55. 27; 67, 15.—

12. 4. 1. 7. 157. 166

2. 10. 6.

αἰνοῦντες: The uncompounded form is rare in Attic prose, and has a higher, more religious tone. Greg. Naz. says, l. c. 142-8: *ἔπαινός ἐστιν εὐ τι τῶν ἱμῶν φράσαι, | αἶνος δ' ἔπαινος εἰς Θεὸν σεβάσμιος*.—*τιμὴν ταύτην*: Τὴν τιμὴν ταύτην would mean 'this honor.' Ταύτην is attraction from τοῦτο (c. 8, 8): 'That the only honor worthy of Him is this, namely, the offering.'

6. παραλαβόντες: C. 4, 23.

7. οὐ πυρί: Is really parenthetic, and influenced by παραλαβόντες—hence οὐ, not μή.—*ἐαυτοῖς=ἡμῖν αὐτοῖς*. See c. 2, 16.

8. διὰ λόγον: Comp. Ep. ad D. 6, 9.—*πομπάς*: Justin prefaces *πομπάς* by διὰ λόγον to distinguish these Christian *πομπαι* from the heathen processions, the *diaboli pompae*, which were an especial abomination to the Church. See Constt. Apostt. 2, 6. 'Solemn prayers.'

9. ὕμνοις πέμπειν: Ἀναπέμπειν is still more common. Comp. Clem. Alex. Paed. 3, 12, 101: *αἶνον ἀναπέμψαι κυρίῳ*.

10. ποιότητων μὲν γονῶν: The MSS. have γενῶν. Bunsen (Christianity and Mankind, 1, 219, note) writes: *πάντων ποιητῶν καὶ γειητῶν*, putting a comma after πάρων. Otto supposes γενῶν to mean 'elements.' I write γονῶν, which is coupled with 'fruits' by Origen, c. Cels. 5, 12: *καρποὺς καὶ γονὰς ἀπάσας . . . καρπῶν καὶ πασῶν γονῶν αἰσθητῶν*. The reference is to 'variety of products.' Comp. further B 5, 6: *τὰ οὐράνια στοιχεῖα εἰς αὐξήσιν καρπῶν καὶ ὥρων μεταβολάς*, and Max. Tyr. 17, 5: *κράσεις αἰρῶν καὶ ζώων γενέσεις καὶ καρπῶν φύσεις . . . Θεοῦ πάντα ἔργα ἢ ψυχὴ λίγει κτί*.—*μὲν*: *Solitarium*, i. e., μὲν without εἰ, but καὶ is equivalent.

12. τίς σωφρονῶν οὐχ ὁμολογήσει: Comp. Athenag. Suppl. 10, 43: *τίς οὖν οὐκ ἂν ἀπορήσῃ κτί*.

13. ἐπὶ Ποντίου: Ἐπὶ w. gen. of official dates. Comp. cc. 26, 6; 35, 25; 46, 6.—*ἐπὶ χρόνοις*: A later construction.

16. ἐπιτρόπου: 'Procurator.'—*οὐδὲν αὐτοῦ*: Otto now reads *αὐτόν*.

17. πνεῦμά τε: Τε . . . τε intimates parallelism; the point of view shifts from c. 6, 8.

18. ὅτι . . . τιμῶμεν: C. 3, 8.—*ἀποδείξομεν*: Ἐπιδεικνύναι for effect, hence often in a bad sense, though not always (E. ad D. 12, 10), ἐνδ. of a practical illustration (E. ad D. 5, 11), ἀποδ. of logical proof.

19. Ἐνταῦθα: 'In this point,' anticipating the inf.—*μανίαν* . . . *καταφαίνονται* = *μ. κατηγοροῦσι*: Unusual transitive sense of the middle of *καταφ.*, after the analogy of *ἀποφαίνομαι*.

21. τὸν ἀπάντων: Third attributive position. So the MSS. Otto and Trollope write *τῶν*.—*ἀνθρώπῳ σταυρωθέντι*: A common sneer. It is unnecessary to multiply proofs of the scandal of the cross. In the Rabbinical books our Saviour is spoken of simply as *יְהוֹשֻׁעַ*.

22. προσέχειν: Sc. τὸν νοῦν, a familiar ellipsis.

23. ἰξηγουμένων: Sc. *ἡμῶν*. The subject of the genitive participle is not unfrequently to be supplied.

#### 14. THE DEMONS MALIGN CHRISTIANS.

1. Προλόγομεν: 'Forewarn.'—*φυλάσσειν*: 'To put yourselves on your guard;' *φυλάττεσθαι*, 'to be on your guard.' See c. 3, 13.—*προδιαβεβλημένοι*: 'Previously accused.' Comp. the use of *διαβάλλω* in Luke, 16, 1 (of the unjust steward). Maran aptly quotes Tertull. ad Scapulam, 2 (p. 117 D. S.): *Daemones autem non tantum respuimus verum et retincimus et quotidie traducimus et de hominibus expellimus, sicut plurimis notum est*.

3. ἐντυχεῖν καὶ συνεῖναι: *Συνεῖναι* fr. *συνίημι*. See the combination in B 3, 11: *εἰ ἐντυχῶν μὴ συνῇκε τὸ ἐν αὐτοῖς μεγαλύνον*. The use of *ἐντυχάνειν*, 'read' (c. 26, 38), begins Plato, *Lys.* 214 A; Conv. 177 B; De Lege, 316 C. Observe the nor. of total negation. See c. 4, 10.

5. ὑπηρέτας: Ὑπηρέτης, often of an official 'underling,' 'understrapper.' *Δοῦλοι καὶ ὑπηρέται* combined, in Jno. 18, 18. Comp. Lucian, *Char.* 17: *ἄγγελοι καὶ ὑπηρέται θανάτου*, *Sacrif.* 8: *ὑπηρέται καὶ ἀγγελιαφόροι* (Iris and Hermes).

6. στροφῶν: *Στροφή*, hardly a dignified word, though used by Aeschyl. *Suppl.* 623; it belongs to the language of everyday life (*Ar. Ran.* 775, *Plut.* 1154), and creeps into Latin in the time of Augustus. Tertull. *Apol.* 15 (p. 55 D. S.): *Dispicite Lentulorum et Hostiliorum tenustates, utrum mimos an deos vestros in iocis et strophis rideatis*. 'Shift.'—*οὐκ ἔσθ' ὁπως*: 'In no way.'

7. ὑπὲρ τῆς αὐτῶν σωτηρίας: *Αὐτῶν* is *ipsorum*, 'personal.' The reflexive is not necessary.—*ἐν τρόπῳ*: C. 4, 22. The thought is,

'You ought to put yourselves on your guard just as we did when we found out their wiles.'

9. τῷ ἀγεννήτῳ: Otto would now read everywhere with Ashton and Waterland ἀγέννητος, 'unoriginated,' instead of ἀγέννητος, 'unbegotten,' and cites a large number of passages to show that at this period God was called ἀγέννητος, not ἀγέννητος. See Athenag. Suppl. 4, 15. Böhrringer (ap. Ott.) says that Justin calls God the unbegotten, partly in contrast to the begetting of gods which went on so freely in polytheistic Paganism (c. 25), partly by way of distinction from the begotten Son, the Logos.

10. οἱ πάλαι μὲν κτλ.: This powerful evidence of the divine origin of the Christian religion is eloquently insisted on in the Ep. ad Diogn. 5 foll. Parallels might be multiplied indefinitely. Keim well calls this theme the triumphal song of the Apologists. —πορνείαις: See c. 12, 30.

12. ἀγαθῷ καὶ ἀγ. θ.: Concinnity would require νῦν ἀγαθῷ, which Otto has recently edited. But Justin is not concinnous. —ἐαυτοῦς ἀνατρεχόμενος: The notion that the middle is a reflexive in the ordinary sense of the word is a vulgar error that is not yet wholly dissipated. The object of the middle is really neither dat. nor accus., as the middle is older than the cases (Curtius). The middle can be used as a direct reflexive only when the action is natural. The reflexive pronoun is always expressed when the action is of itself unnatural, or has become such in the circumstances.—χρημάτων καὶ κτημάτων: Κτήματα, 'real estate,' χρήματα, 'personal property.' So Braun, who cites Clem. Alex. Quis dives, 14: κτήματα γὰρ ἴσθι κτητὰ ὄντα, καὶ χρήματα χρήσιμα ὄντα καὶ εἰς χοῆσιν ἀνθρώπων παρεσκευασμένα ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ and l. c. 19: χρήματα ἀντὶ κτημάτων λαβεῖν. Comp. Plato, Legg. 5, 728 E: ἡ τῶν χρημάτων καὶ κτημάτων κτήσις. But κτήματα notably includes 'slaves and cattle.' The currency of the combination is partly due to the jingle.

15. μισάλληλοι: Comp. Tit. 3, 3: μισοῦντες ἀλλήλους.

16. τοὺς σὺχ ὁμοφύλους=τοὺς ἀλλοφύλους: the neg. coalescing with the word. Otherwise μὴ ὁμοφύλους.—καὶ . . . μὴ=μηδὲ: Μὴ is regular on account of the article. See cc. 4, 9; 26, 30.—ἐστίας κοινὰς ποιούμενοι=κοινῶς ἐστιώμενοι: See c. 1, 9.

17. ὁμοδίαυτοι: Comp. B 2, 18.

20. ὑποθημοσύνας: Poetic, or late.

21. τυχεῖν: On the tense after εὐλαπίδες, see c. 12, 23.

24. πρὸ τῆς ἀποδείξεως: Promised in c. 13, 18.—ὑμέτερον: Comp. c. 3, 16.

25. ὡς δυνατῶν βασιλέων: Familiar apposition of gen. with possessive. Ὡς restrictive, and so causal. The Greeks called the emperor βασιλεύς, a word for which they had a certain affection, whereas *rex* was tabooed at Rome—a divergency easily accounted for by history.—δυνατῶν: Power has its duties. *Noblesse oblige*. Hence there is no necessity of changing δυνατῶν into συν-ετῶν with Stephanus. Comp. c. 17, 18.

26. Βραχεῖς δὲ καὶ σύντομοι: Comp. D. c. T. 18: βραχία . . . λόγια. Comp. Origen, c. Cels. 3, 39, on the language of the evangelists, and read a passionate defence of ungrammatical Christianity in Arnobius, 1, 59.

27. σοφιστής: 'Professor of wisdom.' There is necessarily a bit of charlatanry in the word itself, despite the famous vindication of Grote. In this age the professor was chiefly a rhetorician. Lucian calls Christ 'the crucified professor.' See my article on Lucian (Southern Review, Oct. 1869, p. 424), and comp. Max. Tyr. 21, 6: εἰ δὲ ἤθελεν ὁ Ἡρακλῆς . . . διώκειν σοφίαν ἀπράγμονα, ἣν ἂν εἶπον ἄνθ' Ἡρακλείους σοφιστῆς. καὶ οὐδεὶς ἂν αὐτὸν ἐτόλμησεν εἰπεῖν παῖδα Διός. It may be also worth noticing that M. Aurelius says of Antoninus Pius (6, 31): οὐ φοροῦντος, οὐχ ὑπόπτου, οὐ σοφιστῆς.

28. δύναμις θεοῦ: Comp. Matt. 7, 29.

### 15. CHRIST'S OWN TEACHINGS.

1. τοσοῦτον: Perhaps with reference to the brevity (σύντομοι λόγοι) of Christ's words.—Ὡς ἂν . . . θεῶ: Matt. 5, 28. With Justin's first citation of the words of our Lord begins the endless controversy as to his use of our Gospels. See the Introduction, xxxv. foll. I shall not undertake to point out the divergences, much less to explain them.

3. Εἰ δὲ ὁφθαλμοὶ . . . πῦρ: Matt. 5, 29. Comp. 18, 9, and Mark 9, 47.

7. Ὡς γαρὶ . . . μοιχᾶται: Matt. 5, 32. Comp. Luke 16, 18.

Matt. 19: 10. *nihil* = *nothing*, *nihil* = *nothing*  
 6, 7, 5 *large note*

8. *Εἰσὶ τινες* . . . *χωροῦσιν*: Matt. 19, 12.

11. *Ὡς τε*: So Otto (3) after Davis for *ὥς περ*.

12. *διγαμίας*: It is much disputed whether the forbidden marriage was simultaneous (bigamy), or successive (after death or divorce of the former partner). Simultaneous marriage (Maran) was not allowed by the Roman law; marriage after divorce is supposed to be meant here by Thirlby, Ritter, and Otto; Braun thinks that Justin entertained the harsh view of second marriages common to the early Church. So Athenag. Suppl. 83, 162: *ὁ δεύτερος [γάμος] εὐπρεπὴς ἐστὶ μοιχεία*. On the difficulty of keeping widows from a second marriage, see the instructive chapter in Constt. Apostt. 8, 1.—*ποιοῦμενοι*: See c. 1, 9.—*παρὰ τῇ ἡμετέρῃ διδασκάλῳ*: 'In our Master's school,' 'according to His doctrine.' See c. 8, 8.

15. *μοιχεύσαι*: Ingressive norist. See c. 3, 13. With the passage Otto comp. Iren. Adv. Haer. 2, 32, 1: *apud quem non solum qui moechatur expellitur sed et qui moechari cult.*—*ὡς οὐ τῶν ἔργων φανερῶν*: On *ὡς* and *οὐ* see c. 4, 19. *Φανερῶν* sc. *ὕψων*. The participle of the gen. abs. is not freely omitted, chiefly with such adjectives as are virtually partic'ples (*ικῶν* and *ἄκων*), or have an affinity with verbs, as *φανερῶν* here.

17. *πολλοὶ τινες*: *Τις* is often added to designations of numbers.

18. *ἐκ παίδων*: A common phrase. *Ἐκ* includes the period from which it dates, as in Engl. 'of a child.' There is some dispute as to the limits of this passage, which is supposed to bear on paedobaptism.—*ἐφθόροι* = *ἀδιάφοροι*.

19. *εὐχομαι* . . . *δειξαι*: On the *nor.* = fut. see c. 12, 23.—*κατὰ πᾶν γένος*: C. 1, 5.

20. *Τί . . . λέγομεν*: 'What shall we (I) say of?' The use of the present for the fut. is a survival of an older stage. The 'conative' element lies in the so-called connecting vowel.

23. *ἀκολάστους*: *Ἀκόλαστος* refers to want of training, *ἀκρατής* to defect of temperament (Vömel).

24. *Ἔτις δ' οὕτως*: Justin regularly uses *οὕτως* to point both ways, backward and forward. So *οὕτως*.—*Οὐκ ἦλθον . . . μετάνοιαν*: Matt. 9, 13 (Mark 2, 17), Luke 5, 32.—*καλίσσαι*: An old use of the infinitive after verbs of motion, found here and there in classic Greek prose, common in N. T.

25. **Θάλει . . . αὐτοῦ**: Comp. Ezek. 33, 11. 'Ἐξίλω is the form in normal prose, but after a vowel and in certain formulae **Ξίλω** is often found even there, and everywhere in later Greek. **Θίλω** ἢ=μᾶλλον **ἐξίλω** ἢ. So also **βούλομαι** and the like. Eur. Tel. fr. 22, 2: **σμίερ' ἂν Ξέλοισι μὲ, καὶ καὶ' ἡμέραν ἔχων, | ἄλυτον οἰκεῖν βίον ἢ πλουτῶν νοσεῖν.**

27. **Εἰ . . . ποιοῦσιν**: Matt. 5, 46 (comp. Luke 6, 32). — **ἀγαπᾶτε**: 'Ἀγαπᾶν is a colder word than **φιλεῖν** and less intimate. The larger use of it in Christian writers is perhaps due to an avoidance of **φιλεῖν** in the sense of 'kissing.' The refinements of the commentators on John 21, 15–17 seem hardly tenable when we remember that the Evangelist himself did not see the point, as Augustin notes (Civ. Dei, 7, 11). Xen. uses **ἀγαπᾶν** and **φιλεῖν** as absolute synonyms. Comp. Mem. 2, 7, 9, with § 12. See the comprehensive definition of **ἀγάπη** (a Christian word) in Clem. Alex. Strom. 2, 9, 41. Greg. of Naz. says, l. c. 160–1: **συμψυχίαν εἰ τὴν ἀγάπην ὀρίσσομαι.**

29. **καίνον**: **Νίος** of the organic, **καινός** of the inorganic: **νίος** of that which grows, **καινός** of that which is made. Here 'strange.'

29. **Ἐγὼ . . . ἐπηρ. ὑμᾶς**: Matt. 5, 44; comp. Luke 6, 27 foll. On **ἐπηρεαζόντων**, see c. 1, 6.

33. **πρὸς θεόν**: Comp. **πρὸς χάριν**. A 2, 12. — **Παντὶ . . . ποιοῦσιν**: Matt. 5, 42; Luke 6 (30), 34. — **αἰτοῦντι**: The old distinction between **αἰτεῖν**, 'ask' (absolutely), and **αἰτεῖσθαι**, 'borrow,' breaks down in the application, as in Xen. Anab. 2, 3, 18 and 19. Still the middle is often used as 'borrow,' and in the aor. seems to be the Attic expression for **ἐχρησάμην** (fr. **εἰχρημι**), which was avoided.

35. **λαβεῖν**: See c. 12, 23.

36. **Ὑμεῖς . . . ἀφανίζε**: Matt. 6, 19, 20. — **μὴ ἐησανρίζετε**: So I read for the ungrammatical **μὴ ἐησανρίζητε**.

37. **ἐαυτοῖς=ὑμῖν αὐτοῖς**. Comp. c. 2, 16. — **σὴς καὶ βρώσας ἀφανίζε**: The concord as in old English and idiomatic English.

39. **Τί . . . ἀφανίζε**: Matt. 16, 26; 6, 20. **Τί** is acc. of inner object (adverb. acc.); **τί ὠφελείται=τίνα ὠφέλειαν ὠφελείται**.

40. **κερδήση**: Attic **κερδάνη**.

43. **Γίνεσθε . . . πονηροῦς**: Luke 6, 35 foll., Matt. 5, 45. **Γίνεσθε**, 'Show yourselves.' — **χρηστοί**: See c. 4, 4. — **οὐκ ἐτίρμονες**: Of active benevolence. So Gregory of Naz. l. c. 124, 125: **ἐλεος μὲν**



ἰστί συμπάθεια συμφορᾶς, | οἴκτες δὲ κεύ τι τὸν πεπονθότα δράσαι. On ἔλεος, see Clem. Alex. Strom. 4, 6, 38.

45. ἁμαρτωλοῦς: For ἁμαρτωλοῦς Davis proposes ἀνθρώπων. Thirlby suggests: ἐπὶ ἁμαρτωλοῦς καὶ ἀγαθοῦς καὶ βρίχει ἐπὶ δικαίους καὶ πονηροῦς. Otto: ἐπὶ ἁμαρτωλοῦς καὶ δικαίους καὶ βρίχει ἐπὶ ὁσίους καὶ πονηροῦς. Comp. D. c. T. 96.

46. Μὴ μεριμνᾷτε . . . ἀνθρώπων: Matt. 6, 25 foll. (Luke 12, 22-24), 31-33 and 21 (comp. Luke 12, 34). Μίριμνα means 'anxious thought,' an exaggeration of φροντίς, as Gregory of Naz. says, l. c. 67: φροντίς ὃ ἱλιγμός, ἡ μίριμνα τὸ πλῖον. 'Thought' in the A. V. had the same meaning.—τί φάγητε: More exactly, ὅ τι φάγητε, but the simple interrogative is very common in dependent questions. The notion of question is involved in anxious thought. A question in the subj. expects an answer in the imperative. Hence the person is chiefly the first person, or the third as the representative of the first, as ποῖ τις φύγῃ=ποῖ φύγω, φύγωμεν, or, as here, in a dependent clause. Do not ask: τί φάγωμεν; Occasionally we find this subj. question used as a purely indicative fut. (Luke 11, 5), in which the earlier and later stages of the language meet.

48. Μὴ . . . μεριμνήσητε: Above, μὴ μεριμνᾷτε. Μὴ with the aor. subj. denotes total negation, 'do not;,' μὴ with the pres. imper. a negative course of action, 'keep from,' or the negative of a course of action, 'cease to.' The former=ne w. perf. subj.; the latter=poli w. inf.

52. Μὴ . . . οὐρανοῖς: Comp. Matt. 6, 1.—ποιεῖτε: For the ungrammatical ποιῆτε of the MSS.

53. θεαθῆναι: 'Gazed at.'—εἰ δὲ μή γε: Εἰ εἰ μή has become a mere phrase, 'if not,' 'otherwise,' and is used to introduce opposition to the statement involved in the foregoing, whether positive or negative. 'If you fail to keep from doing'='If you do these things,' 'otherwise.'

#### 16. BEAR ALL THINGS. SWEAR NOT AT ALL.

1. Περὶ δὲ τοῦ ἀνεξικακοῦ εἶναι: Comp. c. 3, 9. 'Ἀνεξικακία occurs in Plutarch. Comp. Athenag. Suppl. 34, 164: οὐ γὰρ ἀπαρκεῖ δικαίον εἶναι (ἔστι δὲ δικαιοσύνη ἴσα ἴσοις ἀμείβειν) ἀλλ' ἀγαθοῖς καὶ ἀνεξικακοῖς εἶναι πρόκειται.

2. ταῦτά ἐστι: See note on οὕτως, c. 15, 24.—Τῷ . . . καλύσῃς: Luke 6, 29.

4. ἢ τὸ ἰμάτιον: Thirlby would read *kai τὸ ἰμάτιον: ἢ kai* would account better for the text. *Kai*, 'even,' because the *ἰμάτιον* is the more valuable. So Matt. 5, 40: *τῷ ἔλονται . . . τὸν χιτῶνά σου λαβεῖν, ἄφες αὐτῷ καὶ τὸ ἰμάτιον*.

5. "Ὅς δ' ἐν . . . οὐρανοῖς: Matt. 5, 22. 41. 16.

6. σι: According to Otto (3d ed.) the MSS. have *σε*.—ἀκούθησον: The pres. imper. is the rule for general directions; but in the N. T. the aor., being the more energetic, is often found where we should expect the present. The more vigorous the expression, the more likely it is to commend itself to the Hellenist. Some emphatic combinations occur scores of times in the LXX and N. T. to once in classic Greek. See note on *οὐ μὴ*, c. 33, 9. So in the first fifty Psalms not one in ten of the large number of imperatives (including imperative subjunctives) is present, a disproportion which can but partially be accounted for by the passionate strain. Contrast the first Isocratean discourse. As in the Lord's Prayer, so in the ancient Greek liturgies the aor. imper. is almost exclusively used. It is the true tense for 'instant' prayer.

9. ἀνταίρειν: Plat. Euthyd. 272 A. Comp. Matt. 5, 39 (Otto).

12. "Ὁ γι: So Thirlby for *ὁ γάρ*.—ἐπὶ πολλῶν: 'In the case of many.' See c. 5, 17.—παρ' ὑμῖν: For the MS. *παρ' ἡμῖν*. 'Which we can prove by the example of many who have lived, who once lived, among you.' Comp. Tertull. Apol. 18: *De testris fuimus; fiunt, non nascuntur Christiani*.

13. ἀποδεῖξαι: C. 13, 18.—ἔχομεν: C. 8, 5.—ἡττηθέντες: The following participles depend on this. 'Overcome by.'

14. καρτερίαν βίου παρακολουθήσαντες: Παρακολουθεῖν in the sense of 'perceive,' 'understand,' with the acc. from Polyb. 1, 12, 7 on.

15. πλεονεκτουμένων: 'Overreached.' Surely a crucial test of true piety. The *caupo* of antiquity was infamous.—ξένην: 'Strange,' in the secondary sense. Comp. *καινός*, c. 15, 28.

16. Περὶ δὲ τοῦ μὴ θμύναι: Comp. c. 8, 9.

17. ὅλως: 'At all.' See c. 29, 10.

18. Μὴ ὁμώσητε . . . πονηροῦ: Matt. 5, 34. 37 (Ja. 5. 12).

20. Ὡς δεῖ . . . ἐπαισεν: C. 8, 8.—τὸν θεὸν μόνον προσκυνεῖν: See note on c. 6, 8. With προσκυνεῖν Justin uses both acc. and dat. but the normal acc. more frequently. The LXX almost always have the dat. See c. 20, 16. The construction often shifts in a few lines, as in Orig. c. Cels. 6, 71.

21. εἰπών: The actions in ἐπαισεν and εἰπών are coincident. See c. 17, 17.—Μεγίστη . . . ποιήσαντά σε: Matt. 4, 10; Mark 12, 30. Comp. Luke 10, 27.—προσκυνήσεις: 'Adore,' by 'kissing the hand to,' which is simply an abridgment of the fuller form of 'kissing the ground before.' 'If I beheld the sun when it shined or the moon walking in brightness, and my heart hath been secretly enticed, or my mouth hath kissed my hand,' Job 31, 26, 27. Comp. Minuc. Felix, Oct. 8: *Caecilius simulacro Sarapidis denotato, ut vulgus superstitiosus solet, manum ori admoctens, osculum labiis impressit.* See Athenag. Suppl. 32, 160.—κύριον . . . ποιήσαντά σε: 'An unbiblical addition due to Justin's wrath against Gnosticism' (Semisch). Comp. c. 26, 24.

22. λατρεύσεις: λατρεία, originally of menial service, is often used slightly in profane literature. So in Lucian, Merc. Cond. 281; pro Merc. Cond. 4: ἀγεννή λατρείαν, Nigr. 15: λατρεύειν ἡδονῇ. Observe how Ion vindicates his humble office in Eur. Ion, 129: οὐ θνατοῖς ἀλλ' ἀθανάτοις.

24. Προσελθόντος . . . πάντα: Matt. 19, 16 foll.; Mark 10, 17 foll. Comp. Luke 18, 16 foll.—Προσελθόντος αὐτῷ: The difference between προσελθεῖν τινι and π. πρὸς τινά is that between *adire aliquem* and *a. ad aliquem*. 'Applied to him.' Comp. Athenag. Suppl. 15, 59 and 18, 74.

25. εἰ μὴ: Νῆσι, 'except.'

27. βιοῦντες: In Attic the usual form is ζῶντες. On the participle here and in ὄντες, see c. 3, 3.—γνωρίζουσιν: The long form is not uncommon in Attic.—μὴ ὄντες: The neg. on account of the imperative.

28. κὰν λέγωσιν: C. 2, 10.

31. Οὐχὶ πᾶς . . . οὐρανοῖς: Matt. 7, 21.—εἰσελεύσεται = εἰσεῖσι which is the Attic prose form.

32. τῶν οὐρανῶν: Hebraistic conception. To the Greek heaven was a single canopy, a single cover (ἄν), whereas the Hebrew singular is lost, and the plural is used as one of 'the names of re-

gions that are infinitely divisible' (Ewald). The Hebrew word עֲלֵיָא 'is derived from עָלָה, *to be high* [Fürst], and denotes the upper regions, i. e., heaven; the plural designating not distinct heavens of various elevation, but rather extent in all directions, and comprehending all the parts of the vast expanse above us' (Green). In the LXX the sing. is generally used. The occasional plural occurs only in poetic passages or passages with poetic coloring, chiefly in the Psalms, whence it has passed into the Vulgate (e. g. *Caeli enarrant*, 19, 1) and the Latin Fathers. But *caelos* is found in *Lucr.* 2, 1097. Comp. further *Orig. c. Cels.* 6, 21.

38. Ὅς . . . μ: *Matt.* 7, 24 (*Luke* 10, 16), 10, 40 (*John* 14, 24).

34. Πολλοὶ . . . ἀνομίας: *Luke* 13, 26 foll.; *Matt.* 7, 22 foll.

36. δυνάμεις: See note on c. 26, 7.

37. Τότε . . . πῦρ: *Matt.* 13, 42.

39. πέμπωνται: In his last ed. Otto indulges in the extraordinary solecism of *πέμπωνται* = *πεμφθῶσιν*.

40. Πολλοὶ . . . βάλλεται: *Matt.* 24, 5; 7, 15. 16. 19.

42. ἐπιγνώσεις: A very common intensive of *γινώσκω*.

43. ποιῶν καρπὸν: This use of *ποιεῖν* seems to belong to familiar language.

44. Κολάζεσθαι: C. 3, 4. — τοὺς οὐκ ἀκολουθῶς: On the neg. comp. c. 4, 9.

46. καὶ ὑφ' ὑμῶν: As well as in the next world. Comp. c. 3, 18.

#### 17. 'RENDER UNTO CAESAR.'

1. Φόρους καὶ εἰσφοράς: 'Φόρος is the regular tax (*tributum annuum*), εἰσφορά any extraordinary assessment (*stipendium temporarium*)'—Otto. Τίλος corresponds to *rectigal*, φόρος to *stipendium*, εἰσφορά to *tributum*; but *stipendium* and *tributum* are often lumped, and τίλος is used as a general term. Comp. *Constt. Apostt.* 7, 16: ἀποτίσατε τίλος, φόρον καὶ εἰσφορὰν εὐγνωμόνως, *Theoph. ad Autolyc.* 1, 10: τίλη καὶ εἰσφοράς. See the commentators on *Rom.* 13, 7: τῷ τὸν φόρον τὸν φόρον, τῷ τὸ τίλος τὸ τίλος. Comp. *Tertull. Apol.* 42 (p. 100 D. S.): *Vectigalia gratias agent Christianis ex fide dependentibus debitum*.

2. πρὸ πάντων = μάλιστα.

8. Κατ' ἐκεῖνο τοῦ καιροῦ: Such a combination, instead of κατ' ἐκείνον τὸν καιρόν, is not found in Attic except in the tragic poets, as Soph. O. C. 1138; Eur. Alc. 9 and Phoen. 425. Common in later prose, as Theophil. ad Autolyc. 3, 10. 20; Euseb. H. E. 2, 23, 2.

4. εἰ δὲ Καίσαρι κτέ.: Comp. Luke 20, 22. 23, and the parallels.

8. προσκυνῶμεν: Comp. c. 16, 20 and Theophil. ad Autolyc. 1, 11: τιμῶ τὸν βασιλῆα, οὐ προσκυνῶν αὐτῷ ἀλλ' εὐχόμενος ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ.

9. πρὸς τὰ ἄλλα: 'In everything else.'—ὑπηρετοῦμεν: C. 14, 5.

10. βασιλεῖς: C. 14, 25.

11. βασιλικῆς: 'Imperial.'—σάφρονα τὸν λογισμὸν: Predicative position. The article is often neglected in translation.

12. ἔχοντας: C. 3, 3.—Εἰ . . . ἀφροντιστήσεται: Notice the harsh, minatory future, which is seldom used in prose without good reason. See c. 8, 17.—καὶ ἡμῶν: Καί, 'after all.'

13. οὐδὲν ἡμεῖς βλαβησόμεθα κτέ.: Thirlby calls attention to Justin's 'rare attack of politeness' and his silence as to the fate of the emperors, who are, of course, chiefly meant.

14. πιστεύοντες, μᾶλλον δὲ καὶ πεπεισμένοι: On the climax, see c. 8, 6, and add Dialog. c. Tryph. 4: μετὰ τοῦ πεπιστευκέναι καὶ πείθεσθαι, Rom. 14, 14: οἶδα καὶ πίπτοιμαι, Origen, c. Cels. 3, 41: νομίζομεν καὶ πεπίσμεθα.

17. ἀπαιτηθήσεσθαι: 'Απ- in comp.=re(d) of that which is due. See c. 2, 12.—ἐμήνυσεν εἰπών: When the action of the leading verb and the action of the participle coincide, the tenses are usually of the same kind. See c. 10, 21.

18. Ὡς . . . αὐτοῦ: Luke 12, 48.

#### 18. PROOFS OF IMMORTALITY.

1. γάρ: You will all have to give an account—emperors as well as the rest—despite the official apotheosis. The strands are a little twisted.

2. βασιλείων: C. 14, 25.—τὸν κοινὸν θάνατον: Cognate accusative—which is far more frequently used in Greek than in English—with modifier as usual.

3. ὅπερ: Stephanus proposes ὅσπερ, but the neuter relative may refer to masc. or fem. antecedent considered as a thing, or,

as here, to the whole thought: τὸ τὸν κοινὸν θάνατον ἀποθανεῖν. See Thuc. 1, 59.—ἔρμαιον: 'Godsend,' 'windfall,' which last is especially appropriate if Hermes was the morning breeze, as the comparative mythologists suppose. See my note on Persius, 2, 12. For the thought, comp. Dialog. c. Tryph. 5: ἀλλὰ μὴν οὐδὲ ἀποθνήσκειν φημι πάσας τὰς ψυχὰς ἐγώ· ἔρμαιον γὰρ ἦν ὡς ἀληθῶς τοῖς κακοῖς, Plato, Phaedo, 107 E: εἰ μὲν γὰρ ἦν ὁ θάνατος τοῦ παντὸς ἀπαλλαγὴ, ἔρμαιον ἂν ἦν τοῖς κακοῖς ἀποθανοῦσι τοῦ τε σώματος ἅμα ἀπηλλάχθαι καὶ τῆς αὐτῶν κακίας μετὰ τῆς ψυχῆς.

5. πᾶσι γενομένοις=π. τοῖς γ.: 'All that have ever lived.'—πᾶσι μένει: How different from πάντας μένει?—ἀπόκειται: 'Is in store,' with the same tone as our English expression. Comp. Hebr. 9, 27: ἀπόκειται τοῖς ἀνθρώποις ἕκαστος ἀποθανεῖν.

6. πεισθῆναι τε καὶ πιστεῦσαι: The latter the result of the former. On ὅτι see c. 8, 8.

7. Νεκρομαντεῖαι: Clem. Alex. Protrept. 2, 11: Τερρηνῶν νεκρομαντεῖαι σκότῃ παραιδέσθων.—αἱ διαφθόρων παιδων ἐποπτεύσεις: Children were sacrificed and their entrails inspected, because their pure natures were supposed to give truer answers. Grabe cites Socr. H. E. 3, 13; Eus. H. E. 7, 10; 8, 14. Add Philostr. Vit. Apoll. Tyan. 7, 11: φασὶ δ' ὡς παῖδα θυσαῖς ὑπὲρ μαντικῆς ἦν τὰ νεαὰ τῶν σπλάγχνων φαίνει. With the whole passage comp. Tertull. Apol. 23 (p. 72 D. S.): *Pueros in eloquium elidunt*, etc. 'Επόπτευσίς is a Justinian word (Otto).

9. παρὰ τοῖς μάγοις: C. 8, 8.—δνειροπομποί: Pers. 2, 56-58: *Nam fratres inter aenos | somnia pituita qui purgatissima mittunt, | praecipui sunt*.—πάρεδροι: 'Familiar spirits.'

10. πιστάτωσαν: -άτωσαν rejected by Cobet for best Attic.

12. ριπτούμενοι: In conformity with Hermann's view that ρίπτω is *iacio*, ριπτῶ (ριπτέω) is *iacto*. See Curtius, Gr. Verbum, 1, 337.

14. Ἀμφιλόχου: The oracle of Amphilocheus (at Mallos in Cilicia) seems to have been much in fashion at this period, which may account for the mention of it before such familiar oracles as Dodona and Pytho (Delphi). See Plut. Mor. 528, 5 and 681, 17 (Didot); Max. Tyr. 15, 7; Pausan. 1, 34, 3; and especially Luc. Alex. 19. For the Acarnanian oracle of A. see Celsus ap. Origen. 3, 34.

C. 8.  
9-12.  
14.

15. Πυθούς: On the Delphic oracle and its relation to the doctrine of the immortality of the soul, see Curtius, *History of Greece*, book 2, chap. 4; also the remarkable description of Eurygnomus in Pausan. 10, 29, 7. E. is an ogre, who devours the flesh but leaves the bones, as a symbolical *non omnis moriar*.

16. Ἐμπειδοκλίου: See Ritter and Preller, *Hist. Phil.* 179 (ed. sec. 148) sqq.; Ueberweg, *Hist. of Philosophy* (Am. Tr.), 1, 60. —Πλάτωνός τε καὶ Σωκράτους: Notice the close coupling of the 'double star' (Emerson).

17. παρ' Ὀμήρῳ = *apud Homerum*. — βόθρος: The pit which Odysseus filled with blood to attract the souls of the dead: ἰγὼ δ' ἄορ δέξῃ ἱρυσσάμενος παρὰ μηροῦ | βόθρον ὕρου' ὕσσον τε πυγούσιον ἰνθα καὶ ἰνθα, *Od.* 11, 24, 25.

19. κἂν . . . ἀποδείξασθε: Κἂν is elliptical and = *vel*, e. g. Plato, *Theag.* 181 A. So 2 Cor. 11, 6: κἂν ὡς ἄφρονα δείξασθί με, *Theophil.* ad Autolyc. 1, 13: ζεῖζύν μοι κἂν ἵνα ἱγερῶντα ἐκ νεκρῶν. Be it observed that the true ellipsis with the imperative is the notion of will that lies in the imperative—not κἂν ἀποδείξησθε (Kühner), but κἂν ἀποδείξασθαι ἐβίλητε. For καὶ w. imper. comp. the typical cry of Ajax: ἰν δὲ φάει καὶ ὤλεσσον.

20. οὐχ ἦπτον: The neg. οὐχ is retained after the imper., partly because of the fixity of the very common phrase, partly because of the causal sense of the participle. So *Orig. c. Cels.* 5, 31.

22. ταυτῶν = ἡμίτερα αὐτῶν. — μηδὲν . . . λέγοντες: 'Maintaining,' rather than 'saying' (c. 4, 18), that nothing is impossible for God.

19. 'WHY SHOULD IT BE THOUGHT A THING INCREDIBLE WITH YOU THAT GOD SHOULD RAISE THE DEAD?'

1. κατανοοῦντι τί: So Grabe for κατανοοῦντι. K. the familiar dative of reference. — ἀπιστότερον μᾶλλον: There is really no pleonasm. Μᾶλλον is 'rather,' not 'more.' Combine with ἐόξαι. — ὀξέαι: Less common in Attic than ἐόξεαι.

2. ἢ εἰ . . . μὴ ὑπάρχονεν: In comparisons, either the ideal (c. 3, 5) or the unreal condition (c. 4, 6) is employed. Here they are blended by a shifting of the point of view. So *Andoc.* 1, 57; [*Plat.*] *De Justo*, 373 E.

3. βανίδος: This fact has often been used to humiliate man (*Pallad. Anthol. Pal.* 10, 45: εἰ δὲ λόγον ζητεῖς τὸν ἀληθινόν, ἐξ ἀκο-

λάσπου | λαγνείας γίγονας καὶ μιὰρᾶς ῥανίδος) or to glorify God (Theophil. ad Autolyc. 1, 8: ἐπλάσι σε ἐξ ὑγρᾶς οὐσίας μικρᾶς καὶ ἱλαχίστης ῥανίδος). Comp. Athenag. Res. 17, 80 and M. Anton. 10, 26.

4. *δοτῆς*: The open forms occur even in Attic prose.—*εἰκονοποιηθέντα*: There are swarms of such formations in later times.

5. *Ἔστω . . . λεγόμενον*: Not distinguishable from *λεγίσθω* at this stage. Comp. *ἔστωσαν ἄγοντες*, Athenag. Suppl. 15, 59. 58

6. *μὴ οὖσι τοιοῦτοις μηδὲ τοιούτων*: 'Not being such yourselves, nor [sons] of such parents.' Comp. *ὁποίους καὶ ἐξ ὁποίων* below, and Xen. Anab. 3, 2, 13: *τοιούτων ἐστὶ προγόνων*.

8. *οἷόν τε*: First adaptation (= *τοιούτων ὥστε*), then possibility. *οἷος* is used more strictly of character.—*διαβεβαιούμενος*: A favorite word with later writers.

9. *πρὶν ἰδεῖν*: C. 4, 13.—*γενόμενον*: Verbs of actual perception take commonly the present and perfect participles, as these represent the most common states of objects of perception. The aor. is used of concentrated perception, or, as here, of non-perception, according to the principle laid down, c. 4, 10. So below, *ἀναστάντα νεκρόν*. The aor. is also often used of intellectual perception = *ᾔδει* and aor. ind.—*ἐπιστεύσατε*: We should expect *ἐπιστεύσατ' ἄν*. But to correct *ἄν* in might be to correct Justin.

10. *ἀνταιπεῖν*: 'Maintain' (in opposition to another), not 'deny,' which would give a counter-sense. Still *εἰπεῖν* (*ἄν εἰπεῖν*) would be more natural.

13. *γινόμενος*: On the tense, see l. 9.

14. *λογίσασθε ὅτι*: C. 8, 1.

15. *δίκην σπερμάτων*: *Δίκη* (comp. *εἰκνυμι*), 'way pointed out,' 'manner,' 'fashion;' adverbial accusative. Later writers use this semi-poetical turn freely after Plato. So Max. Tyr. 2, 3: *δονιζος δίκην*, and elsewhere; Athenag. Suppl. 3, 12: *δίκην θηρίων*, also 10, 41; Clem. Alex. Protrept. 10, 92: *σκωλήκων δίκην*, also Paed. 1, 6, 36, 88; 2, 1, 11; Orig. c. Cels. 5, 40: *δίκην ληστών*; 6, 53: *δίκην ἀνδραποδιστοῦ*.—*ἀνελυθέντα*: So Thirlby for *ἐις αλυθίντα*, after abundant analogy. Others, and so Otto, finally, *εἰς αλυσίντα*.

16. *ἀφ' ἑαυτοῦ ἐνδύσασθαι*: A Pauline reminiscence (?). Comp. 1 Cor. 15, 53: *εἰ τὸ φθαρτὸν τοῦτο ἐνδύσασθαι ἀφ' ἑαυτοῦ καὶ τὸ θνητὸν τοῦτο ἐνδύσασθαι ἀθανάσιον*. That it is not a mere coin-



cidence would appear from Athenag. Res. 18, 88: *δεῖ κατὰ τὸν ἀπόστολον τὸ φθαρτὸν τοῦτο ἐνδύσασθαι ἀφθαρσίαν*. Comp. Tatian, c. 20; Theophil. ad Autolyc. 1, 7; Orig. c. Cels. 7, 82. It is a much disputed question how far Justin was acquainted with the Pauline epistles, and what was his attitude towards Paul. See Willink: Justinus Martyr in zijne verhouding tot Paulus. Zwolle, 1867.

18. οἱ φάσκοντες: Practical present part. of *φημί*, 'allege,' 'assert,' 'maintain.' *φημί* is the most 'subjective' of the common verbs of saying, and in model Gr. seldom takes any thing but the inf. In this stage it is freely combined with *εἶναι*. Οἱ φάσκοντες are the Stoics.

19. οὐπερ: C. 12, 38.—*παρὰ ταῦτα*: *Παρά* is often used with comparative notions, as might be supposed from its meaning 'alongside.'

20. οὐκ ἔχομεν: C. 3, 5.—*συνωρῶμεν*: C. 9, 21.

25. παρελήφαμεν: So I read with Otto (3) for *προελήφαμεν*, as in c. 10, 2.

26. ἔγνωμεν: Shorthand for perfect. When the perfect is used as a present, the aor. is used for the perf.; 'we have learned.'—*εἰπόντες*=*ὅτι εἶπεν*. See l. 9.—*τὰ δέοντα* . . . *θεῶ*: Luke 18, 27. Celsus harps on this. See Orig. c. Cels. 5, 14.

27. *Μὴ* . . . *ἐμβαλεῖν*: Luke 12, 4 foll.; Matt. 10, 28.

28. *μὴ δυναμένους*: C. 4, 9.

30. *γένναν*: Valley of Hinnom (גִּינוֹן הַיְּמִי). See Bible Dict.

31. *ἐνθα*: Always a relative in prose.—*κολάζεσθαι*: C. 3, 4.—*μᾶλλον*: 'Are destined.' *Μᾶλλον* is more frequently construed with the fut. inf., especially when it is used in this sense, but it is impossible to draw a sharp line of distinction between fut. and pres. The combination with the fut. is the older, and seems to arise from the original meaning of the word, 'think,' 'expect.' Comp. Fr. *penser*.

#### 20. 'TESTE DAVID CUM SIBYLLA.'

1. *Σίβυλλα*: The Sibyl is so familiar a figure in Pagan Mythology and the (spurious) Sibylline Oracles so notorious in the history of the Christian Church, that a simple reference to the classical and biographical dictionaries will suffice. See March,

Latin Hymns, p. 294; Neander, History of the Christian Religion (Am. Tr.), 1, 176; Keim, Celsus, S. 115, 4. The oracle to which Justin alludes begins (O. Sib. 4, 168): *πῦρ ἴσται κατὰ κόσμον· ἐν ᾧ τόδε σῆμα τίυεται· | ῥομφαῖαι, σάλπιγγες, ἄμ' ἡλίῳ ἀνιόντι· | κόσμος ἅπας μήκημα καὶ ὁμβριμον ἦχον ἀκούσει· | φλίξει δὲ χθόνα πᾶσαν ἐπὶ.* — *Ὑστέσπης*: The Sibyl and Hystaspes are coupled below (c. 44, 41). The prophecies of the Persian Hystaspes (Gushtasp) are commended in the Praedicatio Petri (Clem. Alex. Strom. 6, 5, 43), and are mentioned by Ammian. Marcell. 23, 6, and Lactantius, Inst. Div. 7, 15 and 18.

3. *Στωϊκοὶ* . . . *αὐτὸν τὸν θεὸν εἰς πῦρ ἀναλύεσθαι*: A popular statement of the Stoic doctrine. The *πῦρ τεχνικόν* of the Stoics was a different thing from ordinary fire. See Ueberweg, History of Philosophy (Am. Tr.), 1, 194 foll.

4. *ἀναλύεσθαι* . . . *γινίσθαι*: 'Is to be resolved,' 'is to be made.' Present and aor. as futures. Comp. c. 12, 23. But remember that according to Stoic doctrine the process is ever going on, so that *ἀναλύεσθαι* may be translated as a present. — *αὐ πάλιν*: More commonly *πάλιν αὐ*.

9. *θεῖως*: We should expect *θειοτέρως*. — *ἀποδείξαι*: See c. 18, 18. — *παρὰ πάντας* = *μᾶλλον πάντων*: Comp. c. 19, 19.

11. *Πλάτωνος*: In the Timaeus, which the Fathers were never weary of citing.

12. *τῷ δὲ* (sc. *λέγειν*) *ἐκπύρωσιν γινίσθαι*: See c. 60, 14.

15. *ποιηταῖς καὶ φιλοσόφοις*: No end of examples might be adduced.

16. *χειρῶν ἔργα ἀνθρώπων*: The MSS. have *χειρῶν ἀνθρώποις*. Various emendations have been proposed. Stephanus suggests *χειρῶν ἔργοις ἀνθρώπων*. I prefer *ἔργα*, as Justin more frequently uses the normal acc. See c. 16, 20. However, the LXX have the dat. in the passages to which Justin alludes, Jer. 1, 16; Micah 5, 13.

17. *Μενάνδρῳ τῷ κωμικῷ*: Editors refer to passages which are cited in [Justin] De Monarchia, 5 (frgg. 196, 237, 330, 375 Mein.), but none of them is much to the point. — *ταῦτα φήσας*: Meineke reads *τά τοιαῦτα* (Otto).

18. *φράζομεν*: *Φράζω*, orig. 'point out,' is used by preference of detailed explanation, 'teach.'

## 21. ANALOGIES TO THE HISTORY OF CHRIST.

This line of argument is repugnant to our modern sensibilities, but the Fathers did not disdain to meet the heathen on his own ground. Fable for fable, the Christian religion was not more improbable than the Pagan. So Tertull. says (Apol. 21): *Recipite interim hanc fabulam, similis est vestris, dum ostendimus quomodo Christus probetur*, and the same writer parallels Gehenna and Pyriphlegethon, Paradise and the Elysian Fields, l. c. 47. Comp. Orig. c. Cels. 1, 37: οὐδὲν ἔσποιν πρὸς Ἕλληνας καὶ Ἑλληνικαῖς ἱστορίαις χρῆσασθαι, ἵνα μὴ δοκῶμεν μόνοι τῇ παραδόξῃ ταύτῃ ἱστορίᾳ κεχρησθαι.

1. Τῷ . . . φάσκουσιν: As above, c. 20, 10. φάσκοντες would be more elegant.—δ: Agreeing with the predicate.

2. γεγεννησθαι: So Thirlby for γεγενῆσθαι. Otto now says that γεγεννησθαι is the MS. reading.

5. οὐ . . . καινόν τι φέρομεν: See note on Ep. ad Diogn. 1.—παρὰ τοῦς . . . λεγομένους νιούς: See c. 19, 19.

6. νιούς τῷ Δίῳ: Stress on νιούς. Below νιούς τοῦ Διός with stress on Διός. In classic writers the constructions vary, sometimes to produce a kind of chiasmus or alternate stress, as in Hdt. 7, 2; Isaeus, 3, 13, sometimes without any apparent reason.

8. Ἑρμῆν . . . λόγον τὸν ἐρμηνευτικόν: This is the sublimated Logos view of Hermes, of which the most was made by Porphyry and the later theosophists generally. So, for instance, by the Emperor Julian. On the later development of Hermes as the great ἑρμηνεύς, see Preller, Gr. Myth. 1, 264 and Schol. L in Il. 2, 104.

9. Ἀσκληπιόν: See Class. Dict. s. v. Aesculapius, and so for all the other familiar classical legends.

10. κεραυνωθέντα: Luc. D. D. 13, 1: ὁ Ζεὺς σε ἐκεραύνωσεν ἃ μὴ ξίμης ποιοῦντα, νῦν δὲ κατ' ἔλεον αἰετὶς ἀθανασίας μετείληφας.—ἀνελθελυθέναι: Depends on ἐπίστασθε.

13. τὸν ἐξ ἀνθρώπων: 'Of mortal stock.' 'The Euhemeristic explanation of apotheosis is very common in the Christian writers of the second century.' (Keim, Celsus' Wahres Wort, S. 37, 2).—ἐφ' ἵππου: So Sylburg for ἐφ' ἵππου. Thirlby calls attention to Justin's slip. Bellerophon did not get to heaven. See Pind. Isthm. 7, 63; Hor. Od. 4. 11, 26.

14. τί . . . λέγομεν τὴν Ἀριάδην: C. 15, 20.

15. κατηστερίσθαι: See the list in Tatian, 10: *τις ἴσθιν ὁ Βερενίκης πλόκαμος; πῶς ἐὶ ὁ τεθνεὺς Ἀντίνους μαιράκιον ἐν τῇ σελήνῃ ὥραιον καζίδρυνται*; Clem. Hom. 5, 23: *χαριζόμενοι ταῖς ἱρωμίαις κατηστίριζον αὐτάς*.—τί γάρ: Sc. λέγομεν.

16. οὗς: Due to Thirlby.—ἀπαθανατίζεσθαι: There are three notorious instances: that of Romulus, at which Tertull. mocks, Apol. 21; that of Augustus, which Suetonius mentions, Aug. 100; that of Drusilla, at which Seneca sneers, Apocol. 1: *Si necesse fuerit auctorem producere, quaerite ab eo qui Drusillam euntem in caelum vidit: idem Claudium vidisse se dicet iter facientem*.

17. καὶ . . . προάγετε: 'You actually produce.'

18. ἀνερχόμενον: Actual perception, c. 19, 9.—κατακαίντα: 2 aor. pass. not Attic, = κατακαυδίντα.

20. πρὸς εὐδοκίαν λέγειν: When the direction is emphasized, the preposition πρὸς is used, not the dat. On the phrase, see c. 9, 8.

21. εἰς διαφορὰν καὶ προτροπήν: Supposed to be ironical; 'for the excellence (advantage) and furtherance.' But διαφορὰν is awkward, and διαφορὰν καὶ παρατροπήν lies very near, as the older commentators have remarked.

22. Ἀπείη: Opt. of wish. The present is used when a state or process is desired, the aorist when attainment. Hence regularly *χαίροις, εὐδαιμονοίης, εὐτυχοίης*, but *γίνοιτο, ἐξόλοιτο, τύχοις*.—ψυχῆς: The genitive as the case of possession is also the case of dispossession (ablative). On the free handling of the gen. as an abl., see c. 58, 13.

23. ὡς . . . παραδέξασθαι: 'As to accept the tradition that,' the other infinitives depending on παραδ., for which comp. c. 23, 5 and Orig. c. Cels. 4, 81. 93.

25. πατροφόντην τε καὶ πατὸς τοιούτου: 'A parricide and son of a parricide.' Zeus did not kill his father; he was a *πατραλοίας*, not a *πατροφόντης*, as Thirlby remarks. But who can resist such a familiar effect?

26. ἡδονῶν: Depends on ἦπτω, 'slave of.'

27. ἐπὶ Γανυμήδην; Ἐπί, 'after;' standing use of the preposition. See Index.

28. τὰς αὐτοῦ παῖδας: Not to be changed into αὐτοῦ, which J. does not use, nor into ἰαυτοῦ. The unemphatic possessive gen.

Σὺν ἐπὶ Ἀλεξάνδρου Δαντάν τε πολὺ  
ρ. 20. Ν. 10, 11

of the pronouns is regularly put outside of art. and subst. But here αὐτοῦ is *ipsius*, not *eius*.

29. ὡς προέφημεν: C. 5, 6. On the form ἔφημεν, see c. 8, 1.

30. δεδιδάγμεθα: Μανθάνω is far more common than the pass. of διδάσκω, and justly. The normal construction of διδάσκω is that of a verb of showing. Here it takes an inf., like πιστεύω.

32. ἀδίκως: Sc. βιούντας. Ἀδίκους (suggested by Billius) would be smoother.—ἐν αἰωνίῳ πυρί: The scene, not necessarily the instrument. See note on c. 38, 14.

## 22. CHRIST'S SONSHIP AND ITS ANALOGIES.

Maran calls attention to the fact that Arnobius (Adv. Gentes, 1, 38) argues in the same way.

1. εἰ καί: Where we might expect καὶ. But comp. c. 2, 7. Καὶ must be joined closely to κοινῶς, as in καὶ ἰδίως below.

3. ἀνδρῶν τε θεῶν τε: A familiar Homeric phrase. Notice poetic use of τε . . . τε to couple two words, and of ἀνδρῶν=ἀνθρώπων.

4. παρὰ τὴν κοινὴν γένεσιν: Παρά=*praeter*.

5. γεγεννησθαι: So the MSS. says Otto *noie*. Comp. c. 23, 7.

6. ὡς προέφημεν: C. 21, 1.—ἔστω: 'Must be considered.'—τοῖς . . . λέγουσιν: Apposition with a personal pronoun has the article.

7. ἀγγελτικόν: Comp. Hymn. in Merc: ἀγγελον ἀθανάτων ἱριούνιον ὃν τίκε Μαῖα.—Εἰ . . . αἰτιάσαιτο: The ideal condition occasionally admits in the apodosis imperative and indicative forms, such as we find more frequently associated with ἰάν. While these deviations may be accounted for, we must bear in mind for this stage of the language the gradual effacement of the optative and its force.

8. καὶ τοῦτο κοινόν: Comp. Arnob. 1, 41, who adduces among others Bacchus, Aesculapius, and Hercules.

9. νίοις καθ' ὑμᾶς τοῦ Διός: To be closely connected.

10. Ἐκείνων τε γάρ: A solitary τε, even when it connects sentences, not words, is comparatively rare in the model Attic period. It sometimes serves, like the Latin *-que*, to complete or extend a previous statement, sometimes to give an emphatic summary. This may be called the postscript or afterthought τε.

Comp. c. 48, 4.—*οὐχ ὅμοια . . . ἀλλὰ διάφορα*: The use of litotes is so common in Greek that it is necessary to guard against it by an antithesis. *Διάφορα καὶ οὐχ ὅμοια* would be a climax (comp. Soph. O. R. 58: *γνωτὰ κούκ ἀγνωτὰ μοι*); *οὐχ ὅμοια ἀλλὰ διάφορα* is a simple statement.

11. *ᾧστε μὴδὲ . . . δοκεῖν*: C. 5, 8.—*τὸ βιον*: Dependent on *ἤτρονα*. 'In the peculiarity.'

13. *προϊόντος τοῦ λόγου*: 'As the discussion goes on,' 'in the course of the discussion.' So c. 34, 7 and Athenag. Suppl. 1, 4.

15. *διὰ παρθένου*: Comp. Dial. c. Tryph. 23. 'Εκ would be more natural, and unnecessary offence has been taken at the use of *εἰά*, as savoring of heresy.

16. *Περσεία*: See Class. Dict.—*ὦν . . . λέγομεν*=*λέγοντες*.

17. *ἐκ γενετῆς ἀναπήρους*: The MSS. have *πονηρούς*, in the sense of 'suffering,' for which the recessive accent *πονήρους* is generally preferred. Most editors desiderate *πηρούς*; but *ἀναπήρους* fills the space better. Comp. Luke 14, 13. 21.

### 23. STATEMENT OF THE ARGUMENT.

Justin undertakes to prove three things: 1. That the doctrines of the Christians are the only true doctrines (cc. 24–29); 2. That the Son of God was incarnate (cc. 30–53); 3. That the demons have invented the myths of the heathen in order to lead men to their ruin (cc. 54 foll.). So in effect Maran. See the Analysis. Ritter (ap. Otton.) says there is no proof of the first thesis in cc. 24–26, and would regard the first thesis as the general proposition, which is satisfied by the proofs for the second and third theses, for in the second it is proved that Christianity is true, in the third that Christianity alone is true, all else being a device of evil spirits. Justin is not distinguished for clear logical development of his themes.

1. *ἤδη*: 'By this time,' 'now.' *Ἡδὴ* differs from *νῦν* as *iam* from *nunc*. In the former the relativity is emphasized.

5. *τὸ ταῦτά . . . αὐτοῖς*: The familiar compendious construction. 'The same with them'='the same as they.'—*παραδεχθῆναι*: Comp. c. 21, 29.

7. *ἰδίως*: C. 22, 4.

10. *πρὶν ἢ*: C. 4. 13. I have written *καὶ πρὶν*, according to

Maran's suggestion. Perhaps unnecessary difficulty has been made about this passage. 'And [that] before Christ became a man among men, certain men, at the instigation of the before-mentioned demons, recounted as facts by the instrumentality of the poets the figments which they had made and uttered, in the same way as they have fabricated the charges of impious and abominable deeds that are brought against us.' Still it is not to be denied that the sentence would be simplified by writing *τά* with Ashton and Otto (3) for *διὰ* (*τῶν*).

11. *φθάσαντες* = *πρότερον*. See c. 12, 38.—*διὰ τοῖς . . . δαίμονας . . . τῶν ποιητῶν*: Scholars sometimes (e. g. Rauchenstein on Lys. 12, 58) allow themselves to say that *διὰ* with the accus. is used like *διὰ* with gen. So broad a distinction, which could not escape any decent Hellenist (comp. Hebr. 2, 10), is not to be given up so lightly. 'Owing to,' will cover all the cases of supposed confusion. For *διὰ* w. acc. and gen., see Dem. 6, 6 and Constt. Apostt. 2, 24 (*διὰ ἑῶς*—*διὰ μετανοίας*). An effacement of prepositions is not to be assumed without evidence. Observe how Athenag. refines on *μετά* and *σύν* (Suppl. 31, 57), on *ἐπί* and *περί* (Resurr. 1, 4), *ἐν* and *περί* (Resurr. 21, 101), *κατά* and *διὰ* (Resurr. 11, 48; 18, 84), *ἐξ* and *παρά* (Resurr. 20, 96), *ἐπὶ* and *διὰ* (Suppl. 2, 8), *πρός* and *διὰ* (Suppl. 10, 40), not to speak of such familiar distinctions as *ἀπό* and *ἐξ* (Tatian, 20; Orig. c. Cels. 1, 51).

12. *ὡς γινόμενα*: *ὡς* with participle after a verb of saying or thinking=inf. See c. 4, 18.

13. *ἐν τρόπον*: C. 4, 22.

15. *τοῦτον λεγὼν ποιησόμεθα*: 'This is the proof that we shall offer.' *Τοῦτον τὸν λεγὼν* would be 'this proof.' See c. 13, 6. On *τοῦτον*, where we should expect *τόντε*, c. 15, 24; on *λεγὼν*, c. 2, 20; on *ποιησόμεθα*, c. 1, 9.

#### 24. VARIATIONS OF HEATHENISM.

First argument to show that the doctrines of the Christians are true. Others are free to worship whom or what they please; Christians alone are slain for their worship. The hatred of the light proves that it is light. The same line of argument is found in Tatian, 10; Athenag. Suppl. 14; Orig. c. Cels. 5, 27.

2. *μηδὲν ἐδικούντες*: C. 8, 19.

Handwritten notes in the left margin:  
 . . . 23, 43: ὅτι ἡ δὲ  
 267 ἡ τὴν παρὰ τὸν  
 267 ἡ τὴν παρὰ τὸν

3. ὡς ἀμαρτωλοί: Sc. ὄντες.

4. θένδρα: So the Indians and others. See Curt. Hist. Alex. 8, 9, 34: *Deos putant quidquid colere coeperunt, arbores maxime, quas violare capital est.* Also Fergusson's Tree and Serpent Worship. — ποταμούς: So the Persians, among others. See Clem. Alex. Protrept. 4, 46 and the long list in Max. Tyr. 8, 1.—μῦς: So the Egyptians.

5. αἰλούρους: Comp. Athenag. Suppl. 1: οἱ ἐν Αἰγύπτῳ καὶ αἰλούρους καὶ κροκοδείλους καὶ ὄφεις καὶ ἀσπίδας καὶ κύνας θεοὺς νομίζουσι, and Orig. c. Cels. 5, 51.—κροκοδείλους: See the anecdote in Max. Tyr. 8, 5.

7. ἔστ' εἶναι: C. 5, 8.

8. Ὅπερ: C. 12, 38.

9. ὅτι μὴ . . . σίβωμεν: As μὴ became more and more common with the inf., so it crept into object sentences with ὅτι as a kind of indication of oratio obliqua. See note on c. 4, 18. Examples abound: Lucian, Nigr. 32; Dial. Mort. 15, 2; Charon, 1; Sacrif. 2; Piscat. 24, etc.; Prom. 20 (ἐιότι μὴ); Max. Tyr. 7, 9; 9, 5 (ὡς μὴ); Athenag. Suppl. 23, 107, 115; Resurr. 5, 24; 10, 40; Orig. c. Cels. 3, 18; 4, 65; Euseb. H. E. 1, 3, 20, 4, 8; 3, 38, 1, 4.

10. ἐν γραφαῖς στεφάνους: 'If this mean any thing, it must be taken as an equivalent for στεφάνους γεγραμμένους, "painted crowns." Maran contends, indeed, that γραφή signifies not only a picture but a statue, and interprets the words of the decoration of the statues of the gods. But in that case ἐν is inadmissible [as Braun notes]' (Trollope). None of the numerous conjectures is convincing. I incline to one of the oldest, ἐν ταφαῖς (ἐν τάφοις, Thirlby). Comp. Minuc. Fel. Oct. 12: *coronas etiam sepulcris denegatis*, and Lat. Hymns, p. 246. So Otto *now*.

11. Ὅτι γὰρ οὖν τὰ αὐτά: The MSS. have ὅτι γὰρ οὖν. Sylburg omits οὖν; Otto reads οὖν. — οἷς μὲν κτί.: Familiar use of the relative as a demonstrative with μὲν and ἐί; common after Demosthenes in prose.

## 25. CHRISTIANS ABANDON THE WORLD OF FALSE GODS.

1. Δεύτερον: The second argument is drawn from the purity of the worship of the One God in contrast with the impure deities, from whose service the Christians have turned even in the



face of death (Maran).—ἐκ παντὸς γένους ἀνθρώπων: C. 1, 5.—οἱ παλαιοί: So Sylburg for παλαιοί.

2. Διόνυσον τὸν Σεμέλης . . . Ἀπόλλωνα τὸν Λητοίδην: In studying the gen. notice the frequent parallelism with adjective. 'Son of'—the old explanation of the name γενική—however insufficient, is not un instructive. Comp. 'son of' in Hebrew.

8. ὅσα: 'All.' ὅσος of number, οἷος of quality. 'Such,' originally of quality, is very loosely used in English.

4. Περσεφόνη: The symbolism of the myth of Persephonē, Aphrodite, and Adonis, which belongs to the cycle of Birth, Death, Resurrection, and Immortality, is sufficiently familiar. See my article on the Legend of Venus (Southern Review, April, 1867, p. 358 foll.). But the Fathers resolutely shut their eyes to all symbolism save their own. Tatian says (c. 21): πείσθητέ μοι νῦν, ὡ ἄνδρες Ἕλληνες, μηδὲ τοὺς μύθους μηδὲ τοὺς θεοὺς ὑμῶν ἀλληγορήσητε· κἀν γὰρ τοῦτο πράττειν ἐπιχειρήσητε, θεότης ἢ καὶ ὑμᾶς ἀνήρηται καὶ ὑφ' ὑμῶν. See also Athenag. Suppl. 22.—αἰσχος καὶ λέγειν: Comp. Eph. 5, 12: τὰ γὰρ κρυφῇ γινόμενα ὑπ' αὐτῶν αἰσχρόν ἐστι καὶ λέγειν. Αἰσχος is not much used in Attic prose. See Clem. Alex. Paed. 3, 8, 43.

7. καίπερ θανάτου ἀπειλουμένου: C. 7, 7.

8. τούτων . . . κατεφρονήσαμεν: C. 8, 2. — ἐξ τῆ ἀγεννήτης καὶ ἀπαθεί: C. 14, 9.

9. ἑαυτοὺς ἀνεψήκαμεν: C. 14, 12. — ἐπ' Ἀντιόπην: Ἐπί, 'after,' as above.

11. διὰ θετίδος: See Il. 1, 401–3. So Lucian, mockingly (D. D. 21, 2): εἰ μὴ ἡ θείτις κατελήσασα ἐκάλεσεν αὐτῷ σύμμαχον Βριάρειων ἐκατόγχειρα ὄντα, κἀν ἐξίδετο ἂν [Ζεὺς] αὐτῷ κεραυνῷ καὶ βροντῇ.

12. μεριμνῶντα κτί.: 'Solicitous that the son of Thetis should destroy.'

14. ὀλέσαι: The prose form is ἀπολέσαι. Ὀλέσαι in a half-quotation. Comp. Il. 2, 3. 4: ἀλλ' ὅγε μερμήριζε κατὰ φρένα ὡς Ἀχιλλῆα | τιμήσει, ὀλέσαι δὲ πολίης ἐπὶ νηυσὶν Ἀχαιῶν.

## 26. HUMAN AGENTS OF THE DEMONS.

1. Τρίτον: The third proof that the truth is what is hated. Those whom the devils have inspired to corrupt the Christian

religion are not persecuted, or if they are persecuted, it is for their crimes, not for their faith (Maran).—*ἀνέλευσιν*: Eusebius, who copies this passage (H. E. 2, 13), has *ἀνάληψιν*, but comp. Dial. c. Tr. cc. 39 and 87 (Thirlby).

3. *λέγοντας ἑαυτούς*: The reflexive is rarely expressed when the subject of the leading verb and the subject of the inf. are the same.

5. *Σίμωνα . . . Σαμαρεία*: Simon Magus (Acts 8, 9–24) was regarded by the Fathers as the ringleader of all heresies (Euseb. H. E. 2, 13, 6); but 'it is quite uncertain with how much reason the beginnings of heretical gnosis have been ascribed to Simon Magus' (Teberweg). Origen tells us (c. Cels. 1, 12) that the number of Simonians had shrunk in his time to thirty persons. Comp. 6, 11: *οὐδαμοῦ τῆς οἰκουμένης Σιμωνιανοί*.

6. *Γιγνῶν*: So in the Constt. Apostt. 6, 7.—*ἐπὶ Κλαυδίου Καίσαρος*: C. 13, 16.

7. *δυνάμεις*: A *terminus technicus*; orig. *δυνάμεις*. See Matt. 11, 20. 21: 13, 54. 58; 14, 2; Mark 6, 2, 5. 14; Luke 19, 87 (Winer).

8. *βασιλίδι*: 'Imperial.' See c. 17, 11.

9. *παρ' ὑμῶν*: Euseb. has *παρ' ὑμῖν*.

11. *ΣΙΜΩΝΙ*: For this story—repeated by numbers after him—Justin is responsible. The truthfulness of the author and the correctness of the statement are not to be confounded. Thirlby argues at length in favor of Justin's allegation, but argues confessedly as a lawyer, not as a judge. He lays especial stress on the madness of an appeal to evidence which could have been refuted by a moment's inspection. But it is the more prevalent opinion that Justin misread an inscription on the pedestal of a statue of Semo Sancus—a much-revered Sabine deity—which pedestal was dug up in the island of the Tiber in the year 1574. The inscription runs:

SEMONI  
SANCUS  
DEO • FIDIO  
SACRVM  
SEX • POMPEIVS • F. F. 57.  
COL • MVSSIANVS  
QUINQVENNALIS  
DECVR  
BIDENTALIS  
DONVM • DEDIT.

Grut. T. I. p. xcvi, n. 5.

For the confusion of *Semoni* and *Simoni*, see c. 4, 4 and B 3, 3. Comp. further Bunsen (l. c. 1, 354), who notes the fact that Hippolytus, being a Roman, did not make this blunder.

13. *ὡς τὸν πρῶτον ἐσόν*: He called himself *sumum patrem*, according to Tertull. De Anima, 34.

14. *Ἑλένην*: A very common name, despite the evil omen that Aeschylus found in it (Agam. 666 Herm.).—*συμπερινοστήσαν*: I read *συμπ.* with Sylburg, Maran, Braun, against the MSS. *Περινοστήω*, 'ramble,' or 'roam about,' with a reminiscence of the old *Νόστροι*. Comp. the use in Ar. Plut. 121. 494; Plato, De Rep. 8, 558 A; Luc. Tim. 13 (bis).

15. *κατ' ἑαυτοῦ τοῦ καιροῦ*: C. 17, 3.—*ἐπὶ τόγους*: *Ἐπὶ* with gen. usually of a fixed (normal) position on, hence of a regular 'stand' at. See the Lexicons s. vv. *τόγος*, *οἰκημα*.—*σταθεῖσαν*: Comp. *pro stare*. See the Lexicons.

16. *ἴνσεις*: Tr. by Tertull. *injectionem*. Parallels in other systems will not fail to suggest themselves.

17. *Μένανδρον*: For an account of Menander, see Euseb. H. E. 3, 26 (p. 87 D. S.).

20. *ἡπατήσαι*: For the inf. see A 3, 3.—*οἰδαμεν* = *ἴσμεν*.

21. *ὡς μηδὲ ἀπολήσκειεν*: In normal Gr., *ὡς οὐδέ ἀποθανοῦνται* or *ἀποθανοῦντο*. In classic Gr. prose, after a past tense, principal indicative clauses may be represented in oratio obliqua either by the infinitive (the older form) or by *ὄτι* or *ὡς* with the opt. The latter construction faded out with the opt. itself, and Justin uses here and c. 49, 21 the opt. as a fut. Comp. Clem. Alex. Protrept. 3, 44; Ep. Eccl. V. et L. ap. Euseb. H. E. 5, 1, 24. The neg. *μή* is used as after *ὄτι*, c. 24, 9.

22. *ἀπ' ἑαυτοῦ*: *Ἀπὸ* of a school or sect is very common, e. g. Athenag. Suppl. 6, 25, 26; 16, 65; 23, 107; Clem. Alex. Protrept. 5, 66; 6, 72; Strom. 2, 3, 10; Orig. c. Cels. 3, 75; 4, 68 al. So in Lat. *ab*: *Zeno et qui ab eo sunt*, Cic. Fin. 3, 3.—*Μαρκίωνα . . . τὸν Ποντικόν*: This passage is cited by Euseb. H. E. 4, 11. The Catholics persecuted the memory of Marcion as that of their worst enemy, as is shown by the famous anecdote from Iren. (3, 3) quoted by Euseb. l. c. 4, 14, 7 (p. 109 D. S.). According to Marcion, who was an older contemporary of Justin, there were two gods, one the Demiurge, or maker of the world, to be denied and renounced,

the other the greater god, whose works are far more excellent than those of the Demiurge. 'The person and character of Christ are not to be explained by any historical preparation for His coming, or by any national prophecy or expectation of the Jews.' 'Christ saved mankind by divine, gratuitous, spontaneous love, expecting no reward, but knowing that thus alone He could destroy the cruel Demiurge, the Prince of this world, who knows no higher motive than reward, and who could only be humbled and crushed by Christ's self-sacrificing love. His love redeemed mankind, that is to say, it has the power of freeing them from selfishness, the root of all sin and estrangement from God.' 'Marcionism was doomed to perish by the two inherent errors and heresies of the system; the breaking with the history of the world in placing itself in contradiction both with the past and with the present. In the past, it saw the principle of evil in that which was the preparation for the Gospel; in the present, it laid the hand of destruction both on the historical records of Christ and His apostles, and on the life of practical Christianity in the congregation' (Bunsen). See also Ueberweg. *Hist. of Philosophy*, 1, 284 (Am. Tr.).

23. ἐστὶ διδάσκων: 'Is engaged in teaching.' Comp. c. 19, 5.

25. κατὰ πᾶν γένος ἀνθρώπων: See c. 1, 5.—συλλήψεις: Σύλληψις in the sense of 'help' is rare. Comp. *Max. Tyr.* 14, 7: θεοῦ εἰς συλλήπτορος.

27. τὸν ποιητὴν τοῦδε τοῦ παντὸς θεόν: 'That the maker of this universe is God.' Τὸν ποιητὴν is the subject, as is shown by the article. Comp. Plato, *Timaeus*, 28 C.—ὡς ὄντα μείζονα: Ground assigned by Marcion. See c. 4, 18.

28. μείζονα παρά: C. 19, 19.

29. ὡς εἶφμεν: C. 7, 10. Euseb. has εἶφαμεν. On the form, see c. 8, 1.

30. ὃν τρόπον: C. 4, 22.—οἱ οὐ κοινωνοῦντες: Emphasizing the opposition to κοινωνόν. Comp. c. 14, 16.

31. τὸ ἐπικατηγορούμενον ὄνομα: See c. 7, 9. Otto reads, with Euseb., ἐπικαλούμενον unnecessarily, and ἐν before φιλοσόφοις.

33. ἐκεῖνα: 'Εκεῖνος, like the Latin *ille*.—μυθολογούμενα ἔργα: These stock accusations can be found in Athenag. *Suppl.* c. 3; *Ep. Eccl. Vienn. et Lugdun. ap. Euseb.* l. c. 5, 1, 14 (p. 130 D. S.);

Tertull. Apol. 7 (p. 39 D. S.); Theophil. ad Autolyc. 3, 4. According to Orig. c. Cels. 6, 27, the Jews started these stories.—*λυχνίας* . . . *ἀνατροπήν*: The signal for wild debauchery. The classic form is *λυχνίον*, not *λυχνία*.

34. *ἀνέδην*: Regular adverbial formation from *ἀνήμενος*. *Ἀναιδῶν*, suggested by Morell, and once approved by Otto, is a faulty formation found in later writers for *ἀναιδῶς*.—*σαρκῶν βοράς*: On the plural, see c. 13, 2.

35. *ὅτι μή*: C. 24, 8.

36. *κάν διὰ τὰ δόγματα*: *Κάν=καί*. See c. 2, 7.

37. *ἡμῖν=ἐμοί*: On the case, see c. 27, 18.

38. *ἐντυχεῖν*: C. 14, 3.

#### 27. GUILT OF EXPOSING CHILDREN.

1. *μηδὲν ἀδικᾶμεν*: So I read with Stephanus. The MSS. have *μηδεῖνα ἐιώκωμεν*, defended at length by Maran and retained by Braun, Otto (1. 2), Trollope. But Otto *noio* succumbs. Thirlby prefers *μηδεῖνα ἀδικ.*—*ἐκτιθέσθαι καὶ τὰ γεννώμενα*: *κοί* shows how trivial such an affair seemed to the heathen.

2. *πονηρῶν*: A change to *πονηρόν* is not necessary. The idiomatic translation would be the same.—*εἶναι δεδιδάγμεθα*: See c. 21, 30. Comp. with the passage Ep. ad Diogn. 5, 16: [Χριστιανοί] οὐ ρίπτουσι τὰ γεννώμενα and Athenag. Suppl. 35, 167: οὐ τοῦ αὐτοῦ μή ἐκτιθεῖναι μὲν τὸ γεννηθῆναι, ὡς τῶν ἐκτιθέντων τεκνοκτονούντων, πάλιν δὲ τὸ τραφῆναι ἀναιρεῖν.

4. *προάγοντας=προαγωγέοντας* (E. A. Sophocles).

5. *ὃν τρόπον*: C. 4, 23.

6. *ἵππων φορβάδων*: Comp. Plat. Legg. 2, 666 E: οἷον ἀξρόους πῶλους ἐν ἀγίῳ νεμομένους φορβάδας τοῖς νέους κίετθε. This passage of Justin is imitated by Tatian. Or. ad G. 28: παίδων ἀγέλας ὥσπερ ἵππων φορβάδων συναγείρειν αὐτῶν πειρωμένων, and by Clem. Alex. Paed. 3, 4, 26: μερακίων ὠραίων ἀγέλαι κατὰ περ σρεμμάτων παρ' ὧν ἀμείλονται τὸ κάλλος.

7. *οὕτω νῦν καὶ παίδας*: Sc. ὁρώμεν τρεφομένους. Otto (8) reads οὔτως, because Justin always says ὃν τρόπον . . . οὔτως, even before a consonant.

9. *ἐπὶ τοῦ αὐτοῦ τέγους ἔστηκεν*: The MSS. have *ἐπὶ τούτου τοῦ ἀγους*, which is supposed to be equivalent to *εἰς τὸ αἰσχροῦς χρή-*

σθαι above. If so, the combination stands alone in Greek. Thirlby's suggestion, which occurred to me independently, I have ventured to put in the text. Thirlby comp. Hieron. in Esai. 2. As much to the point would be Clem. Alex. Paed. 3, 3, 21: *ἰπὶ τείγους ἱστᾶσι παρ' αὐτοῖς τὴν σάρκα τὴν ἱαντῶν εἰς ἕβριν ἡδονῆς πιπράσκουσai γυναῖκες καὶ παῖδες ἀρνείσθαι τὴν φύσιν δεδιδαγμένοι προσποιούνται γυναῖκας.*

10. *μισθοὺς καὶ εἰσφορὰς καὶ τέλη*: Taxes for prostitution (*quantum quaeque uno concubitu mereret*) imposed by Caligula (Suet. Cal. 40), forbidden to be used for religious purposes by Alex. Severus (Lamprid. 24), abolished by Justinian. Comp. the *πορνικὸν τέλος* at Athens.

11. *δεῖον*: 'Whereas you ought.' See c. 4, 20.—*τῆς ὑμετέρας εἰκουμένης*: Substantivized participles seldom have a possessive pronoun, in classic prose.

12. *πρὸς τῇ ἀθέῳ κτί.*: 'Besides.'

13. *εἰ τύχοι*: 'Perhaps,' 'perchance,' a common phrase, e. g. Plato, Hipp. Min. 367 A.—*τέκνη*: *τίκνον* is used only in relation to parents, not to age—*proles, liberi*. Strictly speaking, it is not a prose word in the classic period. Even Plato uses it very seldom. Of the young of animals in Herodotus, Xenophon, Plato. It is common as a term of endearment in Christian writers. Minuc. Felix puts Justin's argument with his usual vigor. See Octav. 31.

15. *ἀποκόπτονται* = *ἐκτίμνονται*: Deuter. 23, 1: Theophil. ad Autol. 1, 9; 3, 8; Clem. Alex. Protrept. 2, 14.

16. *μητέρα θεῶν*: Magna Mater, Cybelé. See Catull. 63 and Class. Dictionaries.

17. *θεῶν*: For *θεῶ* (Sylburg). *ἔφης*: The serpent is a conspicuous figure in all religions. See commentators on Persius. 1, 113; Fergusson's Tree and Serpent Worship.

18. *ὑμῖν*: The so-called dative of the agent simply shows the person interested in the action. When the action is completed, the inference that the person interested is also the agent is often very natural. When the action is future (as with *-ρίον*) the inference is irresistible. With the tenses of continuance (present and impf.) the construction is rare in prose.

19. *ὡς ἀνατετραμμένον καὶ οὐ παρόντος κτί.*: On the *λυχνίας ἀνα-*

τροπή, see c. 26, 33. On the construction and negative, see c. 4, 18.

20. προσγράφει: 'Ascribe.'

21. οὐ βλάβην φέρει: With the sentiment comp. c. 2, 19.

#### 28. GOD CARES FOR HIS CREATURES.

1. ἀρχηγότης: Justin seems to use the word always in a bad sense, 'ring-leader.'

2. ὄφις: Comp. Rev. 20, 2: καὶ ἐκράτησε τὸν δράκοντα, τὸν ὄφιν τὸν ἀρχαῖον, ὃς ἐστὶ διάβολος καὶ σατανᾶς and Dial. c. Tryph. 103: Μωϋσῆς μὲν ὄφιν καλεῖ, ἐν δὲ τῷ Ἰώβ καὶ τῷ Ζαχαρίᾳ διάβολος ἐκλελγεται καὶ ὑπὸ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ σατανᾶς προσηγόρευται.—σατανᾶς: שָׂטָן, 'adversary.' A droll etymology is given by Justin in D. c. T. l. c. σατᾶ=שָׂטָן, which he renders ἀποστάτης, and νᾶς=נָח, ὄφις. This is only less amusing than the etymology in Theoph. ad Autol. 2, 29: δράκων καλεῖται διὰ τὸ ἀποδεδρακέναι αὐτὸν ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ.

3. ἐκ τῶν ἡμ. συγγραμμάτων: Combine with μαθεῖν.—ἐρευνήσαντες: Ἐρευνᾶν, *indagare*, originally of tracking an animal. Comp. Clem. Alex. Strom. 1, 3, 21: καὶ ὡς ὅτι τῆς ἀγίας ἱρωτικῆς ζητήσεως, ἀνιχνεύσας, ἐρευνήσας, κυνοδρομήσας αἰρεῖ τὸ θηρίον κτλ.

6. πρεσβήυσεν ὁ Χριστός: Matt. 25, 41.

7. ἡ ἐπιμονὴ τοῦ μηδέπω τοῦτο πράξει τὸν Θεόν: The gen. of the inf. is the appositive of ἐπιμονή, a classical construction, in which the negative is accounted for by the negative notion contained in ἐπιμονή, as a verbal noun of hindering (negative result). Comp. Thuc. 2, 49: ἡ ἀπορία τοῦ μὴ ἡσυχάζειν ἐπικειτο. Add 8. 73: Plato, Politic. 279 C; Dem. 19, 149; 24, 9.

9. μετάνοιας: The general term for 'change of mind' is μεταμέλεια; μετάνοια is 'a change of mind for the better,' 'a change of heart.' Comp. M. Anton. 8, 10: ἡ μετάνοιά ἐστιν ἐπιληψὶς τις ἑαυτοῦ ὡς χρησίμῳ τι παρικότος, and Greg. Naz. l. c.: τὴν δὲ μετάνοιαν πρὸς τὰ κρείσσονα στροφὴν. The difference between μεταμέλεια and μετάνοια appears in 2 Cor. 7, 10: ἡ κατὰ θεὸν λύπη μετάνοιαν εἰς σωτηρίαν ἀμεταμέλητον κατεργάζεται. But Clem. Alex. Protrept. (10, 90) distinguishes μετάνοια κενή from μετάνοια γνησία (10, 99), and Chrysostom (Homil. 15 in 2 Cor.) uses μετάνοια for μεταμέλονται.

10. τὴν ἀρχήν: See c. 10, 8.

11. εὖ πράττειν: In the less usual sense of 'virtuous action,' not of 'prosperity.' So Otto, who comp. c. 43; Dial. c. T. 12. 17. See commentators on Acts 15, 26. Add Theophil. ad Autol. 2, 17.

12. ὥστε . . . εἶναι: See c. 22, 11.

13. παρὰ τῷ θεῷ: C. 8, 8.

14. μίλειν τούτων τῷ θεῷ: The gen. depends on the substantive notion in μίλειν. The most simple way of disposing of all impersonal verbs is to consider the subject as involved in the verb.—τούτων=τῶν ἀνθρώπων. Otto comp. Dial. c. T. 1. Others consider τ. neuter.—μὴ εἶναι: Μὴ as often in classic prose after ὑμολογεῖν, which involves *will* as well as *thought*. See c. 6, 8.—διὰ τέχνης: Supposed to be equivalent to 'evasively,' 'indirectly' (Trollope), as opposed to ἐκ προοῦλου.

15. ἢ ὄντα: 'Or, if he exists.'

16. δόξη: C. 3, 1.

18. ἤπειρ: Attracted from ὕπειρ. See also c. 12, 88.

#### 29. THE BOUNDED CONTINENCE OF CHRISTIANS.

1. μὴ τῶν ἐκτεθέντων: A return to the construction of c. 27, 'We have been taught not to expose children, lest.'—μὴ ἀναληφθεῖς=ἰάν μὴ ἀναληφθῇ.

2. τὴν ἀρχήν: See c. 10, 8.

8. οὐκ ἐγασόμεν . . . ἐν ἐκρατενόμεθα: The imperfect where we should expect the present.—εἰ μὴ: *Nisi*, 'except.' Comp. c. 16, 25.—ἐπὶ παῖδων ἀνατροφῇ: 'Επὶ w. dat. of the basis of an action. Comp. the marriage formula among the Athenians, ἐπὶ γνησίῳ παίδων ἀρότῳ, and for the Christian conception of wedlock, Athenag. Suppl. 33, 161; Clem. Alex. Paed. 2, 10. Minuc. Felix says (Octav. 31): *cupiūitate procreandi aut unam scimus aut nullam*.

4. παραιτούμενοι: Favorite verb of the period.—τὸ γήμασθαι: Regularly of the woman. The aor. on account of the negative notion. Comp. c. 4, 10. The article gives a half-contemptuous tone: 'This thing of getting married.' Comp. c. 11, 10.—ἐν ἐκρατενόμεθα: So Otto (8) for ἐν ἐγκρατενόμεθα (MSS.).

6. ἢ ἀνέδην μίτις: C. 26, 34.—βιβλίδιον: 'Paper,' 'memorial.'



7. ἀνέδωκεν: Notice the especial use of this compound of petitions, c. 67, 32; Plut. Mor. 1, 909 C.—Φήλικι: The MSS. have Φίληκι, and below Φίληκος. See note on c. 4, 4.

8. τοὺς διδύμους=τοὺς ὄρχεις, as in Clem. Alex. Protrept. 2, 15.—ἀνευ . . . τῆς τοῦ ἡγεμόνος ἐπιτροπῆς: The prohibition of this procedure goes back to Nerva.

10. μηδὲως=μηδ' ὅλως. Often written at this stage as one word.

11. ἰφ' ἑαυτοῦ μέινας: 'By himself,' 'to himself,' 'unmarried.' So Clem. Alex. Strom. 3, 12, 82: εὗξαν αὐτῷ οὐράνιον περιποιεῖ μείνας ἰφ' ἑαυτοῦ and Constt. Apostt. 3, 1: ἰφ' ἑαυτῆς μέιναι (of a widow).

12. Οὐκ . . . ὑπῆρχεν: Cited by Euseb. H. E. 4, 8.

13. ἡγησάμεθα: In epistolary style = ἡγοῦμεθα, which Euseb. has l. c. See A 2, 14.—'Αντινόου: Antinous, the notorious favorite of Hadrian, drowned in the Nile. Divine honors were paid to his memory by his master, and, indeed, A. has a chapter to himself in the history of plastic art. There is no end of marble portraits of him, as a man, as a hero, as a god. The plainness of Justin is an instructive contrast to the caution of Lucian, who does not mention the subject, although there may be some oblique reference to it in his ridicule of Alexander's extravagances about Hephæstion (Cal. non temere credendum, 17). Much more courtly and reserved is Athenag. Suppl. 30, 150; there is a scornful mention of A. in Tatian, Or. ad Gr. 10; Clem. Alex. Protrept. 4, 49. Theophil. (3.8) says: σιγῶ τὰ 'Αντινόου τεμίνην. Celsus (ap. Orig. 3, 36), on the other hand, couples A. with Christ.—τοῦ νῦν γεγενημένου: Nῦν is very elastic. See Ep. ad D. 1, 10.

14. διὰ φόβον: So I read with Euseb. for διὰ φόβου, 'in fear.' See c. 23, 11. So also Otto *now*.

15. τίς=ὅστις as πᾶθεν=ὅπόθεν. See c. 15, 46.—πόθεν ὑπῆρχεν: Here ὑπάρχειν is not simply=εἶναι. See c. 2, 10. 'Υ. is often used of source. This is one of the passages cited to show the low origin of Antinous.

### 30. BUT WAS NOT CHRIST A MAGICIAN?

'Here he performs his promise (c. 23) to prove that the Son of God was made man' (Maran).

1. Ὅπως δὲ μή τις εἴπῃ ἀντιθεῖς: The MSS. have ἀντιτιθεῖς. I insert with Otto εἴπῃ (comp. B 4, 1; 9, 1), but prefer ἀντιθεῖς (coincident action). See note on c. 17, 17.

2. ἀνθρώπον ἐξ ἀνθρώπων: 'A mere man.' Comp. c. 21, 13.

3. μαγικῇ τέχνῃ: This charge is familiar and found in the Talmud. See Origen's refutation, c. Cels. 1, 38, also Arnob. 1, 48: *Magus fuit, clandestinis artibus omnia illa perfecit.* — δυνάμεις: C. 26, 7.

5. ποιησόμεθα: C. 1, 9.

6. πρὶν ἤ: C. 4, 13.

7. εἴπει . . . ὁρᾶν: Comp. c. 32, 18. So Plut. Vit. Cic. 2. — γινόμενα καὶ γινόμενα: C. 19, 9.

8. μεγίστη . . . ἀπόδειξις: So Orig. c. Cels. 8, 48: *αἱ προφηταὶ τοῖς μὴ παρέργως ἐντυγχάνουσι τῇ ἐν αὐταῖς προγνώσει ἱκαναὶ μοι εἶναι δοκοῦσι πρὸς τὸ πείσαι τὸν συνετῶς ἕμα καὶ εὐγνωμόνως ἀναγινώσκοντα ὅτι Θεοῦ πνεῦμα ἦν ἐν τοῖς ἀνθρώποις ἐκείνοις.*

### 31. OF THE HEBREW PROPHETS.

Aubé considers this whole section of the Apology as more or less irrelevant. 'Autre chose est l'apologie, autre chose est la propagande.' 'La question de l'origine divine du Christianisme n'était pas en jeu, et Saint Justin pouvait dire du dogme Chrétien en général ce qu'il disait du dogme de la résurrection des corps' (c. 8, 17). See Aubé, Saint Justin. p. 58. But Justin would not have been Justin if he had not been instant out of season as well as in season.

1. ἐν Ἰουδαίῳ: 'Among the Jews.' But the Greeks prefer to designate the country by the inhabitants; hence also 'in Judaea,' as *εἰς Πέρσας*, 'to Persia.'

3. πρὶν ἤ: C. 4, 13.

4. κατὰ καιροῖς: 'In due succession of times,' 'from time to time.'

7. κτώμενοι: 'Procuring.' — *περιείπων*: Seldom of things, as here. But these are 'lively oracles.' — *Πτολεμαῖος ὁ Αἰγυπτίων βασιλεὺς*: The Greek says 'King of the Egyptians,' not 'King of Egypt,' a trace of his republicanism. Comp. the old *iure divino* 'Roi de France,' and the constitutional 'Roi des Français, des Belges.' The king was Ptolemy Philadelphus.

11. Ἑρώδη: The anachronism is so wild that some of Justin's editors have tried to lay the blame on the unfortunate scribe, and various emendations have been proposed to relieve Justin of this blunder. Eleazar was the high-priest to whom Ptolemy applied.

14. Ἐπειδὴ . . . οὐκ ἦν: Ἐπειδὴ is used with the imperfect when the clause overlaps. 'After (he found that) what was written in them was not intelligible.' So *postquam* with imperf. in Latin.

16. τοὺς μεταβαλοῦντας: The article with fut. part. denotes adaptation=*qui* w. subj., E. ad D. 2, 12. The translators were the famous LXX of the Septuagint version, for which see Bible Dictionaries.

17. ἀποσταλαί: C. 12, 34.

19. καὶ ἀναγινώσκοντας: 'Although they read.' Γινώσκω the prevalent form since Aristotle.

20. ἐχθροὺς . . . καὶ πολεμίους: Ἐχθρός of the *animus*, whether the enemy be public or private, πολέμιος of the armed foe. They are often combined as here, and in Plutarch, Malign. Herod. 85. Of the hostility of the Jews to the Christians, Justin has much to say in the Dial. c. T. 10. 95. 110. 133. See also below, c. 86, 15 and Ep. ad Diogn. 5, 27.

21. κολάζοντες: C. 8, 4. — ὅπότεν δύνωνται: In prose, ἄν with subj. is the rule for all temporal conjunctions, when they deal with the future or with the generic present. The relation of the two clauses is much more accurately expressed by the subjunctive than it could be by the indicative.

22. καὶ γὰρ . . . ἀπάγεσθαι: Cited by Euseb. H. E. 4, 8. Bar-Cochba was rampant against the Christians because they refused to fight against the Romans.—ἐν τῷ νῦν: See c. 29, 19.

23. Βαρχωχέβας: See Dial. c. T. 1. In this war (132-135), the only war that disturbed the peace of Hadrian's reign, we have a repetition of the familiar image of the *Bellum Judaicum* of Josephus, fanatical rage on the one side, relentless cruelty on the other. The occasion was given by the prohibition of circumcision, the establishment of a Roman colony under the name of Aelia Capitolina on the ruins of Jerusalem, and the erection of a temple to Capitoline Jupiter on the site of Solomon's temple.

Another account of the  
 Lamerie Offhand Summary (Sept. 27)  
 LA 1884 - No. 2101 THE FIRST APOLOGY. C. 31. 163

The cause may be sought in the oppressiveness of the Roman yoke and the cherished hope of Messiah. The expected Messiah appeared in the person of Bar-Cochba (Son of a Star), and the enthusiasm of the multitude was kept up by his fiery eloquence and his fanatic courage. At first the Romans suffered repeatedly and heavily. But under the conduct of Severus, Hadrian's best officer, who managed the war with the prudence of Vespasian before him, the Jews were shut up in Bethyr, and after a long siege overpowered. Again we encounter the enormous numbers of the first war; 580,000 are said to have fallen by the sword; the number of those who perished by famine, pestilence, and fire is incalculable. The Roman loss was so serious that in Hadrian's despatch to the Senate the usual formula, *Ego exercitusque valemus*, was omitted. The Jews were forbidden to set foot in the new colony, to which prohibition Tertullian alludes when he says (Apol. 21, p. 63 D. S.): *quibus nec adnatarum jure terram patriam saltem vestigio salutare conceditur*. The Christians, however, whom the Jews had treated with as much enmity as they had treated the Romans, were admitted. (After Peter, Gesch. Roms, 3, 2, 181-3.)

25. εἰ μὴ ἀποκρίνω: Εἰ w. opt. after a past tense representing *ἰάν* with subj. after a principal tense. Observe that in Greek oratio obliqua follows the forms of o. recta far more closely than in Latin. Hence, if we have *άν* in o. r., it reappears in o. o. The reason why *άν* does not reappear when *ἰάν*, *ὄραν*, and the like, with the subj., are transferred, is to be traced to the fact that the simple subj. (without *άν*) is the original form.

26. ἀπάγεισθαι: Sc. *την ἐπὶ θανάτῳ*, a standing expression, as in Lat. *ducere*.

27. προκηρυσσόμενον: C. 3, 3. — παραγινόμενον: This and the other participles depend on *προσηρ*. as a verb of showing. Comp. c. 33, 1.

28. διὰ παρθένου: C. 22, 15.

32. οὐρανοῦς: C. 10, 32.

33. εἰς τῶν γένος ἀνθρώπων: Εἰς is not used with persons literally except with the plural, or as here with collectives. Comp. c. 1, 5.

35. ἰθὺν: In the technical sense of 'heathen.'—μᾶλλον: Than the Jews.—πιστεύειν: Change of construction.

New Account of the...  
 Roman (C. 10, 32) - ...  
 ...  
 ... 2021 ...

86. πρὶν ἤ: C. 4, 13.—ἔτεσι: Dative (locative) as measure of difference.—πεντακισχίλοις: It is idle to attempt the distribution of the figures among the prophets. In this place Adam is supposed by some to be meant, by others, Enoch. In c. 42, 8 Justin puts David 1500 B.C.

88. τὰς διαδοχὰς τῶν γενῶν: 'Successive generations.' On the plural, see c. 12, 30.

### 32. CHRIST FORETOLD OF MOSES.

1. Μωϋσῆς: The Coptic form (Otto).—πρῶτος: In time.

2. αὐτολεξεί: A late word = αὐταῖς λέξιεν. —Οὐκ . . . αὐτοῦ: Gen. 49, 10, 11.

3. ἕως ἂν ἴδῃ: "Εως regularly (but not invariably) with aor. in the sense of 'until.'

4. ὃ ἀπόκειται = οὗτος ὃ δ.: For δ. comp. c. 18, 5. —ἀπόκειται: Sc. τὸ ἀρχεῖν, ἢ βασιλεία.

5. τὸν πῶλον αὐτοῦ: The LXX and the N. T. neglect the reflexive of the third person in the possessive (genitive) case. In Hebrew the possession is indicated by a suffix; hence the tendency. The best MSS. have only αὐτοῦ.

6. Ὑμέτερον: C. 3, 16.

8. ἴδιος αὐτῶν: Here αὐτῶν = ipsorum. So Plato, De Rep. 9, 580 E: ὀνόματι ἰδίῳ αὐτοῦ.

11. μὴ ἐκλείψειν: See c. 4, 18.

12. τὸ βασιλεῖον = ἡ βασιλεία. Late use (Otto).

25. Πῶλος γὰρ τις ὄνου: Matt. 21, 2; Mark 11, 2; Luke 19, 30; John 12, 14.

26. πρὸς ἔμπελον: Nothing of the sort in our Gospels nor in Justin's citation, Dial. c. T. 53. —ἀγαγεῖν αὐτῷ: 'Him,' rather than 'to him,' which would be πρὸς with acc.

27. ἀχθόντος: Might depend on ἐπιβάς, but it is more natural to conceive it as a gen. abs.

28. εἰσελήλυθεν: We should expect εἰσῆλθεν. —ἔθα: C. 19, 21.

29. ἱερὸν: C. 9, 2.

30. τὸ λαῖπον: Intransitive use, which is found in Plato, and often in later writers, e. g. Luke 18, 22; Tit. 1, 5; 3, 13; Orig. c. Cels. 7, 11. See c. 52, 7.

82. οὐ πάσχειν ἡμελλε: Οὐ the familiar attraction for εἰ. On ἡμελλε, see c. 19, 31.

83. Ἡ . . . στολή οἱ πιστεύοντες . . . εἰσὶν: Agreement with the predicate.

36. σπέρμα: See Introd. xxxix. The word in its entirety (πᾶς λόγος) is in the believers (τοῖς πιστεύουσιν). Other men have only a seed or germ (σπέρμα, μέρος). Comp. B 8, 10.

39. Ἡ δὲ πρώτη δύναμις . . . ὁ λόγος ἐστίν: Article in predicate and subject, a convertible proposition.

40. τίνα=ὄντινα: Simple for compound, as often. See c. 15, 40.

41. ἐν τοῖς ἐξῆς: 'In what follows in order.' So *ἐνί*=*καὶ τὰ ἐξῆς*, *et quae sequuntur*.

42. Ὅν τρόπον: C. 4, 22. Refers to *ἐκ θείας ἐνέργειας*. Justin is parenthetical to a degree.

43. οὐκ ἐξ ἀνθρωπίου σπέρματος: The neg. οὐκ on account of the contrast. Comp. c. 14, 16.

45. Καὶ . . . δι: δι is the connective, καὶ belongs to the following word. The combination is exceptionally frequent in Justin.

47. Ἀνατελεῖ . . . ἰλπιούσιν: Num. 24, 17; Isa. 11, 1. 10 (mixed).

50. Διὰ γὰρ παρθένου: C. 22, 15.

53. τὰ λόγια: 'Oracle.' Justin uses λόγια of Our Saviour's utterances, Dial. c. T. 18. Comp. Papias's work: *Λογίων κυριακῶν ἐξηγήσεις*, ap. Euseb. H. E. 3, 39, 1 (p. 102 D. S.).

54. κατὰ γένους διαδοχὴν: C. 31, 38.

### 33. MANNER OF CHRIST'S BIRTH FORETOLD.

1. αὐτολεξεί: C. 32, 2.—διὰ παρθένου: C. 22, 15.—*τεχνησόμενος*: The participle is sometimes used after verbs of saying, considered as verbs of showing. See below, cc. 35, 26; 51, 35.

8. Ἴδου . . . θεός: (Isa. 7, 14), Matt. 1, 23.—*ἡ παρθένος*: The article is a Hebraism.—*ἐν γαστρὶ ἔξει*: LXX and N. T.

6. παρὰ τοῖς ἀνθρώποις: C. 8, 8.

7. μέλλειν γίνεσθαι: C. 19, 31.

8. Ἦν ὅταν: Otto *nou* ἴνα. There is no end of hiatus in later Greek.—ὅταν γένηται: C. 31, 21.—*μὴ ἀπιστηθῇ*: In classic Greek the retention of the primary or principal tenses after the second-

ary or historical is not uncommon, and is technically called *repraesentatio*, or the assumption of the point of view of the speaker. In Hellenistic writers there is no necessity for this fine distinction; in fact, no ground for it. The optative dies out more and more. In modern Greek it is dead.

9. Ὅπως δὲ μὴ τινες, μὴ νοήσαντες: So Thirlby for ὅπως εἰ τινες.

11. εἰποῦσιν . . . ἐληλυθέναι ἐπὶ γυναῖκας: On the inf., see c. 12, 33; on the phrase, c. 25, 9.

12. πειρασόμεθα: So Otto for πειρασώμεθα. The fut. in accordance with Justin's usage.

14. Εἰ . . . ἐσυνουσιάσθῃ . . . οὐκ ἐστὶ ἡν παρθένος: We should expect ἂν ἦν, but the condition may be considered logical. If not, ἦν=εἰμελλεν ἰσσεῖσθαι=ἦν ἂν.

17. πεποίηκε: Perf. unnatural in English. The Greek perfect can be used even when the further end is dated. See B 2, 27. —ἀποσταλείς: C. 12, 34.

18. κατ' ἐκεῖνο τοῦ καιροῦ: C. 17, 3.

19. εὐηγγελίσαστο αὐτήν: The accus. is a late construction (N.T.). The LXX have the dative of the person, e.g., Isa. 61, 1; Jer. 20, 15. —εἰπὼν: Coincident action. —Ἰδοὺ . . . αὐτῶν: Luke 1, 31, 35; Matt. 1, 21.

21. καλίσσεις: Open form only here and there in Attic. Hellenistic writers tend to mechanical uniformity.—αὐτὸς γὰρ σώσει: Αὐτός where the Greek would more naturally use οὗτος. See c. 50, 8.

22. τὸν λαὸν αὐτοῦ: C. 32, 5. Λαός is little used in classical prose. —οἱ ἀπομνημονεύσαντες: Comp. Luke 1, 1 and see c. 66, 13.

23. τὰ περὶ τοῦ σωτήρος: The gen. on account of ἀπομνημ. Otherwise the accus.

26. γενησόμενον: See above.

28. ὡς Μωϋσῆς: The reference is to c. 32, 11. The kingdom is reserved for the first-born (Otto).

31. Τὸ δὲ Ἰησοῦς: Comp. B 6, 13.

35. Ὅτι . . . φήσετε: Φημί is seldom used with ὅτι in the best period; at every turn in later Greek.

36. ἐεοφορῶνται: A late word.—εἰ μὴ: C. 10, 22.

37. ἐπολαμβάνω: C. 11, 2.

117. 1, 24  
of 1-10-1000  
the 1000th day  
of 1-10-1000

## 34. PLACE OF CHRIST'S BIRTH FORETOLD.

3. Καὶ σὺ . . . τὸν λαόν μου: (Micah 5, 2), Matt. 2, 6.

5. ἐξελεύσεται=ἔξεισι.

9. Κυρηνίου: Κυρήνιος is the Hellenized form of Quirin(i)us. For the endless controversies on the subject, see Bible Dictionaries or references in Farrar's Life of Christ, 1, 7.

## 35. OTHER PROPHECIES THAT HAVE COME TO PASS.

2. ἄχρις ἀνδρωθῆ: As there is no reference in the prophecies to Christ's being hidden until he reached man's estate, but all of them bear on his crucifixion, Grabe suspects a *lacuna*. Maran wishes to include man's estate, which the aor. will not suffer. Perhaps the situation may be relieved by reading ἄχρις ἀν σταυρωθῆ — not so violent an emendation as it might seem. The compendia for στρ (=σταυρ) and ἔρ might easily be mistaken for each other. But comp. Dial. c. T. 103. As to ἄχρις ἀνδρωθῆ it may be noted that ἀν is often omitted even in prose with temporal particles of limit ('until'). On the subj. for opt., see c. 33. 8.—ἐπερ καὶ γέγονεν: Kai 'actually.'

3. εἰς τοῦτο: 'With reference to this.'

4. Παιδίον . . . ὤμων: Isa. 9, 6.

7. προϊόντος τοῦ λόγου: C. 22, 13.

9. Ἐγὼ . . . οὐ καλῇ: Isa. 63, 2.

11. Αἰτοῦσί με . . . κρίσιν: Isa. 58, 2, cited as if in the same passage. Double accusative (inner and outer object).

13. Αὐτοὶ . . . ἱματισμόν μου: Psa. 21, 16, 18.

18. φασκόντων μὴ εἶναι: C. 4, 18.

19. διασύροντες αὐτόν: Δ. has a familiar tone, used in the orators and often in late writers. See the clever tract of the Christian Lucian, Hermias: Διασυρμὸς τῶν ἑξω φιλοσόφων. We do not gain much by Clem. Alex. Paed. 1, 9, 81: διάσυρσις ἵστι ψόγος διασυρτικός.

20. Κρίνεν ἡμῖν: Not in our canonical Gospels. The reference is to Isa. l. c.: αἰτοῦσί με νῦν κρίσιν.

21. ἐξήγησις . . . σταυρώσαντες . . . αὐτόν: Comp. John 20, 25; Matt. 27, 35.

25. ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου . . . ἔκτων: On ἐπὶ, see c. 13, 15. On the (spurious) Acts of Pilate, see Euseb. H. E. 1, 9, 3.



26. Καὶ ὅτι = Καὶ ἵνα μάθῃτε ὅτι. — κατεσθήςμενος: Add to Veitch, who cites only Aeschin. 3, 167. On the participle, see c. 33, 1. So Dial. c. T. 49.

27. εἰσελευσόμενος = εἰσὶν. — προεφήτευστο: The MSS. have προεφήτευστο.

28. Σοφονίου: Zephaniah. A lapse on the part of Justin.

29. Χαῖρε . . . ὑποζυγίου: Zechar. 9, 9; Matt. 21, 5.

32. υἱόν: Not of animals in classic Greek.

### 36. PROPHETS REPRESENT DIFFERENT PERSONS.

1. ὡς ἀπὸ προσώπου: Seems to be a later phrase. See Dial. c. T. 25, 37, 42; Orig. c. Cels. 3, 1: *ἐκ προσώπου*, Constt. Apostt. 5, 20.

2. μὴ . . . νομίσητε: C. 15, 48.

10. ἰσθὶν ἔστιν: ἔστιν so called for ἔξεισιν. c. 12, 40.

11. μὴ νοήσαντες: C. 5, 9.

13. οὐδέ: So Thirlby for οὔτε.

15. ἐσταυρώσθαι: Inf. after verb of showing. See c. 5, 10.—*μισοῦσιν*: C. 81, 15.

### 37. THE FATHER SPEAKS.

3. οἷδε οἱ λόγοι: The pronoun as regularly in classic Greek. See note on c. 47, 4.—Ἐγὼ . . . κύριον: Isa. 1, 3, 4.

8. ὅταν λέγῃ: As the present is not generic, ὅτε λέγει would be correct, but the habit of using *άν* and the subj. with the temporal conjunctions is too strong for the Hellenist. So *ιάν* w. subj. is found where we should expect *εἰ* w. indicative.—ἀπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς=ἀπὸ τοῦ προσώπου τοῦ πατρὸς. In his last ed. Otto inserts τοῦ προσώπου whenever ἀπό is thus used.

9. Ποῖόν μοι . . . τῶν ποδῶν μοι: Isa. 66, 1.

11. Τὰς νοσηνίας . . . χειρῶν ὑμῶν . . . Ἀλλὰ . . . σου: Isa. 1, 11-15; 58, 6, 7.

13. ἐφθῆναι=φανῆναι: Hence the construction. Comp. c. 27, 18 and c. 50, 14.

### 38. CHRIST SPEAKS.

2. φθέγγεται: φθίγγεσθαι and φωνεῖν are both 'utter,' but φθίγγεσθαι 'to reach the ear,' φωνεῖν 'to reach the mind.' See commentators on Od. 10, 229.—Ἐγὼ . . . καλῇ: Isa. 65, 2.

cf. Phil. Nic. 1, 3: ὅταν λέγῃ = ὅτε λέγει.

φθέγγεται

5. Τὸν . . . δικαιοῦσας με: Isa. 50, 6-8.

8. ἐνετρέπην: A favorite word in the LXX.

9. οὐ μὴ αἰσχυνθῶ: This emphatic form of the negative (οὐ μὴ) is far more common in the LXX and in the N. T. than it is in classic Greek. The tendency to exaggeration in the use of an adopted language is natural. For Hebrew analogies, see Ewald, *Lehrbuch*, S. 320, a. The *fact* is that οὐ μὴ with the aor. subj. (very seldom with any other tense) is used as a strong negation of the future. The common *explanation* is, that a verb or phrase of fear or apprehension is to be supplied. If this be true, the consciousness of it must have been utterly lost, as the expression is often used where the notion of fear or apprehension would be unnatural to the last degree. The practical limitation to the aorist seems to indicate that the expression was originally imperative, (comp. the use of עֲשֵׂה in Hebrew), οὐ being a free negative. 'Nay, let me not be ashamed.' Afterwards the imperative notion became fainter. It might seem easier to make οὐ belong to αἰσχυνθῶ, thus combining objective and subjective negatives, but it must be remembered that οὐ with the subjunctive had died out (except in μὴ οὐ) before this construction came in.

10. ὅταν λέγῃ=ὅτε λέγει: Comp. Athenag. Suppl. 21, 90: ὅταν . . . ὁκύρηται, Clem. Alex. Paed. 1, 5, 15: ὅταν φῇ (bis). 1, 7, 56: ὅταν λέγῃ.

11. αὐτοὶ . . . χεῖρας. Ἐγὼ . . . μου: Ps. 21, 10, 18; 3, 5. On αὐτοί, see c. 33, 21.

14. Ἐλάλησαν . . . ἑαυτόν: Ps. 21, 7 sq. λαλεῖν in classic Greek a familiar word, used seriously in later times.—ἐν χειρῶσιν: When the instrument is regarded as the seat of the power as well, ἐν may be used in classic Gr., but the very large use of it in the LXX is due to the attraction of the Hebrew.

15. Ἄτινα: The compound is used here with no special force. Notice 'which' in English, *lequel* in Fr., *ὅστις* in mod. Gr.

16. Σταυρωθέντος . . . ἑαυτόν: Matt. 27, 30-43.—ὥς: Is due to Hagen. Otto now reads Ἄτινα . . . ὅτι, suggested by Thirlby's Ἄ . . . ὅτι.

### 39. THE SPIRIT ITSELF SPEAKS.

1. λαλῇ: C. 38, 14.

2. Ἐκ γὰρ Σιών . . . πολεμεῖν: Isa. 2, 3, 4.

3. ἐξελεύσεται=ἔξεισι.

4. λαόν: C. 33, 22.

6. οὐ μὴ λήψονται=οὐ μὴ λάβωσι. Οὐ μὴ w. fut. ind. is most frequently used in the second person as a strong imperative. Here it is employed as a strong prediction. The combination is commonly explained as an interrogative, and οὐ is made to negative the μὴ. This theory of Elmsley's would require οὐ — οὐ, as in Xen. Hell. 5, 2, 23. A more simple explanation regards οὐ and μὴ as both belonging to the future (Goodwin). But satisfactory examples of the fut. ind. with μὴ in an imperative sense are rare. Perhaps it may be best to consider οὐ as 'Nay!' (see note on c. 38, 9), and μὴ as an interrogative expecting a negative answer.

7. μάθωσιν . . . ποιῶμεν: When verbs of perception become verbs of creation (verbs of will and power), they take the inf. Tr. 'to,' 'how to.' So εἰδᾶσκειν w. inf. c. 50, 34.

8. οὐ . . . πεισθῆναι: C. 8, 8.

9. δεκάδύο=δέκα: LXX, N. T. Harnack (Ep. Barnab. 9, 3) explains the absence of Paul on the ground of the typical character of the number 12. Hardly necessary.

10. καὶ οὗτοι: *Lique*, 'and that.' — ἰδιῶται: 'Unprofessional men,' explained by λαλεῖν μὴ ἐννάμενοι, 'no rhetoricians.' On μὴ see c. 5, 4. Otto cites Orig. c. Cels. 8, 47: οὐ πιθάνον οὔτε τοὺς Ἰησοῦ ἀποστόλους, ἀνδρας ἀγραμμάτους καὶ ἰδιώτας, ἄλλω τινὶ τεταρρηκεῖναι πρὸς τὸ καταγγεῖλαι τοῖς ἀνθρώποις τὸν Χριστιανισμόν ἢ τῇ δοθείσῃ αὐτοῖς ἐννάμει.

12. διδάξαι: Free use of infinitive=εἰσάγοντες, c. 15, 24.

13. ἀλληλοφόνται: See c. 14, 15. A Justinian word.—πολεμοῦμεν τοὺς ἐχθρούς: The acc. construction is chiefly later.

14. ψεύδεσθαι: C. 8, 3.

15. ἡδέως: With ἀποζηήσκομεν.

16. Δυνατὸν . . . ἦν: C. 12, 40.

17. Ἡ γλῶσσ' . . . ἀνώμοτος: Eur. Hippol. 607. The editions have *ὁμώμοχ', ἢ*. Cicero's version (Off. 3, 29, 108) runs: *Iurati lingua, mentem iniuratum gero*. One of the most notorious and best-abused verses in Greek scenic poetry. Comp. Ar. Ran. 102 al.

18. Γελοῖον ἦν δὴ: Ἡ: ἐή, which some editors read for ἡἐ, is ungrammatical. The subj. can not be used to assert. Ἡν, 'it were,' as above. So also Otto. at last.

19. συντιθεμένους καὶ καταλεγόμενους: 'Who take the military oath (*sacramentum*) and are enrolled.' The editors quote Tertull. De Coron. 11: *Credimusne humanum sacramentum divino superduci licere et in alium dominum respondere post Christum et eierare patrem ac matrem et omnem proximum, quos et lex honorari et post deum diligere praecepit?* Suet. Calig. 15: *De sororibus auctor fuit ut omnibus sacramentis adiceretur: Neque me liberosque meos cariores habebō quam Gaium et sorores.*

21. μηδὲν εἰσάγων: 'Although.' Μηδὲν is normal, because it is in an infinitive sentence.

23. ἐρώντας: 'Enamored.' Comp. c. 1, 4.

4/

## 40. ADVENT OF CHRIST FORETOLD.

1. περὶ τῶν κηρυζάντων: Paul had set the example of taking these words in a mystic sense, as Grabe observes. Comp. Rom. 10, 18.

5. Ἡμέρα . . . ὁδόν: Ps. 10, 2 foll.

10. ἀγαλλιάσεται: A favorite word in the LXX (=גָּלָה), not used in classic Greek. See the definition of ἀγαλλίασις in Clem. Alex. Strom. 6, 12, 99.

11. γίγας: Christ. See c. 54, 41 and D. c. T. 69. Comp. Ambrose: *Procedit e thalamo suo, | pudoris aula regia, geminae gigas substantiae, | alacris ut currat tiam*, and Latin Hymns, p. 227, note.—ὡς γίγας: Otto reads against the MSS., ἰσχυρὸς ὡς γ., and comp. c. 54, 41.

13. ἔχον . . . λαλοῦσμεθα: The inf. ἔχειν is not necessary. See c. 8, 1.—ἔχον . . . οἰκείως: 'Appropriate.' Ἐχειν w. adverb originally of condition, afterwards of character also.

18. συνάλευσιν: On this group, see cc. 26, 1; 43, 16.

19. ἐκ παντὸς γένους: See c. 1, 5.

21. οἱ δαίμονες: Supposed to be indicated in οἱ ἀρχοντες below.

22. ὅσον: C. 4, 8.—ἐπ' αὐτοῖς: C. 8, 1.

24. μετάνοιαν: C. 28, 9.—πρὶν ἔλθειν: C. 4, 13.

25. Εἰρηνηται: Sc. οἱ λόγοι.—οὕτως: See note on οἶδε, c. 47, 4.—Μακάριος . . . αὐτόν: Ps. 1 and 2.

28. ἀλλ' ἢ: The restrictive ἀλλ' ἢ (which is used everywhere in prose) occurs after negative clauses or equivalents. Madvig

and others write ἀλλ' ἢ=ἄλλο ἦ. This may have been the origin of the turn, but the consciousness of it is lost, as is shown by Plato, Phaedo, 81 B: *μηδὲν ἄλλο ἀλλ' ἦ*. Add l. c. 83 A; Apol. 33 B; Dem. [25, 68]; and 37, 58. For later writers, see 2 Cor. 1, 13; Theoph. ad Autolyc. 2, 18, 24; Clem. Alex. Strom. 1, 19, 96. 'Ἀλλ' ἦ occurs frequently in the LXX; Winer says, 'hin und wieder.'

81. τὸν καρπὸν αὐτοῦ: C. 32. 22.

83. ὥσαι: The consciousness of condition is lost. 'As it were.'

87. Ἴνα τί: The ellipsis *γίνεται* is commonly supplied. As the consciousness of ellipsis faded out, *ἰνατί* was written as one word. Comp. *δηλονότι, μηδὲν ὅπως*, c. 29, 8. In the Vulgate we find *ἵνα τί* sometimes literally translated by *ut quid*, Ps. 10, 1; 84, 1. See Latin Hymns, p. 119: *Ut quid, homo, extolleris?*—ἐφύαξαν: The active is confined to the LXX.

88. καινά: 'Strange things.' The ordinary reading is *κενά*, but *καινά* occurs in eight MSS. of the LXX.

48. ἐκμυκτηρίζε: A drastic expression, which evidently belongs to popular speech. The simple *μυκτηρίζειν* is repeatedly used in the LXX. The compound *ἐκμ.* occurs also 2 K. 19, 21; Ps. 84, 19. Clem. Rom. Ep. ad Cor. 1, 39: *χλευάζουσιν ἡμᾶς καὶ μυκτηρίζουσι*.—*ἐν ὀργῇ . . . καὶ ἐν τῷ θυμῷ*: Greg. Naz. gives the familiar distinction: *Ἐν μὲν ἰσὺν ἀπρόσος ζήσις φρενός, | ὀργὴ δὲ θυμὸς ἐμμένων*. [Plato] Deff. 415 E: *Ἐν μὲν ὀρμῇ βίαιος ἀνευ λογισμοῦ, ὀργὴ παράκλησις τοῦ θυμικοῦ εἰς τὸ τιμωρεῖσθαι*.

47. πρός με: The only common combination of a monosyllabic preposition with the enclitic personal pronoun.

48. Αἰτῆσαι: See c. 15, 33.

50. ἐν ῥάβδῳ: 'En is a Hebraism. Comp. c. 88, 14.

51. βασιλεῖς: The sign of the vocative, ὦ, is not omitted in classical Greek prose except under especial pressure.—*παιδεύθης*: In this sense LXX, N. T., Patres. It is an intensification of the Greek *παιδεία* as defined in [Plat.] Deff. 416: *παιδεία εὐναμὴς θεραπευτικὴ ψυχῆς*.

#### 41. CRUCIFIXION FORETOLD.

4. Ἄισατε . . . ξύλον: 1 Chron. 16, 23. 25-31; Ps. 96, 1. 2. 4-10.  
8. αἶνος: C. 13, 5.

13. *μὴ σαλευθῆτω*: *Μή* with the aor. imper. of the third person is much more common than the phraseology of some grammars would lead one to suppose. Notice the mass of aorists.

14. *ὁ κύριος . . . ξύλου*: Justin charged the Jews with erasing this verse, Dial. c. T. 73. It does not appear either in the LXX or in the Hebrew. Comp. Ep. Barnab. 8: *ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ἐπὶ τῷ ξύλῳ*, and Fulgentius, in *Vexilla Regis* produnt (L. H. p. 66): *Regnabit a ligno Deus*.

#### 42. PAST TENSE FOR FUTURE.

1. *τὰ μάλλοντα γίνεσθαι*: C. 19, 31.

2. *ὡς ἤδη γινόμενα*: C. 4, 18.

3. *ἀπολογίαν*: 'That the circumstances may afford no excuse' for misinterpreting them (Trollope).

5. *προλέγει*: The LXX often use an aorist where we translate the Hebrew by a future. The Hebrew has no future, no preterite in the strict sense, only a *status actionis*, a tense of duration, a tense of attainment.

6. *ἐνατενίσσατε*: *Ἀτενίζω* is used only in late prose, and there very often. Notice the tendency to exaggeration.—*τῷ νοῦ*: Hellenistic for *νοῦ*.

7. *χιλίοις καὶ πεντακοσίοις*: Of course a mistake. It is unnecessary to try to save Justin. See note on c. 31, 11. On the dative, see c. 27, 18.

8. *πρὶν ἤ*: C. 4, 18.

9. *καί=καίτοι*: Which Ashton desiderates.

11. *καθ' ἡμᾶς*: 'Our.'

13. *ἐπὶ τοῖς . . . κηρυχθεῖσιν*: Familiar use of *ἐπὶ* w. dat. as the 'ground of emotion.'

#### 43. DOCTRINE OF HUMAN RESPONSIBILITY.

1. *προλελεγμένων*: More commonly, *προειρημένων*.

2. *καθ' εἰμαρμένης ἀνάγκην*: 'Ἡ εἰμαρμένη commonly without a substantive; *μοῖρα* is usually supplied by the grammarians, *ἡμείρα* would also be natural. At any rate, the ellipsis with the feminine gender is often vague. Tatian (c. 8) is very severe on the *εἰμαρμένη*, for which see Diog. Laert. 7, 149.

8. *ἐκ τοῦ προειπεῖν προεγνωσμένα*: 'Because of the prediction

of things foreknown.' Observe that *προεγνωσμένα* means both 'foreknown' and 'foreordained.'

4. *διαλύομεν*: Rhetorical and lively use of the present for the future, perhaps too rhetorical and lively for Justin, who regularly uses the fut., which Otto has restored in his last ed. Comp. cc. 23, 16; 30, 5; 42, 4; 52, 16; 53, 22; 54, 16; 61, 2. For the word, see B 5, 4: *καὶ τοῦτο διαλύσω*, Athenag. Suppl. 11, 47: *τῶν τοῦς συλλογισμοὺς ἀναλύνοντων καὶ τὰς ἀμφιβολίας διαλύνοντων*. — *τὰς τιμωρίας καὶ τὰς κολάσεις*: See c. 3, 4.

6. *ἐκάστου*: Thirlby's *ἐκάστῳ* would be more elegant. Notice the position, c. 44, 35: *κατ' ἀξίαν τῶν πράξεων ἑκάστον ἀμείψασθαι κτλ.*—*ἀποδίδοσθαι . . . μαθόντες*—*ὅτι ἀποδίδονται μ.*

7. *καὶ ἀληθὲς ἀποφαινόμεθα*: 'Having learned, we also maintain that it is true.'

8. *οὕτω δὲ ἡμῖν ἔστιν ὅλως*: I have restored the normal *οὕτω* for the MSS. *οὔτε*. A solitary *οὔτε* can be due only to anacoluthon (want of sequence), which were unnatural here. On *ἡμῖν*, see c. 8, 1; explained by *προαίρεσις ἰλευθίρα* below. With *ὅλως* comp. *μηδ' ὅλως*, A 29, 10.

9. *τόνδε τινὰ . . . καὶ τόνδε*: Instead of *τὸν μὲν . . . τὸν δὲ*: *τινὰ* serves to generalize. So Origen c. Cels. 1, 25: *τάδε τινὰ ἢ τάδε*; 2, 18: *τόνδε μὲν . . . τόνδε δὲ*; 6, 53: *τάδε μὲν . . . τάδε δὲ*. Comp. also B 7, 30.

10. *οὗτ' ἐκεῖνος*: So for the MS. *οὗτ'*, as above.

11. *προαίρεσις*: *Προαίρεσις* is the antithesis of *ἀνάγκη*, Isocr. 1, 10.

14. *κατορθοὶ καὶ σφάλλεται*: Familiar opposites. Comp. Thuc. 2, 60: *πόλιν ὀρζουμένην . . . σφαλλομένην*. — *τὴν μετέλευσιν ποιούμενον*: The traditional transl., *in contraria transire*, is incorrect. 'Going after,' 'pursuing.' See c. 1, 9. M. not in Passow; falsely transl. in Sophocles's Lex., 'persecution.' The group is late. See c. 26, 1.

16. *ἢ φαῦλον ἢ σπουδαῖον*: C. 2, 4.

18. *οἷδ'* *οἱ μὲν ἦσαν*: 'An may be supplied from the foregoing clause, or it may have dropped out after *ἦσαν*, a common accident.

19. *φαῦλον*: Otto now reads *ἀγαθὸν καὶ φαῦλον*, which seems to be required by the context.

20. πρᾶττουσαν ἂν ἀποφαινόμεθα: The MSS. have ἀποφαινόμεθα. I have restored, with Sylburg, the optative to match δόξει below, and inserted ἂν. See note on l. 18. The unreal conditional sometimes runs into the ideal, c. 19, 2.—τὸ προεξημένον: C. 28.

21. οὐδὲν ἔστιν ἀρετή: Comp. Origen c. Cels. 4, 3: ἀρετῆς μὴν ἴαν ἀνίλῃς τὸ ἰκούσιον, ἀνείλες αὐτῆς καὶ τὴν οὐσίαν.

23. ἥπερ: C. 12, 38.—ὁ ἀληθὴς λόγος: C. 3, 4.

24. εἰμαρμένην . . . ταύτην: Ταύτην attracted from τοῦτο. See cc. 3, 8; 13, 5. The only inevitable fate is the due reward of those who choose the good and those who choose the evil.

25. τοῖς ὁμοίως: Sc. ἐκλεγμένοις. Sylb. and Ashton improve the position by reading ὁμοίως τοῖς.

27. οἷον: 'As for instance.'—μηδὲν δυνάμενα: C. 9, 4. Below, οὐ ἐνδύμενος.

28. οὐδὲ γὰρ ἦν . . . οὐδ' . . . ἐτύγχανεν: On the omission of ἂν, see c. 12, 40.

30. τοῦτο γινόμενος: Sc. ἀγαθός.

32. ἕτερον παρ' ὧ: Comp. c. 19, 19.

#### 44. THIS DOCTRINE THE DOCTRINE OF THE PROPHETS.

2. τῷ πρώτῳ πλασθέντι ἀνθρώπῳ: Adam is often called the 'protoplast.' Ambrose (L. H. p. 24): *Aperiens paradisum | quem protoplastus clauserat.*

4. Ἰδοὺ . . . ἀγαθόν: Deut. 30, 15, 19 (slightly altered). These are not the words of God to Adam, but the language of Moses to the Israelites. But Justin explains with these words the command given to Adam, Gen. 2, 16, 17 (Ashton). Near enough for Justin.

6. ὡς ἀπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς: C. 37, 8. Otto reads ὡς ἀπὸ προσώπου τ. π.

7. Δούσασθε . . . ἐλάλησε ταῦτα: Isa. 1, 16 foll.

8. μάθετε καλὸν ποιεῖν: C. 39, 7.

16. οὐ λέγει: 'Does not mean.'

20. ἀπαλασσοσύνης: 'Leaving off,' 'that leaves off' (intrans.).

22. Αἰτία . . . ἀναίτιος: Plato, De Republ. 10, 617 E: quoted at every turn. See Lucian, Merc. Cond. s. f.; Max. Tyr. 41, 5; Clem. Alex. Paedag. 1, 8, 69; Strom. 5, 14, 137; Arnob. 2, 64.

24. καὶ πάντων: *A deo omnibus.*



27. τὰς ἀφορμὰς: 'ἀφορμή,' 'the start,' often 'the capital.' A common notion that the Greek poets and philosophers traded on borrowed capital. See c. 59.

29. σπέρματα ἀληθείας: On the doctrine of the λόγος σπερματικός, see the Introd. xxxvii., and comp. B 13, 10. — ἐλέγχοντες . . . μὴ ἀκριβῶς νοήσαντες: On the participle, see c. 3, 3. On the negative, c. 9, 4.

30. αὐτοὶ ἑαυτοῖς: The nom. or acc. of the intensive (αὐτός) is often used with the reflexive when there is special stress on the strangeness of the action.

31. ὃ φάμεν: Like the Latin *quod dicimus* of coincident action. 'In that we say (in saying), we do not mean.' See Xen. Oec. 15, 6; An. 5, 5, 20. 22; G, 1, 29; Hier. 6, 12, and for this age, Clem. Rom. 2 Cor. 2, 2, 1. Davis's ὅτι is natural, but not necessary.

35. παρ' αὐτῶν κτί.: So the MSS. But I am unable to make any satisfactory sense out of the passage, nor are the emendations proposed convincing. By reading with Maran αὐτῷ, transposing μέλλοντα, and beginning the apodosis with καὶ τὰ παρ' αὐτοῦ, the difficulty would be relieved. Thus: ἐδόξατος ὄντος παρ' αὐτῷ κατ' ἀξίαν τῶν πράξεων ἕκαστον ἀμείψεσθαι (on the fut., see c. 2, 17) τῶν ἀνθρώπων, καὶ τὰ παρ' αὐτοῦ κατ' ἀξίαν τῶν πραττομένων μέλλοντα ἀπαντήσεσθαι . . . προλέγει. 'And as it is decreed with Him (in His high chancery) that He shall requite each man according to the desert of his actions, [so] He also foretells what is going to befall [them] from Him according to the desert of that which is done.' The system of rewards and punishments is fixed; the rewards and punishments themselves are foretold, but the subjects are determined by men's own behavior. Otto reads παρ' αὐτόν, with which he connects μέλλοντα.

38. εἰς ἐπίστασιν: I have ventured to substitute this familiar word for ἐπίτασιν, which is supposed to mean here ἐπίτασιν νοῦ, *animi attentionem*. Polybius uses ἐπίστασις, 'pause,' 'consideration,' 'attention,' in such combinations as ἐπίστασις καὶ θεωρία (6, 3, 4); ἀξίος ἐπιστάσεως καὶ ζήλου (11, 2, 4); ἀγειν τινα εἰς ἐπίστασιν (9, 22, 7; 10, 40, 4). Aristotle, Met. 13, 2, 13: ἔχει ἐπίστασιν, 'gives us pause,' 'excites attention.' So Justin himself, Dial. c. T. 29: ἀξίον ἐπιστάσεως. This correction has been anticipated by Otto (1876).

on transpositions see Bohmer - appendix 15 phil. edn  
p. 122 sq.

39. μᾶλλον ἰστίν: C. 3, 4. Comp. Plat. Legg. 6, 766 C.

41. θάνατος ὥρισθη κατὰ τῶν . . . ἀναγ.: Comp. c. 45, 17. Otto cites the law in Iul. Paull. Sententt. receptt. lib. 5, tit. 21, n. 8: *Qui de salute principis vel de summa rei publicae mathematicos, hariolos, haruspices, raticinatores consulit cum eo qui responderit capite punitur . . . Non tantum divinatione quis, sed ipsa scientia eiusque libris melius fecerit abstinere.*—Υστάσπου: C. 20, 1.

42. Συβύλλης: C. 20, 1.

43. διὰ τοῦ φόβου: Contrast διὰ τὸν φόβον, c. 29, 14.—ἐντυγχάνοντας: C. 14, 2.

44. αὐτοῖς: *Ipsis*.

45. κατέχουσιν: On the sequence, see c. 33, 8.

47. καὶ ὑμῖν: See Athenag. Suppl. 9, 35.

48. εὐάρεστα: The contents, τὰ ἰνόντα.—φανήσισθαι: On the inf., see c. 5, 11.—Κἄν: C. 2, 8.

49. κερδήσαντες ἰσόμεθα: This periphrastic form, fut. with aor. part., is not common in Attic. The notion of attainment is more clearly brought out than it can be by the fut. ind., which answers for continuance and attainment both. Hence, κατακαυόντες is perhaps better than κατακεκονότες in the disputed passage, Xen. An. 7, 6, 36, where coincident action would be more elegant. No such refinement, however, is to be admitted for a Hellenistic writer. Comp. c. 3, 4.

#### 45. CHRIST'S THRONING IN HEAVEN FORETOLD.

1. ἀνάγειν: So Thirlby. Comp. Dial. c. T. 32: καὶ τὸν κύριον πάντων πατέρα ἀνάγοντα αὐτόν. The MSS. have ἀγαγεῖν. The aor. is rarely combined with μέλλω, c. 19, 31. Otto now returns to ἀγαγεῖν, as εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν gives the upward motion, but comp. c. 42, 13: ἀνελθὼν εἰς οὐρανόν.

3. κατέχειν: 'Keep him' there. Comp. 2 Thess. 2, 6. 7.—ὥς ἂν πατάξῃ: The subj. after the historical tense ἐμελλε is all the more natural, as the time is not yet. See c. 33, 8. On the tense c. 32, 8.

6. μηδέπω: Where we should expect in classic Greek οὐδέπω.—ἐκπύρωσιν: So Billius for the ἐπικύρωσιν, 'confirmation,' 'consummation,' of the MSS.; an almost certain emendation. See cc. 20, 12; 57, 1; 60, 23; B 7, 12.

8. Εἶπεν . . . ἐγίνησά σε: Ps. 109, 1-3.

17. καί, καίπερ: Kai inserted at Thirlby's suggestion. A more elegant writer than Justin would have omitted the καίπερ, and trusted to the context for the adversative sense. See c. 7, 7.—κατὰ τῶν διδασκόντων: Comp. c. 44, 41.

19. Εἰ δὲ καὶ ὑμεῖς . . . ἀντιῤυσθε: Kai with ὑμεῖς. Comp. c. 2, 10. On the fut. ind., see c. 8, 17.

20. τοῖσδε τοῖς λόγοις: See c. 47, 4.—οὐ πλὴν τι: Litotes.

21. ὡς προέφημεν: C. 2, 17.

#### 46. THE WORD IN THE WORLD BEFORE CHRIST IS CHRIST.

1. ἀλογισταίνοντες: A Justinian word. — ἀποτροπήν: 'Perversion.' Thirlby proposes ἀνατροπήν, 'refutation.'

2. πρὸ ἐτῶν ἑκατὸν πενήκοντα: According to many, round numbers, in which Justin deals too largely. Some have seen in this passage the exact date of the Apology, 147 A.D., Rome's ninth centennial, and the year of the promotion of M. Aurelius to be the colleague of Antoninus Pius. The combination πρὸ w. gen. for 'ago,' 'since,' is post-classic.

3. γεγεννησθαι: Γ. depends on λῆγειν, λέγειν on εἰπωσι, for which see c. 12, 83.—ἐπὶ Κυρηνίου: C. 13, 15.

4. ὕστερον χρόνοις: 'Long afterward,' for χρόνοις ὕστερον (Otto).

6. ὡς ἀνευθύνων ὄντων κτί.: As if we said that all men who lived before his time were irresponsible. See c. 4, 18.

7. φθάσαντες . . . λυσόμεθα: See note on c. 12, 88. λυσόμεθα for λυσώμεθα with Otto. See c. 48, 4 (note).

8. εἶναι ἰδιόδεχθαι: Εἶναι instead of ᾖ and finite verb. See c. 12, 7.—προεμνηύσαμεν . . . ὄντα: Μηνύω as a verb of showing often takes the participle.

10. οἱ μετὰ λόγου βιώσαντες: Justin's liberality in this whole passage has given great offence to some, and has been elaborately explained away by others.—κάν=κεῖ.

11. οἶον: C. 48, 27.—Σωκράτης: Honorably mentioned above.—Ἡράκλειτος: Justin's evident admiration for Heraclitus is in striking contrast to the flippancies of the time. Tatian does not share his master's respect for the great thinker. See Or. ad Gr. 3.

12. ἐν βαρβάρους: C. 5, 10.

13. Ἀνανίας καὶ Ἀζαρίας καὶ Μισαήλ: More familiar as Shadrach, Abednego, and Meshach, Dan. 1, 7 (the three holy children). Comp. Clem. Rom. 1 Ep. ad Cor. 1, 45.

14. καταλέγειν: 'To go through the whole list.'—μακρόν: 'Tedious.'

15. εἶναι: Below, c. 47, 15, ἐπισταμαι takes ὅτι. See c. 5, 10.—παραιτούμεθα: C. 2, 3.—προγενόμενοι: Before Christ.—ὥστε . . . ἦσαν: C. 5, 8.

18. βιοῦντες: See c. 10, 45.—Χριστιανοὶ . . . ὑπάρχουσιν: Maran has toiled over this unguarded expression of Justin.

19. Δι' ἣν δ' αἰτίαν διὰ δυνάμεως: C. 23, 11.

22. σταυρωθεὶς ἀποθανών: Read with Otto (1876) στ. καὶ ἀποθανών. Comp. c. 42, 12.—ἀνελήλυθεν: Notice the change of tense. The perfect of the resulting condition.

23. τοσούτων: Here, 'all.'

26. χωρήσωμεν: So with Otto for χωρήσωμεν, the imperative subjunctive.

#### 47. DESOLATION OF JUDEA PREDICTED.

3. ὡς ἀπὸ προσώπου: C. 36, 1.

4. λαῶν: C. 33, 22.

5. οἷδε: In classic usage οὗτος ordinarily refers to what goes before, ὗτε to what follows. Justin uses οὗτος indifferently. But notice even for the classic time that this pair of contrasts is often crossed by another. Οὗτος is the pronoun of the second person, ὅδε of the first; and again, first and second persons shift according to the point of view, as ἡδε ἡ χεὶρ, 'this hand of mine,' αὐτὴ ἡ χεὶρ, 'this hand which I offer you.' This extreme mobility was supplemented by gesture. Ὅδε gives dramatic coloring to style. Notice the frequent use of it in the vivid narrative of Herodotus.—Ἐγενήθη . . . σφόδρα: Isa. 64, 10–12.

9. ὅτι ἡρήμωτο: No change is necessary. The pluperfect from the time of the prophecy. Ὅτι, see c. 8, 7.

10. γυνή σε σθαι: So I write for γεγενῆσθαι. Maran defends the perfect because a past tense was used in the prophecy. Comp. c. 42.

12. περὶ τοῦ μὴ ἐπιτραπήσεσθαι: 'Concerning (the statement that) no one shall be permitted,' etc. The fut. inf. with the ar-

ticle is always a substantivized oratio obliqua in classic Greek.

Comp. c. 10, 14.—μηδένα αὐτῶν: Sc. τῶν Ἰουδαίων.

13. Ἡ γῆ . . . αὐτῇ: Isa. 1, 7; Jer. 50, 8 (comp. 2, 15).

14. φάγονται: For ἔδονται, the classic fut. of ἐσθίω.

15. Ὅτι δὲ φυλάσσεται κτί.: See Tertull. Apol. c. 21; Euseb. H. E. 4, 6 (Otto).

16. ὅπως μηδαίς . . . γόνηται: C. 11, 7. On the aor. c. 4, 8.—θάνατος . . . ὄρισται: Cc. 44, 17; 45, 17.

#### 48. PREDICTIONS OF CHRIST'S WORK AND DEATH.

2. ὁ ἡμέτερος Χριστός: A favorite expression arising from the antagonism to the Jewish ideal of the Messiah. So often in the Dial. with Trypho.

3. τῶν λελεγμένων: C. 43, 1.

4. Τῇ παρουσίᾳ . . . περιπατήσουσιν: Isa. 35, 4—6. Comp. Matt. 11, 5.—τρανή: A poetic word in the classic time, often used in Orig. c. Cels.

7. Ὅτι τε: On τε, see c. 21, 26.

8. γενομένων ἔκτων: Ἄκτων is Casaubon's convincing conjecture for αὐτῶν. See c. 35, 26.

9. ἀναιρεῖσόμενος: C. 46, 9.

11. Ἰδε . . . ἐκ τοῦ μέσου: Isa. 57, 1 foll.

14. καὶ ἔσται ἐν εἰρήνῃ· ἡ ταφή κτί.: This is Justin's punctuation. See Dial. c. T. cc. 97. 98. Commonly ἐν εἰρήνῃ ἡ ταφή αὐτοῦ· ἡρται (Otto).

#### 49. HIS REJECTION BY THE JEWS FORETOLD.

1. Καὶ πάλιν: Sc. ἀκούσατε (c. 48, 3).—οἱ οὐ προσδοκήσαντες: On the neg. c. 14, 16.

2. λαοὶ τῶν ἐθνῶν: C. 33, 22.—προσκυνήσουσιν αὐτόν: C. 16, 22.

4. παραγερόμενον=ὅταν παραγίνηται.

5. ὡς ἀπὸ προσώπου: C. 36, 1.—Εἰσι δὲ οὗτοι: C. 47, 4.

6. Ἐμφανὴς . . . ἐναντίον μου: Isa. 65, 1. 8.—εὐρίθην τοῖς μὴ ζητοῦσιν: See c. 27, 18. This construction of the aor. pass. is not unwarranted in classic prose.

7. ἔθνεϊ οἷ: Construction according to the sense.

11. Ἰουδαῖοι . . . ἔχοντες: 'Although they had.' The parti-

ciple without the article is seldom equivalent to the simple identifying relative, but generally conveys a notion of cause, condition, opposition, or the like. See A 1, 7.

18. *παρεγνόμενον*: So I read with Sylburg, and connect with *ἡγνόησαν*, as above. The MSS. have *παραγενησόμενον*, which is awkward.—*παρεχρήσαντο*: Not an Attic word. 'Abused,' here = 'maltreated.' Clem. Alex. Paed. 2, 1, 9; Constt. Apostt. 6, 10. Billius thinks that Justin uses it for *ἐις* *ἐχρήσ.*

14. *μηδέποτε μηδὲν ἀκούσαντες* = *εἰ καὶ μηδὲν ἤκουσαν.*

15. *μέχρις οὗ*: C. 8, 19.

18. *ἀπετάξαντο*: A late expression.—*τῷ ἀγεννήτῳ . . . ἀνέθηκαν*: The Apostolic Constitutions give as the formula in the case of candidates for baptism (8, 6): *ἑαυτοῖς τῷ μόνῳ ἀγεννήτῳ θεῷ διὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ αὐτοῦ παράξις*. See note on c. 14, 9.

19. *ἑαυτοῖς ἀνέθηκαν*: C. 14, 12.

20. *λεχθῆσόμενα*: C. 33, 1.

21. *εἰάν*: Justin does not use the optative much in oratio obliqua, and here, as in C. 26, 21, he treats it as a future.

23. *βραχυεπῶς*: A Justinian word, B 9, 6. — *Οὐαὶ . . . γλυκύ*: Isa. 5, 20.

#### 50. CHRIST'S HUMILIATION FORETOLD.

2. *ἐτιμασθῆναι ὑπέμεινε*: Comp. Ep. Barnab. 5, 1. 5. 6; Clem. Rom. 2 Ep. ad Cor. 1. 2; Dial. c. T. 121.

4. *Ἀνὸς ὢν . . . ἐξιλιάσεται*: Isa. 53, 12.

7. *Ἰδοὺ γὰρ συνήσουσι*: Isa. 52, 13–15.

8. *Ὅν τρόπον*: C. 4, 22.

10. *θανυμάσσονται*: Even with living beings the Attic inclines to the rule. See c. 3, 4.

11. *οἷς* = *οὗτοι οἷς*.

12. *δύονται*: Inserted by Otto upon Thirlby's suggestion. See the LXX and Justin himself, Dial. c. T. cc. 13. 118.

13. *Κύριε . . . ἤρθη*: Isa. 53, 1–8.

15. *ὡς παιδίον*: Justin understands this to refer to the subject of *ἀνγγελιαμεν*. See Dial. c. T. 42.

18. *παρὰ τοὺς ἀνθρώπους*: C. 19, 19.

19. *εἰδὼς φέρειν*: C. 26, 20.

22. *Αὐτός*: C. 33, 21.

24. παιδεία: See c. 40, 51.—εἰρήνης: The LXX and Justin (D. c. T. 13) add ἡμῶν.

31. Μετὰ . . . ἀπίστησαν: Not so the canonical Gospels (Otto).

33. ἐκ νεκρῶν . . . διδάξαντος: Comp. Luke 24, 25 sq.

34. ἐφθέντος αὐτοῖς: C. 37, 13.

35. προσέφητο γενησόμενα: For verbs of saying as verbs of showing with participle, see c. 33, 1. More natural would be ὡς γ.—καὶ . . . ἰδίδεξαν: Comp. Acts 1, 8. 9; 2, 8.

36. ἀνερχόμενον: Of actual perception, c. 19, 9.

38. πᾶν γένος ἀνθρώπων: C. 1, 5.

39. προσηγορεύθησαν: The forms of this compound of ἀγορεύω are more freely admitted in all stages. See c. 3, 5.

#### 51. THE MAJESTY OF CHRIST.

1. Ἵνα δὲ μὴνύσῃ: On the subj., see c. 33, 8.

2. ἀνεκδιήγητον . . . τὸ γένος: Predicative position. Ἄν. occurs 2 Cor. 9, 15; Clem. Rom. 1 Ep. ad Cor. 20, 5; 49, 3; Athenag. Suppl. 10, 38; Theophil. ad Autol. 1, 8.

3. Τὴν γενεάν . . . παρεδόθη: Isa. 53, 8-12.

4. Ὅτι=quod, as cc. 42, 6; 47, 1; 48, 1; 49, 19; 50, 1 (Otto).

9. δῶτε: Sc. αὐτόν. The form δῶται = δᾶδῃ, a monstrosity, is found in MSS. of the LXX.

19. Ἄρατε . . . δυνατός: Ps. 28, 7. 8.

24. Ἰδοὺ . . . αὐτῷ: Daniel (not Jeremiah), 7, 13. Comp. Matt. 25, 81.

#### 52. SURE WORD OF PROPHECY.

On the subject of this chapter, comp. Ep. Barnab. 1, 6; Theophil. ad Autol. 1, 14.

1. ἀπεδείκνυμεν . . . προκεκηρύχθαι: C. 30 foll. Otto now reads ἀπεδείκνυμεν for the MS. ἀποδ. On the inf., see c. 3, 8.

2. πρὶν ἢ: C. 4, 13.

4. πίστιν ἔχειν ὡς . . . γενησομένων: C. 23, 12.

5. Ὅν γάρ τρόπον: C. 4, 22.

6. τὰ λείποντα: C. 32, 30.

7. ἀπιστῆται: The MSS. ἀπιστεῖται.—ἀποβήσονται: C. 3, 3.

10. ὅταν . . . ὅτε: The former indefinite, the latter relative,

modifying ὅταν. — οὐρανῶν: C. 16, 32. — μετὰ τῆς ἀγγελικῆς αὐτοῦ στρατιᾶς: See c. 6, 7.

13. τῶν μὲν ἀξίων: Sc. τὰ σώματα, dependent on ἐνέουσι. On the absolute use of ἀξίων, see c. 10, 9.

15. προειρήσεται γενησόμενα: Participle for inf. See c. 50, 35.

16. Ἐρρέζη: The usual form is ἐρρήζη.

17. Συναχθήσεται . . . αὐτῷ: Mixed. Σ. . . ἀναφύσονται, Ezek. 37, 7 foll.; καὶ πᾶν . . . αὐτῷ, Isa. 45, 23. Comp. Rom. 14, 11.

20. γενέσθαι μολλουσιν: On the aor., see c. 19, 31. Justin probably wrote γενήσεσθαι.

22. Ὁ σκόληξ αὐτῶν . . . σβεσθήσεται: Isa. 66, 24. Add σ3. to Veitch, who cites this place for παυθήσεται (rare). The LXX have τελευτήσει.

23. τότε . . . ὅτε: "Ὅτε on account of the correlative.

25. Ὡσιν . . . παραγενόμενον: Here of actual perception, bursting on the sight.

27. Ἐντελοῦμαι . . . θνείδης: Mixed. Zech. 2, 6 (comp. Isa. 43, 5, 6 and 11, 12); Zech. 12, 10–12 (comp. Joel 2, 13); Isa. 63, 17; 64, 11.

31. οὐ μὴ σχίσωσιν: C. 38, 9.

32. Κόψονται: The middle of a natural expression of grief. See note on c. 14, 12.—διψῶνται εἰς ὃν ἐξεκέντησαν: Remarkable coincidence with John 19, 37, variously interpreted by critics. The LXX have (Zech. 12, 10): ἐπιβλήσονται πρὸς με, ἀντ' ὧν κατωρχήσαντο.

### 53. IMPORTANCE OF PROPHECIES FOR FAITH.

1. Πολλὰς . . . καὶ ἑτέρας: Πολύς often an adjective in Greek; 'many,' regularly a numeral in English.—ἔχοντες: 'Although.'

2. ἱπανσάμεθα: The margin has πανόμεθα, unnecessarily.

4. εἶναι λογισάμενοι: C. 2, 18.

7. οὐκ ἀποδείξαι ἔχομεν: Justin thus retorts the charge of unreasoning faith commonly brought against the Christians. See Origen c. Cels. 1, 9 and Keim, l. c. 57, 8.

8. τῷ ἀγεννήτῳ θεῷ: C. 14, 9.

9. τὴν κρίσιν . . . ποιήσεται: C. 1, 9.

10. πρὶν ἤ: C. 4, 13.



12. ὁρῶμεν: We should expect *ἰωρῶμεν* (which Otto now edits), but Justin has got the thread of his long sentence tangled. — τοὺς ἀπὸ παντὸς γένους ἀνθρώπους: C. 1, 5.

14. παραιτησαμένους: C. 2, 3.

15. εἰη: One of the MSS. has *εἰνη*. — αὐτοὺς ἡμᾶς ὁρῶντες: 'When we look at our own selves,' i. e., the Gentile Christians. The MSS. have *ἑαυτοὺς*. The whole sentence from *Τίμι* . . . *εἰδότες* is disjointed and confused.

20. κέκληνται: 'Have been called,' hence 'bear the name,' but there is no sharp distinction from *καλοῦνται*.

23. Εὐφράνῃτι . . . τὸν ἄνδρα: Isa. 54, 1.

25. Ἐρημα: Here = 'ignorant.'

26. χειρῶν ἔργοις λατρεύοντας: C. 16, 22.

29. παραγενόμενον ἠγγόησαν: C. 49, 4.

30. προεἶπε . . . σωθήσεσθαι: C. 12, 32.

32. Εἰ μὴ . . . ἐγενήθημεν: Isa. 1, 9.

34. ἱστοροῦνται . . . γενόμεναι: C. 50, 35.

36. μηδενὸς . . . σωθέντος: In classic prose *οὐδενός*.

38. ἐνγατέρες: Perhaps *αἱ ζυγατέρες*.

39. ἔρημον καὶ κεκαυμένην οὖσαν: The perf. part. is treated like an adjective. A more careful writer would have said *ἐ. οὖσαν καὶ κεκ.* *εἰς τὴν ἑρμηνείαν.*

40. Ὡς . . . προεγινώσκοντο: Ὡς '(to show) how,' as often in Greek.

43. Ἰσραὴλ . . . ἀκροβυστίαν: Not Isa. but Jer. 9, 26.

44. παιθὼ καὶ πίστιν: Comp. c. 8, 6.

45. ὑπὸ παθῶν: Familiar personification with *ὑπό*. See E. ad D. 2, 15.

46. ἐμφορῆσαι: Odd expression for *ἐμποιῆσαι*, the usual word (as Orig. c. Cels. 7, 85).

#### 54. HOW THE MYTHS OF THE HEATHEN ORIGINATED.

Of the three things which Justin, in c. 23, had promised to prove, this is the third, that the fables of the poets were invented for the purpose of turning men aside from the faith.

3. ἐπὶ ἀπάτῃ: Ἐπὶ 'on the basis of,' hence 'with a view to.'

4. εἰρήσθαι ἀποδείκνυμεν: C. 21, 30.

5. Ἀκούσαντες . . . κηρυσσόμενον παραγενησόμενον: Awkward

accumulation of participles. On ἀκούω, see c. 11, 1. Κηρύσσω construed like προμηνύω, c. 48, 9. So Dial. c. T. 43.

8. προεβάλλοντο: C. 26, 2. — λαχθῆναι γενομένους: So Maran, Braun, Otto, Trollope, for the λ. λεγομένους of the MSS.—ελοῖς τῷ Διί: C. 21, 6.

9. συνήσεσθαι: The mass of infinitives is inelegant. 'Thinking that they would be able to work men into the conviction that,' etc.

10. ὁμοίᾳ: For ὁμοίως. The correction is due to Thirlby. With the thought comp. Orig. c. Cels. 3, 32.

11. Καὶ ταῦτα δέ: See c. 32, 45.

12. εἶπον μᾶλλον ἐπήκουον: Μᾶλλον belongs to πιστευθήσεσθαι, πιστευθήσεσθαι depends on προκηρυσσόντων. 'Where they heard the prophets foretelling that Christ would be more readily believed.' This notion that the demons overheard (ἐπήκουον) the prophets is common enough in the Fathers, e. g. Tertull. Apol. 22 (p. 72 D. S.): *Dispositiones Dei et tunc prophetis concionantibus exceperunt* [*daemones*].

13. οὐκ ἐνόουν ἀκριβῶς: A familiar stroke of polemics. Lact. Inst. Div. 2, 14: *Sciunt illi quidem futura multa, sed non omnia, quippe quibus penitus consilium dei scire non licet, et ideo solent responsa in ambiguos exitus temperare* (Semisch).

16. τὸν ἡμέτερον Χριστόν: C. 48, 2.

17. ὡς προέφημεν: C. 44.

18. ὡς προεμηνύσαμεν: C. 32.

19. Οὐκ ἐκλείψει . . . σταφυλῆς: Gen. 49, 10.

20. ᾧ ἀπόκειται: C. 32, 4.

25. ὄνον: The MSS. have οἶνον, clearly a mistake for ὄνον, which Sylburg has restored. The ass figures largely in the Bacchic mysteries, for the same reason as the goat. Both are symbols of reproductive power.

26. ἀναγράφουσι: 'Register,' 'set down.' In the parallel passage (Dial. c. T. 69) the verb is παραφέρωσι, 'adduce.'

28. εἴτε: Not εἴτε, as there is no corresponding εἴτε or ἢ. See B 7, 33. Otto now edits εἴτε υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ ὁ παραγενησόμενός ἐστι ἢ ἀνθρώπου. Comp. l. 34.

30. ἀνελεύσεται=ἄνεισι.

31. μὴ ἐπιστάμενοι: Causal. See c. 5, 9.

32. ὄνου πῶλον: A slip of Justin or of his LXX, probably his

own, as in Dial. c. T. 52 the words *καὶ τῷ ἔλκει τὸν πῶλον τῆς ὄνον αὐτοῦ* are added.—*ἐγὼν ἴσται=ἄξει*: See c. 19, 5.

83. *καὶ νίε*: We should expect *καὶ εἰ*.

84. *ὡς προέφημεν*: C. 21.

85. *καὶ αὐτόν*: 'Likewise.'—*ἐξ ἀνθρώπων*: So Otto for *ἀνθρώπου*, in accordance with Justin's fixed usage.

87. *λεχέιν*: C. 11, 1. — *διὰ παρθένου τεχθήσεται*: On the other hand, Ignat. Ep. ad Eph. 3: *ἔλαβε τὸν ἄρχοντα τοῦ αἰῶνος τούτου ἢ παρθενία Μαρίας καὶ ὁ τοκετὸς αὐτῆς καὶ ὁ θάνατος τοῦ κυρίου καὶ τρία μυστήρια κραυγῆς ἐν ἡσυχίᾳ Θεοῦ ἐπράχθη*.

88. *δὲ ἑαυτοῦ*: Of himself, and not riding on a horse as Perseus (Ashton), cc. 21, 13; 22, 16.

40. *προηλεκται*: More usual *προεῖρηται*.

41. *Ἰσχυρὸς κτε.*: Ps. 19, 5. See c. 40, 11.

42. *ἐκπερινοστήσαντα*: See note on c. 26, 14.

43. *ἔμαθεν προφητευθέντα*: Cc. 3, 3; 19, 9.

44. *Ἀσκληπιόν*: C. 21, 9.

### 55. THE CROSS.

The fanciful arguments of this chapter belong to the time, and are repeated and imitated by other Fathers. Maran reminds us further that they might not be inept in a discussion against the heathen, who thought nothing more ignominious than the cross.

1. *ἐπὶ τινος*: C. 5, 1.

2. *τὸ σταυρωθῆναι*: C. 3, 9. — *οὐ γὰρ ἐνοεῖτο αὐτοῖς*: See Ignat. l. c.: *ἔλαβεν . . . ὁ θάνατος τοῦ κυρίου*. On the construction, see c. 27, 18.

5. *τὸ μέγιστον*: The article in the predicate with emphasis.

6. *ὑπάρχει*: C. 2, 10.

8. *σχήματος*: 'Figure.' See c. 4, 28. — *διοικεῖται*: It is not necessary to write *διοικεῖσθαι*. 'Is managed' means also 'is to be managed,' 'can be managed.'

9. *θάλασσα . . . γίνονται*: Imitated by Minuc. Fel., Oct. 29.—*ἢν μὴ . . . μείνη*: *Μείνη* would be more natural. Generic conditional, c. 2, 3.

10. *ιστίον*: Tertull. Adv. Marc. 3, 18 (Adv. Jud. 10): *antenna (natis)* . . . *crucis pars est* (Otto).

12. βαναυσουργοί: Βάναυσος is one of the untranslatables. Socially it would correspond to our 'stoker.' Justin combines φορτικά και βάναυσα. Dial. c. T. 3.—εἰ μή: C. 10, 20.

13. Τὸ δὲ ἀνθρώπειον . . . ἐπωνομάζετε: Tertull. Ad Nat. 1, 12 (Otto).

14. τῶν ἀλόγων ζώων: Brachylogy: τ. ἀ. ζ. = τοῦ τ. ἀ. ζ.

19. Πνεῦμα . . . κύριος: Lam. 4, 20 (LXX).

21. θελοῖ, τὰ τῶν βηξίλλων: The MSS. have ἐηλοῖ . . . λωμεν και τῶν τροπαίων, with νιξι (by another hand) in the margin of Claromontanus. Otto says there is room for about five syllables. Nolte says for four or five letters. Various suggestions have been made, all agreeing in restoring some form of the Greek transliteration of the Latin *cezillum*. The most simple is that recommended by Nolte: τὰ τῶν βηξίλλων. If Otto is right as to the space, read with him λέγω εἰ τὰ τῶν οὐηξίλλων.

23. δεικνύντες: Anacoluthon instead of δεικνύντων, as if he had written εἰ ὧν τὰς προόδους ποιῆσζε, a different state of things from c. 11, 5, which Otto cites.

24. Καὶ τῶν κτί.: Lipsius refers ἐπὶ τούτῳ τῷ σχήματι to the figure of a cross formed by the spears and standards on which the images of the emperors were elevated. Cavedoni thinks it evident that Justin sees the figure of the cross in the pagan images of the deified emperors, who are often represented in the form of a man borne towards heaven by an eagle, or by the genius of eternity, whose outspread wings form, as it were, the two arms of the cross, while the upright is represented by the body of the deified person and by that of the genius himself. (Otto.)

27. ὁση δύναμις: C. 13, 5.

29. οἶδαμεν . . . ὄντες: 'We know that we are,' c. 3, 3. — λοιπόν: C. 3, 21.—καὶν . . . ἀπιστήται: C. 2, 7. The MSS. have ἀπιστεῖτε.

#### 56. THE DEMONS STILL AT WORK.

1. ἠρκίσθησαν . . . εἰπεῖν: A later construction.

3. υἱοὺς τῷ Διὶ: C. 21, 6.

4. ὅπως: 'How,' not 'that.'

5. ἐν παντὶ γένει: C. 1, 5.

7. ὡς προεδηλώσαμεν: See c. 26.

9. ἀπατωμένους ἔχουσι: Ἐχω=κατέχω, 'keep.'

10. Καὶ γάρ: *Etenim*.—ὡς προέφημεν: C. 26.

11. ἐπὶ Κλαυδίου Καίσαρος: C. 13, 15.—τὴν ἱερὰν σύγκλητον: C. 1, 4.

12. κατεπλήξατο: The middle in Polyb. 2, 52; 3, 89; Dion. Hal. 1, 82.

13. θεός: Agreeing with Σίμων according to the rule. Otto reads θεόν on account of ὡς τοὺς ἄλλους κτί.

17. εἰ τις εἶη . . . κατεχόμενος: When the participle is used in the predicate, it becomes to a greater or less extent an adjective. Κατεχόμενος=κάτοχος. In later times, however, the periphrastic forms are loosely handled. See c. 10, 5. Notice the ideal protasis with an apodosis such as is more commonly found after ἰάν.

18. Καί: With stress.

19. καθαιρήσατε=καζέιλετε. Veitch gives no authority earlier than Polyaeus, a younger contemporary of Justin.

#### 57. THE DEMONS INSTIGATE PERSECUTION.

The connection of thought between this chapter and the last seems to be: The followers of Simon are to be turned from the error of their ways; and they may yet be turned, as the demons have not succeeded in abolishing the belief in the final conflagration, which frightens men into right.

1. μὴ γενέσθαι=μὴ γενήσεσθαι: Μή is common after verbs of belief, c. 8, 6. On the aor. instead of fut., see c. 12, 23.

3. ὅνπερ τρόπον: C. 4, 22.—λαθεῖν . . . παραγενόμενον: C. 35, 1. Λαθεῖν depends on πράξει. 'As they have not availed to effect the concealment of Christ's advent, but are only able to make those who live irrationally kill us,' etc.

4. ἑκείνο μόνον: Anticipates the infinitive clause. Comp. c. 4, 5.

7. ἐλεοῦντες: On the synonym, see c. 15, 43.

9. τοῦ πάντως ἀποθανεῖν ὁμολογουμένου: C. 11, 10.

10. καινοῦ: Otto comp. Eccl. 9, 1: καὶ οὐκ ἔστιν πᾶν πρόσφατον ὑπὸ τὸν ἥλιον.—ἄλλ' ἤ: C. 40, 27.

11. εἰ μὲν κόρος . . . ἔχει: I have written ἔχει for ἔχρ. The conditional here is nearly causal. In Attic prose εἰ is rarely

found with the subjunctive. *Μέν* with Thirlby for *μή*: but *εἰ μὲν* here stands in no clear contrast to *Εἰ εἰ* below.—*κἂν ἐνιαυτοῦ*: 'Even in the course of a year.' But *κἂν* (= *καὶ ἐν*) *ἐνιαυτῷ* would be more natural.

13. *προσέχων*: C. 18, 22.—*ἀπιστοῦσι μηδὲν εἶναι*: After negative verbs the negative result is often expressed by the negated infinitive. Disbelieving that anything is=believing that nothing is. This does not exclude the positive construction, as in *Athenag. Suppl. 12*: *ἀπιστούμεθα θεοσεβεῖν*.

14. *εἰς ἀναισθησίαν χωρεῖν*: C. 18, 2.

15. *παθῶν*: Thirlby notices the similarity to *Plat. Apol. 41 D*: *ἀλλὰ μοι δῆλόν ἐστι τοῦτο ὅτι ἤδη τεθνάναι καὶ ἀπηλλάχθαι πραγμάτων βέλτιον ἦν μοι*. διὰ τοῦτο . . . τοῖς καταψηφισαμένοις μου καὶ τοῖς κατηγοροῖς οὐ πάνυ χαλεπαίνω· καίτοι οὐ ταύτῃ τῇ διανοίᾳ κατεψηφίζοντό μου καὶ κατηγοροῦν ἀλλ' οἴμενοι βλάπτειν τι. *ἵ*-lton desiderates *παθῶν μὲν*, but antithesis is often an after-thought.

16. *ἐαυτούς*: Expressed on account of the contrast with *ἡμᾶς*. Otherwise: *φαῦλοι ὄντες δεικνύουσιν*.

17. *ὡς ἀπαλλάττοντες*: The notion of purpose in this familiar combination is a mere inference; comp. c. 4, 19.

#### 58. MARCION PUT FORWARD BY THE DEMONSTRATIONS.

1. *Καὶ . . . ὅτι*: C. 32, 45.—*ὡς πρόεφημεν*: C. 26.

5. *καταγγέλλει*: 'Proclaims.' Comp. c. 5, 33.—*ἄλλον . . . παρά*: A familiar construction. *Plat. Theaet. 156 A*: *τὸ πᾶν κίνησις καὶ ἄλλο παρὰ τοῦτο οὐκ ἐστίν*. See c. 19, 19.

7. *ὡς μόνῳ . . . ἐπισταμένῳ*: C. 4, 19.

8. *ἡμῶν καταγελῶσιν*: C. 4, 26.—*μηδεμίαν . . . ἔχοντες*: 'Although,' c. 7, 8.

+ 13. *τῆς γῆς . . . ἐπαίρεσθαι*: It is not necessary to read with Sylburg *ἀπὸ τῆς γῆς* or *ἀπαίρεσθαι*, as Otto has done in his last ed. The gen. is freely used as a whence-case in later Greek prose. Comp. *Athenag. Suppl. 31, 155*: *τῆς Ἐφεσίων πόλεως ἡλαυνετο* (comp. *Eur. Med. 70*); *Resurr. 18, 84*: *ἡρτηνται τῆς ἀνοίας*; *Clem. Alex. Paedag. 2, 9, 79*: *ἀνεγερτίον τῆς κοίτης*.

16. *ἐπαυκρούοντες*: Only here. Literally, 'slyly tripping up.' Comp. *Plat. Phaedr. 288 E*: *ἐκκείρουκάς με ἑλπίδος*.—*ἦν μὴ . . . ἔχωσιν*: Generic, c. 2, 6.

+ *Διὶ γῆς περὶ γῆς* *ἐπεκρίθη* (II 28 15 Sp.  
*αὐτῆς*)

## 59. WHAT PLATO OWES TO MOSES.

1. λέγομεν . . . τοῦ λόγου: λέγομεν is used, as it were, parenthetically, without influence on the construction, τοῦ λόγου being in apposition. So often. Comp. Lat. *dico*, Madvig, 219, Obs. 3.

2. λαβόντα=ὅτι λαβεῖ: C. 3, 3.

3. τὸ εἰπεῖν: Exactly like a substantive, 'the saying.' But the article were better away. On the inf. ποιῆσαι, see c. 12, 23.

4. στρέψαντα: Sylburg (and Kaye) τρέψαντα. Comp. c. 67, 27.

5. αὐτολεξίαι: C. 32, 2.—διὰ Μωϋσίου: Plato's indebtedness to Moses is a not unfamiliar theme. See Clem. Alex. Strom. 1, 22, 150: Νομίνιος ἐὶ ὁ Πυθαγόρειος φιλόσοφος ἀντικρὺς γράφει· τί γάρ ἐστι Πλάτων ἢ Μωϋσῆς ἀντικίζων. Comp. Protrep. 6, 70: πόθεν, ὦ Πλάτων, ἀλήθειαν αἰνίττῃ; . . . νόμους τοὺς ὅσοι ἀληθεῖς καὶ ὁῶξαν τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ παρ' αὐτῶν ὠφέλησαι τῶν Ἑβραίων, and Orig. c. Cels. 6, 19: ἐγὼ ἐὶ οὐκ ἀπογινώσκω τὰς ἀπὸ τοῦ Φαίδρου λῆξεις ἀπὸ τινῶν Ἑβραίων μεμαθηκότα τὸν Πλάτωνα κτί.—τοῦ προδηλωμένου πρώτου προφ.: See cc. 31, 36; 44, 22.

8. τὴν ἀρχήν: C. 10, 8.

9. Ἐν ἀρχῇ . . . ἐγένετο οὕτως: Gen. 1, 1, sqq.

13. Ὡστε . . . ἐμάθομεν: C. 5, 9.

17. Ἐρεβος: It is barely possible that Justin may be alluding to the עֶרֶב, 'the evening,' of Gen. 1, 5 (Thirlby). But see Deut. 32, 22, which Justin cites below. (Otto.)—παρὰ τοῖς ποιηταῖς: Hesiod. Theog. 123: ἐκ Χάος δ' Ἐρεβός τε μέλαινά τε Νῆξ ἐγένοντο. (Otto.)—εἰρησῆαι . . . οἶδαμεν: Inf. instead of participle, c. 5, 10. 'Οἶδαμεν (=ἴσμεν), rather rare' (Veitch). See Index.

## 60. PLATO AND THE CROSS.

1. Τιμαίω: The Fathers delight in citing the Timaeus.—φυσιολογούμενον: 'The physiological discussion' (Trollope). 'The disquisition on the nature of the Son of God.'

2. ὅτι λέγει: See c. 88, 10. The passage occurs Plat. Tim. 36 B.C.—Ἐχίασεν αὐτὸν ἐν τῷ παντί: Plato is explaining the diffusion of the soul. 'The entire compound [of soul and body] was divided [by God] lengthways into two parts, which he joined together at the centre like the figure )( (Χ), and bent them into an inner and outer circle, cutting one another at a point over

against the point of contact.' See Jowett's *Introd. to Plato's Timaeus* (2, 463).

4. ἀναγίνεσθαι: 'Stands recorded.'

5. κατ' ἐκεῖνο τοῦ καιροῦ: C. 17, 3.

9. γενομένην: So for λεγομένην (Sylburg).

11. ἐπὶ τῇ ἁγίᾳ σκηνῇ: The tabernacle was considered an image of the world (Maran). Justin's statement has no Scriptural warrant.—Ἐὰν προσβλέπητε . . . σωθήσισθε: Numb. 21, 8; comp. John 3, 14, 15.

12. ἐν αὐτῷ: Shall we combine ἐν αὐτῷ σωθήσισθε or πιστεύετε ἐν αὐτῷ? The position in John makes for the latter, which I have put in the text against the tradition.

14. οὕτως παρέδωκεν. Ἄ ἀναγνούς: So Thirlby for οὕτως π. ἀναγνούς.

15. μὴ ἀκριβῶς ἐπιστάμενος: Causal, c. 5, 4.

17. Καὶ τὸ εἰπεῖν: Sc. παρὰ Μωυσέως λαβέν. Comp. l. 3 and c. c. 59, 1.

18. ὡς προείπομεν: In the last chapter.

22. Τὰ δὲ τρίτα περὶ τὸν τρίτον: In Pseud. Plat. Ep. 2, 312 E: τρίτον περὶ τὰ τρίτα. It is hardly necessary to enter into the discussion of this mystical passage. See the commentators on Athenag. Suppl. 23, 112, or Orig. c. Cels. 6, 18.

23. ἐκπύρωσιν γενήσισθαι: C. 20, 12.

25. Καταβήσεται . . . κάτω: Deut. 32, 22.

28. Παρ' ἡμῖν: C. 8, 8. On the loftiness of Christian doctrine amid the humility of its professors, see Athenag. Suppl. 11, 48.

32. ὥς συνείναι: C. 21, 24. 'So as [to make] one to understand,' 'so as to make it evident that these things have not been done by human wisdom, but are said by the power of God.'—οὐ σοφία: Οὐ, although in an infinitive complex, on account of the contrast with ἐννάμει. See c. 14, 16.

#### 61. CHRISTIAN BAPTISM.

With this chapter begins the conclusion of the *Apology*—a *locus classicus* concerning baptism, the eucharist, and the meetings of the Christians.

1. Ὃν τρόπον: C. 4, 22.—ἀνεθήκαμεν ἑαυτούς: Comp. c. 14, 12.—



ἔθηκεμεν=ἔδεμεν: Far less common in good times than ἔθηκαν=ἔτεσαν. On the reflexive, see c. 13, 7.

3. πονηρεύειν: The active is unknown to classic Greek.

4. πισθῶσι καὶ πιστεύωσι: C. 8, 6.

6. βιοῦν: C. 10, 45.—δύνασθαι ὑποσχῶνται: Verbs of promising, considered as verbs of saying, take the fut. inf.; as verbs of will, they may take the aor. and present.

7. τῶν προημαρτημένων: Baptism was supposed to wash away all sins previously committed; hence it was often postponed in order to get a full score. See the famous passage in Augustin, Conf. 1, 11: *Sine illum faciat quod vult, nondum baptizatus est.* On the purification of baptism, comp. Clem. Alex. Paed. 1, 6, 80: πάντα μὲν οὖν ἀπολούμεθα τὰ ἁμαρτήματα, οὐκίτι εἰ ἴσμεν παρὰ πόδας κακοί, and Constt. Apostt. 2, 7: οὐ πιστεύομεν οὖν, ἀδελφοί, λουσάμενόν τινα τὸ τῆς ζωῆς λουτρὸν ἐτι πράσσειν τὰ τῶν ἀνόμων ἀσελήματα νηστεύοντες. Grabe cites Constt. Apostt. 7, 22: Otto, Tertull. De Bapt. 20.

9. ἔνθα: C. 32, 25.

10. ὃν . . . ἀνεγεννήθημεν: Cognate accusative. C. 18, 2.

11. ἐκ' ὀνόματος κτί.: The importance of this early baptismal formula (Matt. 28, 19), evident in itself, has been much insisted on by theological writers.

13. πνεύματος ἁγίου: The article omitted, because π. ἁ. may be considered a proper name.—λουτρὸν ποιοῦνται=λουῦνται: C. 1, 9.

14. Καὶ γάρ: C. 4, 12.—Ἄν μὴ . . . οὐρανῶν: John 3, 8-5. Semisch calls this citation a 'Sorgenstein' to those who deny Justin's acquaintance with the Gospel according to John. Add to the plentiful literature in Otto, Drummond, Theological Review, Oct. 1875 (quoted in Academy, Nov. 6, 1875).

15. οὐ μὴ εἰσέλθῃτε: C. 38, 9.

16. καὶ ἀδύνατον: 'Quite impossible.'

17. γενομένους: 'Born.' The margin of one MS. has γεννηθέντας, 'begotten;' Otto, γεννωμένους. The aorist is wanted.

18. ὡς προεγράψαμεν: C. 32, 45.

19. ἁμαρτήσαντες: Late for ἁμαρτόντες, which is the rule even in the LXX.

20. Δούσασθε . . . ταῦτα: Isa. 1, 16-20.

27. Καὶ λόγον δέ: On καὶ . . . εἰ, see c. 44, 25.—λόγον . . . τοῦ-

τον: 'As a reason—this,' not 'this reason,' τὸν λόγον τοῦτον. See c. 13, 7. On τοῦτον, not τόνδε, see c. 47, 4.

23. τὴν πρώτην γένεσιν: Combine with γεγενήμεθα (cognate accus.). So Otto, who compares c. 63, 5: ὅπως τὴν αἰωνίαν σωτηρίαν σωθῶμεν. In point is also the construction above: τρόπον ἀναγεννήσεως ὃν (= ἢν ἀναγίννησιν) ἀνεγεννήθημεν.

29. ἀγνοοῦντες κατ' ἀνάγκην: Balanced by μὴ ἀνάγκης τέκνα μηδὲ ἀγνοίας (Otto).

32. προαιρέσεως καὶ ἐπιστήμης: C. 43, 1.

33. ἀφίσεώς τε: On τε, see c. 21, 26.—ὑπὲρ ὧν=ὑπὲρ τούτων ᾧ: but ὑπὲρ is better omitted, so as to make ὧν=ᾧς (cogn. acc.).

34. ἐν τῷ ὕδατι ἐπονομάζεται: Comp. l. 13 (Otto).

35. ἐπὶ τοῖς ἡμαρτημένοις: Familiar use of ἐπὶ with dat. after verbs of emotion.

37. ἐπιλέγοντος τοῦ τὸν . . . ἄγοντος: So Thirlby for ἐπιλέγοντες τοῦτον . . . ἄγοντες.

38. Ὄνομα κτί.: Justin flies off in the midst of his formula.—τῷ ἁρρητῷ θεῷ: Comp. MAX. Tyr. 8, 10: 'Ὁ μὲν γὰρ θεὸς ὁ τῶν ὄντων πατὴρ καὶ δημιουργός, ὁ πρεσβύτερος μὲν ἡλίου, πρεσβύτερος δὲ οὐρανοῦ, κρείττων δὲ χρόνου καὶ αἰῶνος καὶ πάσης ρεύσεως φύσεως, ἀνώνυμος νομοδίταις καὶ ἁρρητος φωνῇ καὶ ἀόρατος ὀφθαλμοῖς.—ἔχει εἰπεῖν: C. 3, 5.—εἰ δέ τις τολμήσειεν εἶναι λέγειν: 'If any one should dare to say that it is possible (εἶναι),' namely, εἰπεῖν. On ἔστι instead of ἔξεστι, see c. 12, 40.

39. μέμνη: Differs little from μεμνηώς ἂν εἴη, and in fact this form of the conditional (εἰ with opt. in protasis, ind. in apodosis) is not very uncommon. See c. 3, 5.—τὴν ἑσῶτον μανίαν: The article of a familiar standard. See c. 18, 2. Τήν, 'what is called.'

40. φωτισμός: 'Illumination,' often used as a synonym for baptism, although it was sometimes distinguished from it, as is shown by Clem. Alex. Paed. 1. 6. 26: βαπτιζόμενοι φωτιζόμεθα, φωτιζόμενοι υἱοποιούμεθα, υἱοποιούμενοι τελειούμεθα. τελειούμενοι ἀπαθανατιζόμεθα. In Quis dives salvabitur, 43 (cited in Euseb. H. E. 3, 24, p. 79 D. S.), Clement uses ἐφώτισε in the popular sense.—ὡς φωτιζομένων: 'On the ground that.'

41. Καὶ ἐπ' ὀνόματος δέ: As if he had said before ἐπ' ὀνόματος τοῦ πατρὸς.

42. ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου : C. 13, 15.

43. πνεύματος ἁγίου : See l. 13.

44. τὰ κατὰ τὸν Ἰησοῦν : This use of κατὰ becomes more and more common. — ὁ φωτιζόμενος : The candidate. After baptism ὁ φωτισθεὶς, ὁ πεφωτισμένος (Otto).

45. λούεται : Dainty editors would exclude the open form from Attic.

#### 62. BAPTISM IMITATED BY THE DEMONS.

2. κεκηρυγμένον : C. 11, 1. — ἐνήργησαν : C. 5, 13.

4. προσίναμι αὐτοῖς : C. 16, 24. Αὐτοῖς ἱερεῖς, the gods. — λαίβας καὶ κνίσας : C. 24, 10.

5. τέλειον : 'Thoroughly,' often in Clem. Alex. Νεκροὶ ἄρα τέλειον ὄντες, Protr. 3, 45; ἀγαλμάτων τέλειον κωφῶν, 4, 51; τέλειον νυδοί, 11, 115. Also E. ad D. 2, 26. — ἐπιόντας : So Hagen and Otto (3) for ἀπιόντας.

6. Καὶ γάρ : Here 'for also.'

7. τὸ ὑπολύεσθαι κτε. : Τό with κελεύεσθαι, on which ὑπολύεσθαι depends. 'This matter of the worshippers' being ordered.' Comp. Tertull. Apol. 40: *Nudipedalia populo denuntiatis*. — τοῖς ἱεροῖς : See c. 3, 9. Ἐπιβαίνειν more commonly takes the genitive. — προσιόντας αὐτοῖς : The MSS. have simply τοῖς αὐτοῖς, hardly correct, although it may be made to refer to the demons (Grabe). Various emendations have been proposed, such as τοῖς ναοῖς (Sylb.); τὸ αὐτό οἱ τοῖς ἀδύτοις (Thirlb.); τοῖς τουούτοις (Braun). I have ventured to write προσιόντας αὐτοῖς. Comp. the preceding sentence.

8. τοῖς θρησκευόντας : See Ep. ad D. 1, 4.

10. Κατ' ἐκεῖνο . . . τοῦ καιροῦ : C. 17, 3.

12. ποιμαίνοντες αὐτοῦ : Free handling of the gen. absolute instead of ποιμαίνοντι agreeing with αὐτῷ, fully justified by the necessity of the passage and by classical usage. Comp. c. 11, 3.

13. ἀρραβικῇ : So Justin spells uniformly. — τοῦ πρὸς μητρὸς θεῖου : 'His uncle on the mother's side.' One of Justin's not infrequent slips. He is thinking of Jacob.

14. ὁ ἡμέτερος Χριστός : C. 48, 2.

15. Ὑπόλυσαι . . . ἀκουσον : Ex. 3, 5.

17. ἀκήκοις : We should expect ἤκουσε. See c. 33, 17. — κατελεθεῖν=ἔτι δεῖ κατελεθεῖν, on the principle that in oratio obliqua the

imperative is represented by the infinitive. The editors regard it as an aor. inf. for a future.

21. ἐκ τῶν συγγραμμάτων ἐκείνου: The normal form would be τῶν ἐκείνου, and τῶν may have been omitted, owing to the final -των of συγγραμμάτων. But comp. c. 4, 34: ἐκείνων τὰ διδάγματα, B. 6, 6.

### 63. GOD'S APPEARING TO MOSES.

2. λαλεῖναι=ᾧτι λελάληκε: C. 5, 10.

3. τοῦ προεμνη. προφ.: Cc. 32. 33. 35. 37. 47. 53. 61.

4. ὡς προσγράψαμεν: C. 37, 3.

5. Ἔγω . . . συνέηκε: Isa. 1, 3.

7. Καὶ Ἰησοῦς δέ: C. 32, 45. So twice below.

9. Οὐδεὶς ἔγω . . . ὁ θεός: Matt. 11, 27. Keim with Otto thinks that Justin had John 16, 3 in mind as well.

11. προέφημεν: Cc. 21, 1; 22, 5; 23, 7; 32, 40.

12. ἀπόστολος: See c. 12, 34. Comp. Hebr. 3, 1.

14. καὶ αὐτοὶ: *Et ipse*.—Ὁ ἐμοῦ ἀκούων . . . ἀποστειλαντὶς με: Matt. 10, 40; Luke 10, 6.

17. Καὶ ἐλάλησε . . . λαόν μου: Ex. 3, 2. 6. 10. 14. 15.

21. ἐξ ἐκείνων=τῶν συγγραμμάτων.

22. ἀναγράψαι: Aorist on account of the negative. C. 4, 10.

28. οὕτως οἱ λόγοι: See c. 47, 4.

25. ἐν εἰκόνι ἀσωμάτων: 'In the likeness of incorporeal beings' (angels). It were more natural to read with Maran ἀσωμάτων, especially as we have εἰκόνος ἀσωμάτων below.

26. νῦν δέ: That is, in the Christian dispensation.

28. ὅσα . . . διατεθῆναι: Comp. c. 9, 9. Διατεθῆναι=παθεῖν.

29. Οἴτινες: C. 38, 15.

31. Ἐγὼ . . . Ἰακώβ: Ex. 3, 2. 14, 15.

35. Ἰσραὴλ . . . συνέηκε: Isa. 1, 3.

37. Οὐδεὶς . . . ἀποκαλύψῃ: Matt. 11, 27.

40. ὄντος υἱοῦ κτλ.: 'Whereas he was the Son of God.'

42. ἐλέγχονται . . . ὡς . . . ἔγνωσαν: Familiar personal construction for ἐλέγχεται ὡς.

44. φέσκοντες εἶναι: C. 19, 18.—ἐλέγχονται μήτε . . . ἐπιστάμενοι: On the participle, see c. 3, 8; on the neg. c. 9, 4.

46. ὅς λόγος καὶ πρ.: So Otto. The MSS. have ὅς καὶ λόγος.

49. τῆς ἡμετέρας ἀρχῆς: The Roman Empire.

50. ὡς προσέκομεν: C. 23.—διὰ παρθένου: C. 22, 15.

52. ἐξουθενθῆναι = ἐξουθενωθῆναι: Οὐδὲν comes in with Aristotle and Theophrastus. 'Εξουθενώ (τω) is more common even in the LXX. The whole group is late.—ἵνα . . . νικήσῃ: C. 33, 8.

54. Ἐγώ . . . σου: Ex. 3, 14.

56. καὶ ἀποθανόντας: 'Though.'

57. Χριστοῦ: Comp. Matt. 22, 32.—καὶ γάρ: C. 4, 12.

58. περὶ . . . ζήτησιν ἡσχολήθησαν: Περί τι of acting and working, περί τινος of saying and thinking. 'Ἀσχολεῖσθαι περί τι is common at this period (Plutarch, Lucian). Comp. Max. Tyr. 8, 4; Clem. Alex. Paedag. 2, 1, 10.

#### 64. OTHER TRAVESTIES OF SCRIPTURE BY THE DEMONS.

1. Καὶ . . . δέ: C. 32, 35.—τὸ ἀνταγείρειν κτί.: 'And that the demons instigated the crection of the image.'—τὸ εἶδωλον τῆς λεγομένης Κόρης: Koré (Persephoné) is often associated with water. She was playing with the daughters of Oceanus (Hymn. in Cerer. 5) when she was carried off by Pluto (Hades), and the Orphic poets transferred the scene from Enna to mid-ocean. Her mother, Demeter, was worshipped at fountains, and the Naiads are often attendants of the Twain Deities (τῷ θεῷ).

6. ὡς προσεγράψαμεν: C. 59.—Ἐν ἀρχῇ . . . ἰδάτων: Gen. 1, 1.

9. λεχθέντος ἐπιφερομένου: Otto ποιεῖ edits ἐπιφέρεισθαι, and comp. c. 60, 22. But see c. 50, 35. For the thought Otto adduces Porphy. De Antro Nymph. 10: Νύμφας δὲ Ναΐδας λέγομεν καὶ τὰς τῶν ὑδάτων προεστῶσας δυνάμεις . . . διὰ τοῦτο λέγων [Νουμένιος] καὶ τὸν προφήτην εἰρηκίνει ἐπιφέρεισθαι ἐπάνω τοῦ ὑδάτος θεοῦ πνεῦμα.

10. τ. Κόρ. θυγατέρα τοῦ Δ.: By Στυγ, according to Apollod. Bibl. 1, 3.

11. Καὶ τὴν Ἀθηνᾶν δέ: C. 32, 35. See Hes. Theog. 889 sq.—πονηρεύμενοι: See c. 61, 3.

12. ἐννοηθέντα: 'Having conceived the idea.'

15. παραφέρειν: 'Adduce;' perhaps, sneeringly, 'dish up.' Comp. Eur. I. A. 981: αἰσχύνομαι εἰ παραφέρουσ' (as it were dragging in) οἰκτροὺς λόγους.

#### 65. ADMINISTRATION OF THE SACRAMENTS.

2. συγκατατεθειμένον: C. 39, 19. A common word in Origen.

Verh. 1, 126:   
 π. 22, 35, 36   
 cf. 6, 13, 14

3. κοινὰς εὐχάς: Specimens in Constt. Apostt. 8, 9 sqq.

4. ποιησόμενοι: C. 1, 9.—*ἑαυτῶν*=*ἡμῶν αὐτῶν*: C. 13, 7.—*φωτισθέντος*: C. 61, 40.

5. εὐτόνως: *Intento animo*. Emphatic position of the adverb. Comp. Ep. Eccl. Vienn. et Lugd. ap. Euseb. H. E. 5, 1, 41: *διὰ τῆς εὐτόνου προσευχῆς*.—*ὅπως καταξιώθωμεν*=*καταξιωθῆναι*: "Ὅπως is sometimes used, like *ut* in Latin, after verbs of will and power (verbs of creation, auxiliary verbs), parallel with the inf. So in classic authors; Isac. 7, 27: *ἐπακελεύεσθαι ὅπως* . . .; Lycurg. 127: *παρακελεύεσθαι ὅπως*. The use of *ἵνα* with the subj. for an inf. is familiar to every student of the N. T. See Winer, § 44, 8. So Dial. c. T. 30: *αἰτοῦμεν ἵνα* . . .; Athenag. Suppl. 37, 173: *εὐχόμεθα ἵνα* . . .

6. πολιτευταί: A late word from *πολιτεύεσθαι*, in the sense of conducting one's self—a very common meaning in later Greek. Comp. Dial. c. T. 45.

7. ὅπως τὴν αἰώνιον σωτηρίαν σωθῶμεν: On the cognate accusative, comp. c. 18, 2; on the article of the standard, c. 61, 39. Elsewhere Justin uses *αἰωνία* (fem.), not usual in classic prose.

8. φιλήματι: This form of Christian salutation was confined to persons of the same sex. Doubtless misrepresented by the heathen.

9. Ἐπειτα κτί.: Here we have an account of the first communion, below of the Sunday communion (Augusti).—*τῷ προστάτῃ*: *Non tangenda rada*. See Harnack's note on Clem. Rom. 1 Ep. ad Cor. 1, 3.

10. ὕδατος καὶ κρέματος: Otto explains *kai* as epexegetic *et quidem*; *calix aquae et quidem vini aqua mixti*. But *κράμα* seems to be rather a popular synonym for wine. Comp. Plut. Mor. 140 F: *ὥσπερ τὸ κράμα, καίτοι ὕδατος μετίχον πλεῖθος, οἶνον καλοῦμεν*. On the *κράμα*, see Clem. Alex. Paed. 1, 6, 47; 2, 2, 20. The three elements are mentioned by other Fathers (Otto).

11. αἶνον καὶ δόξαν: C. 41, 8.

13. ἀναπέμπει: Comp. c. 67, 15 and Orig. c. Cels. 5, 4. 7. 44; 8, 34. 74.

14. ἐπὶ πολὺ: 'At length.'—*ποιεῖται*: C. 1, 9.

16. γένοιτο: Our 'so be it.'

20. τοῖς οὐ παρούσιν: On the negative, see c. 4, 9.

where *οὐ* has *ὅπως ἐγγερόφους*  
*παραδίδω*

## 66. THE EUCHARIST.

1. εὐχαριστία: By metonymy.
2. μετασχεῖν: Aor. on account of negative.—ἔξόν ἐστιν: C. 3, 9.
4. λουσαμένῳ τὸ . . . λουτρόν: C. 18, 2.
5. παρέδωκεν: C. 4, 22.—Οὐ γὰρ ὡς κοινὸν ἔρπον κτί.: This passage is a noted battle-field of the champions of transubstantiation, consubstantiation, and commemoration (Church of Rome, Lutherans, Zwinglians).
7. ἐν τρώπον: C. 4, 22.
9. ἔσχεν: 'Took upon him.' Ingressive aor. As the ingressive aorist is, naturally enough, most frequently found in denominative verbs, it is generally the first aorist. Still ἔσχεν is very common in this sense.—δὲ εὐχῆς λόγον τοῦ παρ' αὐτοῦ: Commonly understood of the prayer or blessing pronounced by Christ at the time of instituting the Eucharist. The preposition παρὰ points to the παραδόσεις, 'the transmitted word of prayer,' now become a formula. Comp. c. 13, 4.
10. σάρκες: C. 26, 84.
12. ἰδιόχρησμεν εἶναι: 'That.' C. 21, 30.
13. ἀπομνημονεύμασιν: See Introduction, xxxv.—ἀ . . . εὐαγγέλια: Suspected by some of being a gloss. But, as Otto observes, this would involve a gloss in Dial. c. T. cc. 10. 100.
15. Τοῦτο ποιεῖτε . . . τὸ αἶμά μου: Luke 22, 19; Matt. 26, 26-28; Mark 14, 24. The order is changed, for which no subtle reason is to be sought.
19. Μίθρα: The sun-god of the Persians figures largely among the new deities of this epoch, having come into vogue under Hadrian. Hence Lucian (Deor. Concil. 9) says that he has not learned to talk Greek: ὁ Μίθρης ἐκείνος ὁ Μῆδος ὁ τὴν κἀνδυν καὶ τὴν τάραν οὐδὲ ἑλληνίζων τῇ φωνῇ, ὥστε οὐδε ἦν προσιγ τις ξυνίησι. Mithras was the god of Julian the Apostate. Tertull. (Praescrip. Haer. c. 40) seems to be the only other author to mention the use of bread in the Mithraic mysteries.

## 67. FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK.

1. λοιπόν: C. 3, 21.
2. οἱ ἔχοντες: A common Greek phrase 'the well-to-do' = οἱ εὖ-

πορουντες below. Harnack (quoted by Otto) sees a reference to the ἀγάπαι.—τοῖς λειπομένοις: 'Those who fall behind' the others, 'those that lack.' Comp. Jas. 1, 4: ἐν μηδενὶ λειπόμενοι: 2, 15: λειπόμενοι τῆς ἡμέρου τροφῆς.

8. σύνισμεν: 'We keep up familiar intercourse with one another.'

4. 'Επὶ πᾶσι . . . προσφερόμεθα: C. 13, 4.

6. τῇ τοῦ ἡλίου λεγομένη ἡμέρᾳ: Sunday. The date of the introduction (from Egypt?) into Greece and Rome of the astronomical nomenclature of the days of the week is uncertain. Justin mentions Sunday and Saturday so familiarly that the terms must have been common in his time. On the nomenclature itself, see the *locus classicus* in Dio Cassius, 37, 18. 19 and Arago, Popular Astronomy, 2, 722 (Engl. Tr.). Well worth reading is the quaint chapter in Sir Thomas Browne's *Vulgar Errors* (Book 5, ch. 22). Mr. R. A. Proctor has recently treated the subject in the *Contemporary Review* for March, 1875 (Saturday and the Sabbath of the Jews), and in a popular lecture on astrology. He says: 'Dividing the day into twenty-four hours, and regarding these as ruled over in succession by the planets in the order of their distances (according to the old system), viz., Saturn, Jupiter, Mars, the Sun, Venus, Mercury, and the Moon, it will be found that if the first hour of one day be ruled by the Sun, the first hour of the next will be ruled by the Moon, the first hour of the next by Mars, of the next by Mercury, the next by Jupiter, then Venus, and of the next by Saturn, and so to the Sun again. Hence the order of the seven days—the Sun's day (*Solis dies*), the Moon's day, Mars' day (*Martis dies*, *Mardi*), Mercury's day (*Mercurii dies*, *Mercredi*), Jove's day (*Jovis dies*, *Jeudi*), Venus's day (*Veneris dies*, *Vendredi*), and Saturn's day (*Saturni dies*), Saturday, or the Sabbath of the Jews, a day of rest with the Egyptians, because an unlucky day for any sort of work, as ruled over by the malefic planet Saturn.' See a criticism by W. R. Smith in *Nature* for March 11, 1875. It may be worth noticing that in the Mithraic mysteries the same order of the planets occurs reversed, Orig. c. Cels. 8, 22. On the *πλανῆται δαίμονες*, see Tatian ad Gr. 9 and comp. Clem. Alex. Protrept. 5, 66: Ξενοκράτης Καρχηδόνιος οὗτος ἐπὶ τὰ θεοὺς τοὺς πλανήτας αἰνίττεται.

L

From de divagates into this subject in his "Cassius".

Seven signs names of the seven planets or stars  
on the line map photo. 2.7 3.42



7. συνέλευσις: C. 40, 18.

8. τὰ ἀπορημονεύματα κτλ.: The reading of these Memoirs of the Apostles in the Church of Justin's day is considered a weighty argument in favor of their identity with our Gospels. As Irenaeus, Clement, and Tertullian quote our Gospels, the negative theory requires us to believe that in the short interval 'an entire change of Gospels was made throughout all the different and distant provinces of the Roman empire at a time when concerted action through general councils was unknown, and that, too, in so silent a manner that no record of it remains in the history of the Church.'

9. μέχρις ἰσχυρῆ: 'So long as time permits' (Otto). The MSS. have ἰσχυρεῖ, but in the matter of *η* and *αι* MSS. have little weight, and I have restored the normal subjunctive. See c. 8, 19. On the omission of *αν*, see c. 85, 2.

10. τοῦ ἀναγινώσκοντος: The Hebrew 'reader,' ἀναγνώστης, survived in the Christian Church.

11. διὰ λόγον: Contrast to the ἀνάγνωσις.

13. εὐχὰς πέμπομεν: So below, ἀνατίμπομεν. See c. 65, 13.—  
ὡς προέφημεν: C. 65.

15. ὅση δύναμις: Cc. 13, 5; 53, 27. Not 'with all his might,' but 'as ability is given him' (Otto). Δυνατὸς λέγειν does not refer to power of lung. Otto comp. the eucharistic formula in Constt. Apostol. 8, 12: Εὐχαριστοῦμέν σοι, θεὲ παντοκράτορ, οὐχ ὅσον ὀφείλομεν, ἀλλ' ὅσον ἐυνάμεθα.

19. Οἱ εὐποροῦντες . . . γίνεται: Otto comp. c. 14, 14 and Tertull. Apol. 39.

20. προαίρεσιν . . . τὴν ἑαυτοῦ: This position (c. 6, 7) is especially common with the possessives. So in Herodotus.

21. ἀποτίθεται: C. 18, 5.

23. λειπομένοις: As above, l. 2.

24. παρεπιδήμοις . . . ξένοις: Hebr. 11, 13: Ξίνοι καὶ παρεπιδημοὶ εἰσιν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς.—ἀπλῶς: 'In short.' Combined with συντόμως in Plut. Vit. p. 1015 E. A very common use, especially at this period.

25. κηδεμὼν γίνεται: Γ. 'acts as.'—Τὴν . . . τοῦ ἡλίου ἡμέραν: We might expect the dat. as above, but the acc. as the general adverbial case may be used of the time when. Comp. σήμερον,

and even in classic Gr. Dem. 54, 10: *ικείνην τὴν ἱστίαν*, 'on and for that evening;' Herod. 8, 86: *ταύτην τὴν ἡμέραν*.

30. *ἦτις*: C. 38, 15.

32. *ἔπερ*: C. 12, 38.—*ἀνεδώκαμεν*=*ἀνίδομεν*. The third person plural of the first aor. is more common than the first person. The second aorist, however, is the rule in the plural—which Veitch does not seem to bring out distinctly.

#### 68. CONCLUSION.

1. *Λόγον καὶ ἀληθείας ἔχεισθαι*: 'Accord with reason and truth.' A familiar Platonic turn, as in De Rep. 9, 585 C: *πράγμα ἀληθείας ἔχόμενον*. Comp. Athenag. Res. 1, 1.

2. *τιμήσατε . . . καταφρονήσατε*: Come to a decision about it. See c. 16, 6.

4. *τῶν μηδὲν κτί.*: C. 4, 9.

5. *Προλέγομεν*: C. 14, 1.

6. *ἐπιβοήσομεν*: In Attic *ἐπιβοησόμεθα*.

7. *Ὁ φίλον . . . γενέσθω*: Otto comp. Plat. Crito, 43 D; Apol. 19 A; Phaedr. 246 D.

9. *ἔχοντες*: 'Although.' C. 7, 8.—*ἀπαυτεῖν*: C. 2, 12.

11. *ἡξιώσαμεν*: Epistolary tense.

12. *τὴν προσφώνησιν . . . πεποιήμεθα*: C. 1, 9.

13. *ἐπιστολῆς*: So for *ἀποστολῆς*, Euseb. H. E. 4, 8, who cites this passage.

14. *ἀληθεύειν . . . γνωρίζετε*: The sequence is regular, as the aorist is epistolary, hence=present, but comp. c. 33, 8.

#### RESCRIPT OF HADRIAN.

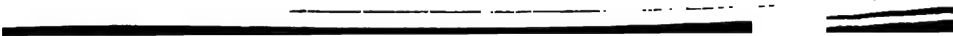
Justin presented to the Antonines a copy (*ἀντίγραφον*) of Hadrian's rescript in the original Latin. Eusebius, who cites this passage (l. c.), has translated it into Greek. The Latin form is preserved by Rufinus, and has the place of honor in the editions of Otto and Trollope. The genuineness of this document has generally been conceded, but Overbeck (Studien, S. 137 fgg.) has recently revived Keim's objections.

19. *Σερηνίου*: Probably corrupt for *Σερήνου*.

35. *βοαῖς*: Refers to the popular cries, *Christianos ad leonem*, Tertull. Apol. 40 (p. 96 D. S.).



## THE SECOND APOLOGY.



THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

1950

1

## THE SECOND APOLOGY.

---

According to Eusebius (H. E. 4, 16) the Second Apology was addressed to Marcus Aurelius and Lucius Verus, and this is the opinion of many critics, including Semisch. In his last edition Otto has changed his mind, and sides with those who have followed the lead of Grabe, Pearson, Thirlby, and Neander, in assigning the Second Apology, as well as the First, to the reign of Antoninus Pius.

Indeed, there are passages in the Apology itself which must be elaborately explained away, if the statement of Eusebius is to be defended. In the second chapter, a Christian, remonstrating against the sentence passed by Lollius Urbicus, the prefect of the city, cries: 'Thy judgment, Urbicus, does not become the pious Emperor, nor the philosopher, son of Caesar, nor the sacred senate.' And at the close Justin prays that the Emperors may give a decision worthy of their piety and their philosophy. Now, even if we do not accept Ueberweg's plausible conjecture (c. 2, 55), it certainly requires a strain to identify Marcus Aurelius with the pious Emperor—for Marcus was never called *Pius* in his lifetime (Aubé); and the philosophy of Verus, despite the official title, would hardly have been appealed to by a man so much in earnest as was our Martyr. See Aubé, l. c. (pp. 66-76), and notice among the recent adherents of the earlier date of this Apology, Overbeck, Studien, 1, S. 117.

---

## ANALYSIS OF THE SECOND APOLOGY.\*

In the exordium of the Second Apology Justin declares that wicked men and demons unite to murder the Christians (c. 1); and to prove this he adduces the account of three persons who a few days before had been punished—two of them with death—for confessing the name of Christ (c. 2). Indeed, Justin affirms that he himself expects to suffer a like doom from the machinations of his enemy, Crescens, a Cynic philosopher, or rather philosopser (c. 3).

The Gentiles, seeing the contempt of the Christians for death, would say: Why do you not put yourselves to death in order that you may go the more speedily to your God, instead of giving us the trouble of executing you? Justin gives the reason why the Christians do not resort to suicide, and yet fearlessly confess Christ (c. 4). Why does God suffer you to be killed? Justin answers this question, and defends the justice of God and the innocence of the brethren.

I. He defends the justice of God. God gave the angels the care of mankind; but the angels fell from their first estate, and scattered the seeds of crime among men (c. 5). God's remedy for this was His Son, the Logos. How crushed the demons are before the Logos is shown by the fact that the Christians everywhere drive out demons by the name of Jesus Christ (c. 6). The world, then, is preserved for the sake of the Christians, and the demons are not yet punished, but they will be sent into everlasting fire when the great conflagration takes place; a conflagration, however, be it noted, which will not happen by

---

\* In this Analysis, as in the other, I follow Otto.

fate, because fate leaves room neither for liberty nor for virtue (c. 7).

II. He shows the innocence of the Christians from the persecutions themselves.

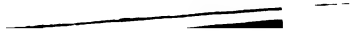
1. If those have always been hateful to the demons, whosoever have had a glimmering of truth from the Spermatic Logos, how much more must the Christians be hated, who embrace the whole truth in the Incarnate Logos and foretell the eternal punishment that awaits the demons (c. 9). And the Christians are hated not only on this account, but also because Christ has enabled unlearned men to acquire the true doctrine, and to follow the course of life that proceeds from the true doctrine (c. 10).

2. The sublime firmness of Christians under persecution shows that they have attained the true ideal of virtue (c. 11).

3. Nothing is better suited than persecution to repel all suspicion of crime, for Christians would not meet death so readily if they lived as the heathen report them to live (c. 12). The Christian doctrine is far above even the doctrine of Plato (c. 13).

Finally, Justin asks the Emperors to give their sanction to this memorial (c. 14), and to judge righteous judgment (c. 15).





## NOTES.

**ΔΕΥΤΕΡΑ**: Is not in the MSS. and is now omitted by Otto. Some of the older editors put this Apology before the longer document. That it is the later appears from Euseb. H. E. 4, 16, 1 (D. S. p. 119), although he himself calls it *προτέρα* by a slip (Otto).

### 1. INTRODUCTION.

1. **Καὶ τὰ χθὲς τε καὶ πρῶην**: So I have written with Braun for *ῥι*, which Otto justifies (after Sylburg) on the ground of its abrupt vehemence. See my note on Persius, 3, 1, and comp. Xen. Oec. init.: Ἦκουσα ῥι ποτε κτλ.; Apol. Socr. init.: Σωκράτους ῥι ἀξιον μοι δοκεῖ εἶναι κτλ. Some commentators have seen in *ῥι* an intimation of a connection with the former Apology. For the very common phrase *χθὲς τε καὶ πρῶην*, see the LXX: *χθὲς καὶ τρίτην ἡμέραν* (πρὸ τῆς τρίτης ἡμέρας) is the LXX equivalent for the Hebrew *הֵרִי וְהַיּוֹם הַשְּׁלִישִׁי*, *heri et nudius tertius*. Comp. Athenag. Suppl. 17, 68.

2. **Οὐρβίκου**: Urbicus, consul (most probably twice) and prefect of the city under Antoninus Pius. Aubé thinks that he died in office, Saint-J. p. 71.—**ῥωμαῖοι**: This Apology, like the former, was addressed not only to the emperors, but to the Senate and people of Rome (c. 14, 2: τοῖς ἄλλοις). Otto.

4. **ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν**: Others with the MSS. *ὑμῶν*. In the choice between *ἡμῶν* and *ὑμῶν* we must be guided by the sense. The transcribers often blunder.—**ὁμοιοπαθῶν**: See c. 10, 26.

6. **σύνταξιν**: So Sylburg. The MSS. have *σύνταξιν*. *Σύνταξιν ποιήσασθαι*=*συντάξει*. See A 1, 9.

7. **Πανταχοῦ κτλ.**: The sentence is extremely awkward, and it is not surprising that editors should have resorted to conjecture and lacuna. The two elements of opposition are the offended

connections of the Christians and the demons. These are separated by a double parenthesis, which obscures the sense. The kernel of the sentence may be thus expressed: *πανταχοῦ ὡς ἂν σωφρονίζηται κατ' ἄλλωσιν διὰ τὸ δυσμετάζετον καὶ οἱ φαῦλοι δαίμονες ἰχθραίνοντες ἡμῖν καὶ [κακοῦς] δικαστὰς ὑποχειρίους ἔχοντες φονεῦν ἡμᾶς παρασκευάζουσι*. Incorrigible sinners infuriated by our rebukes and evil spirits inflamed with hatred are our bitterest foes, and are endeavoring to compass our murder, wherein the demons are aided by the wicked judges whom they have at their beck.

8. κατ' ἄλλωσιν: 'By reason of a failure in duty.'

9. χωρὶς τῶν πεισθέντων κτί.: Christians when rebuked take it patiently.

11. συγγενή σ ε σθαι: So Otto for *συγγενίσθαι*, to match *κολασθήσθαι*.

12. λέγομεν δὲ τῶν γενομένων X.: See A 59, 1.

14. τοῖς τοιοῦτοις: Such as Urbicus. The article points the reference.

16. παρασκευάζουσιν: By means of others. The active is often used of subornation.

## 2. URBICUS.

1. Γυνή . . . προσετιμήθη: This passage is cited by Euseb. H. E. 4, 17, 2 (p. 120, D. S.). All between the words *Ἐπεὶ δὲ τὰ τοῦ X. διδάγματα ἔγνων* and l. 53, *προσωνυμίαν κτί.*, is wanting in our MSS. of Justin, and has been supplied from Eusebius.—*συνεβίου = συνίζη*: See A 16, 27.

2. καὶ αὐτῇ: 'Likewise.'

4. σωφρονεῖν παῖθαι: A 8, 8.—τὰ διδάγματα: Sc. τοῦ Χριστοῦ.

5. ἀναφέρουσα: 'Citing.'—τοῖς οὐ σωφρόνως: On the neg. see A 4, 17.—*μετὰ λόγον ὁρθοῦ*: C. 7, 29: *κατὰ λόγον τὸν ὁρθόν*. In c. 9, 19, Christ is the *λόγος ὁρθός* (Otto).

7. ἀσελγείαις: A 4, 32.—*ἄλλοτριαν* . . . *ἐποιεῖτο*: 'Alienated.'

8. γαμετήν: In model Attic *γαμετή* is treated chiefly as an adjective. It is not used simply as 'wife,' but with the force of 'wedded wife.'

10. πόρους . . . ποιῆσθαι=πορίζεσθαι: A 1, 9.

12. *ἐξεδυσωπεῖτο*: *Δυσωπεῖν*, in the sense of 'shaming one into measures,' 'urge,' is a common word in post-classic writers. On the imperf., see A 31, 14.—τῶν αὐτῆς: See A 21, 28.

13. ὥς . . . ἤγοντος=ληγόντων ὥς ἤξει: A 4, 18.

15. Ἀλεξάνδρειαν: The naughtiness of Alexandria was proverbial. Halloix aptly quotes Quintil. Inst. Or. 1, 2, 7: *Gaudemus si quid licentius dixerint, verba ne Alexandrinis quidem permittenda deliciis risu et oculo excipimus*. See the famous letter of Hadrian in Vopiscus, Saturn. 8: *Genus hominum seditiosissimum, canissimum, iniuriosissimum*. It is often coupled with Antioch, both remarkable for the turbulence of the population, both of the greatest importance as early centres of Christianity. See Auson. Clar. Urb. 3.

16. ὅπως μὴ . . . γίνηται: On the sequence, see A 33, 8.

18. ὁμοδίαυτος καὶ ὁμόκοιτος: 'Sharing his bed and board.' For ὁμοδίαυτος, see A 14, 17.

19. βραχυδίον: The short u in Latin as well as the long is regularly represented by ου.

20. καλὸς κάγαθος: Often used in irony, as Andoc. 1, 133.—δίον: 'Whereas.' C. 4, 22.

21. εὐχερῶς: 'Lightly,' 'readily.'

22. τούτων μὲν: Μὲν without εἰ, and without an equivalent of εἰ. However, καὶ αὐτόν answers as an antithesis.

23. πέπαιτο: The syllabic augment of the pluperfect is often omitted even in Attic.

24. μὴ βουλομένου: The subject of the genitive absolute is not unfrequently omitted. A 8, 5. But βουλομένου may depend on ἀπαλλαγίσης. Stephanus suggests μὴ βουλόμενον, more elegant, less Justinian. —κατηγορίαν πεποιήται: On π., see A 1, 9. On the perf., A 83, 17; 62, 17.

25. βιβλίδιον: A 29, 6.

26. ἀναδεδωκε: A 29, 7. We might expect the aor., which some MSS. and editors have, but the memorial is still of record.

29. διοίκησιν: Some read, after διοίκησιν, ἐπίσχετο.

30. πρὸς ἐκείνην μὲν: The antithesis is not expressed.

31. ἐκολάσατο: The aor. middle is rather rare. Veitch cites Thuc. 6, 78; Plat. Menex. 240. Κολάσαισθε has been smuggled by some editors into Xen. An. 2, 5, 13.

35. αὐτὸ τοῦτο μόνον: 'Only this and nothing more.' Comp. Tertull. Apol. 2 (p. 29 D. S.): *Illud solum expectatur, confessio nominis, non examinatio criminis*.

37. ἀλλ' οὐκ: The Greek often says 'but not,' where we say 'and not.' On the climax by litotes, see A 22, 10.

38. ἑαυτὸν εἶναι X.: When the subject of the infinitive is the same as the subject of the leading verb, the reflexive is not expressed except for especial reasons—which we are not to hunt up in an author like Justin.

41. εἰ εἴη: Optative in oratio obliqua, of which Justin has made little use.

42. συνεπιστάμενος: Συνειδώς is far more common. Comp. c. 4, 18: ἰξεταζόμενοι δὲ οὐκ ἀρνούμεθα διὰ τὸ συνεπιστάσθαι ἑαυτοῖς μηδὲν φαῦλον.

47. ὃν οὐδὲν-πρόσιστι κτλ.: Comp. a similar curt relative clause, A 10, 25.—ἀληθινῶ: 'Genuine.'

48. ἀπαχθῆναι: A 31, 26.

50. πρὸς τὸν Οὐρβ.: The person to whom discourse is addressed is put in πρὸς with accus. So regularly with εἰπεῖν. The stress on the direction makes the difference from the dative.—Τίς ἢ αἰτία; Τοῦ τὸν κτλ.: Various written. Some read τίς ἢ αἰτία τοῦ . . . ἐκολάσω, and charge the anacoluthon to Justin, who is supposed to have finished the sentence as if he had begun with διὰ τίνα αἰτίαν. Some editors mend Justin's grammar by writing the inf. κολάσαι: others put εἰ ἦν for τοῦ (τίς ἢ αἰτία εἰ ἦν). Τοῦ seems to be=τίνος (χάριν). Otto comp. Dial. c. T. 20; add Eur. Ion, 1360. On κολάζειν with gen., see Thuc. 2, 74; 6, 38. I have added τόν, and consider τοῦτον τὸν ἀνθρώπον as resumptive.

54. εὐσεβεῖ κτλ.: Comp. A 1, 11. Ueberweg (ap. Otton.) conjectures Εὐσεβεῖ Αὐτοκράτ. (A. Pius) οὐδὲ φιλοσόφῳ (M. Aurel.) οὐδὲ Καίσαρος παιδί (Verus).

56. Καὶ δέ: A remnant of Attic idiom.

60. ἀπηλλάχθαι γνώσκων: Γινώσκω as a verb of thinking (γνώμη, 'opinion') takes the inf.; 'convinced that.' Euseb. has ἐκείπε.

61. τὸν σὺρανῶν: Suspicious. Euseb. has τὸν θεόν.

62. Καὶ . . . δέ: A 32, 45.

### 3. JUSTIN AND CRESCENS.

Maran was the first editor to put this chapter here instead of between the end of c. 8: ὁ ἡμέτερος διδάσκαλος, and the beginning

of c. 9: ἵνα δὲ μή τις εἴπῃ. His reasons are: 1. This is the order in which Eusebius (and Rufinus) found the chapters; 2. The subject fits in here, and interrupts the discourse there.

1. Κἀγὼ οὖν κτί.: Cited by Euseb. H. E. 4, 16, 3 (p. 119, D. S.). —προσδοκῶ . . . ἐπιβουλεύθῃναι: On the aor., see A 12, 23.

2. ξύλῳ ἐμπαγῆναι: 'To be fastened in the stocks.' Comp. Acts 16, 24. Euseb. has ἰντιναγῆναι. The translations 'impaled,' 'crucified,' 'bastinadoed,' are less likely. Braun identifies the ξύλον with the κύφων, for which see the lexicons. —καί = καί, which Euseb. has. See A 2, 7.

3. Κρίσκαντος: Crescens (pr. Crēscēns). On I = ε, see A 4, 4. The nom. is Κρίσκης. So Κλήμης = Clēmēns. The e-sound has been lengthened by the durative group -ns, and finally absorbs the n. So *formosus*, fr. *formoneus*. Tatian, Justin's disciple, has much harm to say of this person, ad Gr. 19: Κρίσκης ἐν ὁ ἰννεοτεύσας τῇ μεγάλῃ πόλει, παιδεραστείᾳ μὲν πάντας ὑπερήνεγκεν, φιλαργυρίᾳ δὲ πάνν προσεχῆς ἦν. Θανάτου δὲ ὁ καταφρονῶν οὕτως αὐτὸς (so I read for αὐτὸν) ἰεῖεῖν τὸν θάνατον ὡς καὶ Ἰουστίνον, καθάπερ καὶ ἐμὲ, ὡς κακῇ τῇ θανάτῳ περιβαλεῖν πραγματεύσασθαι ἐπὶ.—φιλοψόφου: Coined for the occasion by Justin himself. Euseb. has ἀφιλοσόφου. Only persons of delicate intellectual habit and feeble intellectual grasp will be shocked nowadays at Justin's levity in making a wretched pun at this momentous crisis. Comp. Plato, Phaedo, 68 B: οὐκ ἂρ' ἦν φιλόσοφος ἀλλὰ τις φιλοσώματος.

4. δε γὰρ: A 12, 22.

5. ἃ μὴ ἐπίσταται: Μὴ is the negative of the characteristic relative (generic).—καταμαρτυρεῖ: A 4, 23.—ὡς . . . ὄντων: A 4, 19.

6. πρὸς χάριν καὶ ἡδονήν: A 2, 12.

7. Εἴτε . . . ἢ εἰ: Want of concinnity for εἴτε . . . εἴτε. Εἴτε . . . εἴτε presents a matter of indifference; one horn of the dilemma is as good as the other.

8. ἐντυχόν: A 14, 3.—τοῖς τοῦ Χρ. διδάγμασι: C. 2, 4.—κατατρέχει: So our 'run down,' A 4, 25; Clem. Alex. Paed. 1, 5, 20.

9. ἱερωτῶν: 'Unphilosophical gentry,' A 39, 10.—πολύ: Even more common than the more analogical πολλῶ (dat. of measure), which Euseb. has.

10. οὐκ ἐπίστανται: Above μὴ ἐπίσταται. The negative often shifts according to the general principle laid down A 4, 9.

11. ἐντυχὼν μὴ συνῆκε: A 14, 8.—τὸ . . . μεγαλεῖον: 'Grandeur,' greatness that makes itself felt. Acts 2, 11; Luke 1, 49; Clem. Rom. 1 Ep. ad Cor. 26: τὸ μεγαλεῖον τῆς ἰαγγελίας αὐτοῦ. Τὸ . . . μεγαλεῖον, from Euseb. for τῷ . . . μεγαλείῳ of the MSS.

14. ἑλάττων: 'Slave.'—προθέντα: So Euseb. The MSS. προσαδίντα.—Καὶ γάρ: A 4, 12.

15. ἐρωτήσαντα . . . ἐρωτήσεις: A 18, 2. The order is: βούλομαι ὑμᾶς εἰδέναι προδίντα με καὶ μαθεῖν καὶ ἐλγῆσαι ὅτι κτλ.—μαθεῖν = ὅτι ἔμαθον: A 5, 11.

16. ὅτι . . . μηδὲν ἐπίσταται: A 24, 9. The regular negative below.

17. ὅτι ἀληθῆ λέγω=ἴν' εἰσῆτε ὅτι δ. λ.: A common brachylogy. So Lys. 13, 81: ὡς ὃ ἀληθῆ λέγω, κάλει μοι τοῖς μάρτυρας.—εἰ μὴ ἀνηγγέλησαν: 'If they have not been reported to you.'—αἰ κοινωνίαι τῶν λόγων=αἰ κοινολογίαι: 'Debates.'

18. ἔτοιμος: Sc. εἰμι. We should hardly expect the omission, which is not very common in the first person.—ἐφ' ὑμῶν: A 4, 12.

19. βασιλικόν: Prov. 25, 2: It is the honor of kings to find out a matter. Comp. A 14, 24.

20. Εἰ δὲ καὶ ἐγνώσθησαν: Καὶ belongs more properly to αἰ ἐρωτήσεις. If it be taken with ἐγν., tr. 'actually.'—ὑμῖν: A 27, 18.

22. εἰ καὶ ἐπίσταται: Καί, 'really.' More elegant would be ἐπίσταται μὲν.—οὐ τολμᾷ: The condition is merely for form's sake, hence the negative οὐ. But, apart from that, when μὲν and εἰ are both in the protasis of a conditional sentence, the condition consists in the incongruity of the two co-ordinates, and οὐ is regularly found when fact is contrasted with fancy.

24. δείκνυνται: Sc. ὦν.—ὅς γε: A 12, 22.—μηδὲ . . . τιμᾷ: Characteristic and causal.

25. 'Αλλ' οὐτι γε: Plato. De Rep. 10, 503 C: ἀλλ' οὐ γὰρ πρό γε ἀληθείας τιμητίος ἀνὴρ.—οὐτι: By litotes (A 22, 10) stronger than οὐδὲν.

26. Κυνικῶ: There be Cynics and Cynics. The Cynic of Epicetetus, Marcus Aurelius, and Maximus Tyrius was a very different person from the Cynic of Lucian and Justin Martyr.—ἀδιάφορον τὸ τέλος: 'Indifference,' 'stable equilibrium.' Comp. Clem. Alex. Strom. 2, 129: τέλος οὗτος εἶναι τὴν ἀδιαφορίαν ἔφη, τὸ δὲ ἀδιάφορον ἀπλῶς ἀδιάφορον ἀπολείπει. Origen is sneering at phi-

losophers when he says, c. Cels. 4, 26: οἱ ταῖς χαμαιτύπαις ἀδισταφύρως προσιώντες, διδάσκοντες εἰ καὶ μὴ πάντως παρὰ τὸ κατ' ἑκὼν (pet term in philosophy) τοῦτο γίνεσθαι (comp. Athenag. Suppl. 32, 159).—προθεμένῳ: 'Having set up for himself.' So Nolte, and after him Otto, for προεμένῳ. Comp. Plut. Comp. Dion. 3: μόνος ἵνα προὔθετο σκοπὸν τὴν πάτριον ἀποδοῦναι Ῥωμαίους πολιτείαν.

#### 4. WHY CHRISTIANS DO NOT KILL THEMSELVES.

1. ἐαυτοὺς: A 2, 16.—φονεύσαντες: 'Kill and.' In English we do not subordinate an imperative notion.

2. ἤδη: 'Forthwith.'—παρὰ τὸν θεόν: A 8, 8.

3. πράγματα μὴ παρέχετε: 'Don't trouble us' with killing you. On παρέχειν, see A 3, 17. The editors cite by way of illustrating this common sneer, Tertull. ad Scap. 5 (D. S. p. 120): *Arrius Antoninus in Asia cum persequeretur, instanter omnes illius civitatis Christiani ante tribunalia eius se manu facta obtulerunt; tum ille, paucis duci iussis, reliquis ait: ὦ θεοὶ, εἰ θέλετε ἀποθνήσκεν, κρημνοὺς ἢ βρόχους ἔχετε.*

5. πεποιμέναι . . . δεδιδάγμεθα: Inf.=ὑπὲρ, A 21, 30.

6. ἀλλ' ἡ: A 40, 27.—διὰ τὸ ἀνθρώπειον γένος: See c. 5, 7; E. ad D. 10, 3.—χαίρειν τε: A 22, 10.

7. προέφημεν: Comp. A 10, 9. But unless the Second Apology was a mere appendix to the First, the emperors could hardly have been expected to remember the passage. Thirlby suggests προσειλήφαμεν (παρειλήφαμεν).

9. Εἰ . . . φονεύσομεν: 'If we are to,' A 8, 17.—τοῦ μὴ γεννησῆναι: An obvious correction of Sylburg's for τοῦ καί.

11. ὅσον ἐφ' ἡμῖν: A 40, 22.—ἐναντίον τῇ τοῦ θεοῦ βουλῇ: See c. 7.

12. καὶ αὐτοί: A 54, 35.—ποιούντες . . . πράττωμεν: Πράττω is a narrower word than ποιῶ, and means originally 'to bring to pass,' 'to effect.' Comp. the restricted use of πρήσσω in Homer. Ποιῶ as the more general term embraces πράττω, and may stand for it, as in Dem. 4, 5: οὐκ ἔν ἀν ὧν νῦν πεποίηκεν ἐπραξεν. Hence misapprehensions. Comp. Dem. 3, 15 and Westermann on 18, 22.

13. οὐκ ἄρνούμεθα: A 4, 24; 8, 2.—συνεπίστασθαι: C. 2, 42.

14. μηδέν: On account of the infinitive. A 2, 4.



15. φίλον: 'Ον may have been dropped by reason of neighborhood, but Justin often omits copulative participles and infinitives.

16. προλήψεως: A 2, 14.

#### 5. WHY MEN ARE IN TROUBLE. THE EVIL SPIRITS.

1. Εἰ δέ τινα ὑπάρθῃ . . . κτλ.: Another common objection. Comp. Arnob. 2, 76: *Cur persecutiones patitur perpeti eos tantas*. Maran cites Clem. Alex. Strom. 4, 11, 82; Thirlby, Iren. adv. Haer. 4, 84, 1; Otto, Min. Fel. Octav. 12; Cels. ap. Orig. 8, 69; Lactant. Institt. Div. 5, 21.

4. διαλύσω: A 43, 4.

5. τὰ οὐράνια στοιχεῖα: 'The heavenly bodies,' as, for instance, Ep. ad D. 7.

6. ὥρων μεταβολάς: So Thirlby for μεταβολαῖς. A 13, 10.

7. τοῦτο οἱ νόμον: So Thirlby for τοῦτον.—καὶ αὐτά: 'Likewise.' A 54.

8. φαίνεται πεποιηκώς: A 12, 37.

9. ἐπὶ τοῦτοις ἔταξε: See Athenag. Suppl. 24, 121.

11. γυναικῶν μίξειςιν: The notion is familiar. Besides A 5, 6 and Athenag. l. c. comp. Tertull. Apol. 22 (p. 71 D. S.). For the plural μίξειςιν, see A 12, 30.

12. λοιπόν: A 3, 21.

13. διὰ μαγικῶν γραφῶν: Thirlby suggests στροφῶν (comp. A 14, 6), but makes no change, nor is any change necessary. There is witchcraft enough in writing. Comp. the runes. Books of magic are mentioned Acts 19, 19.

14. ὧν ἐπέφερον: Thirlby restores ὧν, dropped on account of the last syllable in the preceding word.

15. θυμάτων καὶ θυμαμάτων: No superstition more common than this in the history of mankind. See Tylor, Primitive Culture.

19. τοῖς ἀγγέλοις: Sc. τοῖς παραβάταις (Ashton).

22. καὶ τῶν λεχθέντων = καὶ εἰς τοῖς υἱοῖς τῶν λ.: Extremely awkward, but not to be rewritten on that account.

24. ἀνήνεγκαν: 'Referred.'—'Ὀνόματι κτλ.: In the First Apology Justin was more generous towards the demons (A 5, 11), and allowed them to choose their own names. The reason of the apparent inconsistency is that in the former passages he uses

the word *δαίμονες* as equivalent to *ἄγγελοι*, here the *δαίμονες* are the sons of the *ἄγγελοι*, and received their names from their parents. To this effect Thirlby.

#### 6. NAMES OF GOD AND OF CHRIST.

1. *θετόν*: 'Given.'—*ἀγενήτω*: A 14, 9.—*δντι*: Causal.

2. *ὃ γὰρ ἂν καὶ ὀνόματί τι*: I have restored *τι*. Such absorptions by a preceding syllable are very common (*ἡμιγραφία*, *ἀπλογραφία*). 'For by whatever name a thing is called, it has the giver older'—the giver of a name is older than the thing named. *Τι* of course includes *τις* (Kaye's suggestion). Sylburg proposes *ὃ γὰρ ἂν, Otto ὀνομά τι* (*cuiusque enim nomen aliquod dicitur*!).

4. *Τὸ δὲ πατήρ*: 'The (expression) father.'

5. *ὀνόματα*: The word *ὄνομα*, which we translate 'name' or 'noun,' was at one period limited to the 'proper noun,' *κίριον ὄνομα*, so called because it is the only 'name proper.' God has no such name. Comp. A 10, 7; 63, 1, and Orig. c. Cels. 1, 25: *ἡ γὰρ ἀορίστως ὁμολογοῦσι τὸ κοινὸν ὄνομα τὸ ὃ θεός ἡ καὶ μετὰ προσθήκης τῆς ὃ δημιουργὸς τοῦ κόσμου*. Comp. 5, 35: *Συνεῖσιτι γὰρ τὸ προσσηγορικὸν τὸν θεὸν καὶ Αἰγυπτιστὶ καὶ πάσῃ διαλέκτῃ ὃ ἕκαστος ἐντίθραπται ὀνομάζων, οὐχ ἀμαρτῆσεται*.

6. *προσρήσεις*: 'Appellations.' So also Plato. *Προσηγορία* is the grammatical term for a common noun or appellative. Comp. *προσαγόρευμα* below.—*Ὁ δὲ υἱὸς ἐκείνου*: Regularly *ὁ υἱὸς ὁ ἐκείνου*. See A 62, 21.

8. *γεννόμενος*: The Codex Claromontanus has *γενόμενος*, and so Scaliger. A much discussed passage which I leave to professional theologians. Semisch identifies *συνών* with the *λόγος ἐνδιάθετος*, *γεννόμενος* with the *λόγος προφορικός*. See Introduction, xxxix.—*τὴν ἀρχὴν*: A 10, 16.—*ἔκτισε καὶ ἐκόσμησε*: The temptation to read *ἔχρισε* with Grabe is very strong.

9. *κατὰ τὸ καὶ χρῆσθαι*: So Scaliger for the *κατὰ τὸ κεχρῆσθαι* (*κεχρῆσθαι*) of the MSS. Such a shifting of the voice and the subject is extremely awkward, *Χριστός* belonging to *κεχρῆσθαι*, *τὸν θεὸν* to *κοσμήσθαι*. Still, comp. Thuc. 6, 84: *πιῖσεσθε τὰλλα ἐς τὸν πόλεμον ἱτοιμάζειν καὶ παραστήναι παντὶ ἐπὶ*.

10. *δὲ αὐτοῦ*: Comp. Hebr. 2, 10: *Δι' ὃν τὰ πάντα καὶ δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα*.—*καὶ αὐτό*: A 54, 35.

11. ἐν τρόπῳ: A 4, 22.

12. ἔμφυτος τῇ φύσει τῶν ἀνθρώπων δόξα: See Tertull. Testimon. Anim. 2 (p. 18, D. S.); Apologet. c. 17 (p. 58, D. S.), which contains the famous words, *O testimonium animae naturaliter Christianae*.

13. Ἰησοῦς κτί.: Comp. A 33, 21. Perhaps Justin, as other Fathers, associated the name with the Gr. ἰᾶσθαι also (Otto). See c. 23, 18.

14. Καὶ γάρ: A 4, 12.

15. ὡς προέφημεν: A 23, 9, and 63, 20.

16. ἀποκνηθείς: Not a classic word, c. 46, 21.

17. ἐπὶ καταλύσει: I have inserted ἐπὶ with Perionius, but the simple dat. is not hopeless. Comp. Thuc. 1, 123 (ὠφελίᾳ); 3, 82 (τῇ τῶν ἐναντιῶν κακώσει . . . πλεονεξίᾳ); 6, 33 (ξυμμαχίᾳ). See Classen. For ἐπὶ, see Index.—ὡς καὶ νῦν: So with Otto for καὶ νῦν, ὡς having been absorbed by the preceding -ων.

20. ἐπορκίζοντες κτί.: We should expect ἐπορκίζοντες and ἐπορκιστῶν, but ἐπορκισταὶ is found Dial. c. T. 85, and ἐπορκιστής is the word used in Constt. Apostt. 8, 26. The heathen had great respect for Christian magic. See Cels. ap. Orig. 6, 41; 8, 37.

22. τῶν ἄλλων: Applies strictly to ἐπορκιστῶν alone, but see A 6, 4.

24. καὶ ἐπὶ νῦν ἴωνται: Comp. Tertull. Apol. 23. 27. 32. 37 (Otto). —καταργοῦντες: A favorite Pauline word, Rom. 3, 3; 4, 14; 7, 2. 6; Gal. 3, 17; 5, 4. In the LXX only in Ezra.

## 7. THE WORLD PRESERVED FOR THE SAKE OF CHRISTIANS.

1. ἐπιμένει . . . μὴ ποιῆσαι: A 28, 7.

3. μηκέτι ὦσι: Annihilation not of being, but of power (Ash-ton).

4. ὃ γινώσκει κτί.: A difficult passage. 'As it stands, it must be construed thus: ὃ (sc. τὸ σπ. τῶν Χρ.) γινώσκει (sc. ὁ θεός) ὅτι (sc. τὸ σπέρμα τ. Χρ.) ἐν τῇ φύσει (= τῷ κόσμῳ) αἰτίον ἐστι (sc. τοῦ αὐτὸν . . . ἰ. ε. τὸν θεόν . . . μὴ ποιῆσαι τὴν συγχ. καὶ κατάλ. τ. π. κόσμον' (Nolte). 'Which he knows to be the [only] thing in the world that is the cause [thereof].' The sense: 'Ye are the salt of the earth.' Comp. Ep. ad Diog. 6: Χριστιανοὶ κατέχουσι τὸν κόσμον. Otto understands αἰτίον as αἰτίον τοῦ εἶναι. Braun takes

*aίτιον* in the sense of 'guilty,' and translates: *propter semen Christianorum quod natura sua in culpa sita reum esse intellegit*, and comp. Ephr. 2, 3: *καὶ ἡμεν τίνα φύσει ὀργῆς*. This view needs no criticism. Thirlby and others consider the passage corrupt. For *aίτιον* Seegar suggests *κρείττον*, Nolte *τὸ ἱατρικόν* or *τὸ διατῶν*, *l'élément conservateur*. 'Ἄξιον would be easier and not unnatural. Comp. A 10, 9: *ἐὰν ἀξίους ἑαυτοὺς χεῖρωσι*.

5. *οὐκ ἂν οὐδέ*: Subdivided (rather than repeated) negative. Notice that the first negative is very rarely followed immediately by the second.

6. *ἐνεργεῖσθαι*: A 5, 15.

8. *ἀνέδην*: A 20, 34. 'Ἄν may have been dropped, *ἀνέδην ἂν* or *παντ' ἂν*, though it is not necessary.

9. *μηδένα*: Where the earlier language would have used *οὐδένα*. — *ἀλλ' ἤ*: A 40, 27. — *τὸν μόνον*: We should expect *μόνον τόν*. See in *Iustino ferenda sunt eiusmodi peccata, non emendanda* (Thirlby).

10. *Νῆε . . . Δευκαλίωνα*: A familiar identification, first found in Philo.

12. *ἐκπύρωσιν*: Comp. A 20, 12.

13. *Στωϊκοί*: The Christians regard the destruction of the world by fire as a merited punishment for sin, the Stoics as a natural consumption.

14. *καθ' εἰμαρμένην*: A 43, 2.

16. *προαίρεσιν κτέ.*: A 43, 14.

21. *μὴ νοήσαντες*: Causal.

22. *γίνεσθαι ἀπεφάναντο*: A 20, 19. 'A. is treated regularly as a verb of saying. — *ἀντεξούσιον*: Comp. Tatian c. Gr. 11: *τί μοι καθ' εἰμαρμένην ἀγρυπνεῖς διὰ φιλαργυρίαν; τί εἰ μοι καθ' εἰμαρμένην πολλάκις ὀρεγόμενος, πολλάκις ἀποθνήσκεις; ἀπόθνησκε τῷ κόσμῳ, ζῆσι τῷ θεῷ· οὐκ ἐγενόμεθα πρὸς τὸ ἀποθνήσκειν, ἀποθνήσκομεν ἐν ἑαυτοῖς. ἀπώλεσεν ἡμᾶς τὸ ἀντεξούσιον*. See also Theophil. ad Autol. 2, 27.

23. *τὴν ἀρχήν*: A 10, 8.

24. *τὴν τιμωρίαν*: 'The punishment' (due).

25. *κομίσονται*: Attic *κομοῦνται*. So Justin elsewhere, e. g., 8, 13. — *Γεννητοῦ*: Otto now with Ashton, *Γενητοῦ*. See A 14, 9.

27. *εἰ οὐκ ἦν*: The common reading requires *ἦν* to be taken in

the sense of *εἶναι*, and the subject to be shifted in *εἶχε* to *ἡ φύσις*. The use of *ἦν* would better explain *οὐκ* in the protasis of a conditional sentence, *οὐκ ἦν* = *ἀδύνατον ἦν*. If any change is to be made, I read with Thirlby *εἰ οὐ καί*, and do not accept, with Otto, his alternative *εἰ οὐκ ἄν*.

30. *τάδε μὲν . . . τῶνδε δέ*: A 43, 9.

32. *ὡς δηλοῦσθαι*: A 21, 24.

33. *ἀρχῶν καὶ ἀσωμάτων*: Because they admit the necessity of fate and deny the existence of *ἀσώματα*, denying that the *ἀρχαὶ* are *σώματα* (Ashton).—*οὐκ εἰδοῦν*: More grammatically, *μὴ εἰδοῦντας*, *μὴ* on account of the inf. A 2, 4, the participle on account of the verb of showing, A 3, 8.—*Εἴτε γὰρ . . . ἔστι*: Justin proceeds to draw the moral consequences of the Stoic tenets concerning (1) fate, (2) the nature of God. 'Whether,' he says,

(1) they shall maintain that what is done by men is done in accordance with fate, or

(2) that God is nothing but the shifting and ever-recurrent phenomena of the universe;

then they will show

(2) either that they have no conception of aught but perishable things, and no notion of God except as a being steeped—parts and whole—in all manner of wickedness (comp. c. 28, 15: *χαίρειν κακίῃ*);

(1) or that virtue and vice are nothing.'

The conclusion is chiasmically arranged. To the same effect Otto in his last ed. Maran makes *Εἴτε . . . γίνεσθαι* the protasis of the condition, and begins the apodosis with *ἡ μὴ εἶναι* (*φήσουσι* understood), and inserts *καί*. For the sense of the passage, which certainly lacks clearness, comp. A 23, 13 foll.; 43, 16 foll.—*Εἴτε . . . ἦ*: A not uncommon irregularity.

34. *φήσουσι*: See A 8, 17.—*πρὸς ἀνθρώπων*: A 2, 17.

35. *παρὰ τρεπόμενα*: So the Codex Claromontanus. The Regius has *παταγρόμενα*. On this use of *παρά*, see A 20, 9.

36. *ἡ φθαρτῶν*: I have inserted *ἡ* before *φθαρτῶν*, easily dropped after *ἀεὶ*.

37. *αὐτὸν τὸν θεόν κτ.*: Supply *κατεληφέναι* out of *κατάληψιν ἱσχηκίαι*. On the use of *καταλαμβάνειν* with the Stoics, see Ueberweg, l. c. 1, 192.

## 8. THE WORLD HATES THE BEARERS OF THE SEED.

1. τοὺς ἀπὸ τῶν Στωϊκῶν διὰ δογμ.: A 26, 22. — κἄν: See A 2, 7.

3. οἱ ποιηταί: See Max. Tyr. Diss. 10: τινες ἄμεινον περὶ θεῶν εὐλαβον, ποιηταὶ ἢ φιλόσοφοι;

4. μεμισήσθαι . . . οἶδμεν: For μεμισημένους ἴσμεν.

5. Ἡράκλειτον: See A 46, 11. Heraclitus was not put to death, but died of his own treatment for dropsy. See Tat. ad Gr. 3. Athenag. (Suppl. 31, 155) represents him as exiled from Ephesus. H. if not a 'Stoic,' was the spiritual ancestor of the Stoics. See Ueberweg, l. c. 1, 42: 'The Stoics reproduced the doctrine of Heraclitus.' — ὡς πρόφθην: Not in this Apology, nor yet in the other. See note on c. 4, 7. Otto suggests ἐν τοῖς πρὸ ἡμῶν or ἐν τοῖς προγενομένοις, as opposed to ἐν τοῖς καθ' ἡμᾶς = ἐν τοῖς νῦν. — Μουσώνιον: Doubtless the Musonius Rufus exiled (not put to death) by Nero on account of his freedom of speech, Tac. Ann. 15, 71. Suidas makes the same mistake as Justin.

6. ἐν τοῖς καθ' ἡμᾶς: 'Among the men of our time.' Καθ' ἡμᾶς loosely used like νῦν, A 29, 19. — ἰσημέναν: The better form is ἰσημένην: 'a less frequent than η in Attic, if correct' (Veitch). The reference is to c. 7, 17.

7. κἄν ὅπως δὴ ποτε: 'No matter after what fashion.' Κἄν sc. ὅπως δὴ ποτε σπουδάζουσιν. See A 2, 7.

9. εἰ τοὺς οὗ: Οὗ has been inserted by Otto. It is indispensable. 'It is nothing strange if the demons, finding themselves convicted (ἐλεγχόμενοι), work to make those more hated who are striving to live (supply σπουδάζοντας βιοῦν from the previous sentence) not according to a part of the Spermatic Word, but according to the knowledge of the whole Word, which is Christ,' ὃ ἴστι being = τοῦτ' ἴστι. — σπερματικοῦ λόγου: The term is borrowed from Stoic philosophy, but Justin has made a special application of it. Subsequent writers delight in using the figure. So, for instance, Origen c. Cels. 1, 4: διὸ οὐδὲν θαυμαστὸν τὸν αὐτὸν θεὸν ἔκτελε διὰ τῶν προφητῶν καὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἐγκατεπαρκεῖν αἰς πάντων ἀνθρώπων ψυχαῖς.

12. κόλασιν καὶ τιμωρίαν: A 3, 4.

13. κομίσονται: See c. 7, 25.

16. ἰσομίνης: As if he had not written μελλούσης before. A slip for ἰσοθαί.

#### 9. ETERNAL PUNISHMENT A NECESSITY OF GOD'S EXISTENCE.

2. κόμποι καὶ φόβητρα: 'Idle noises and bugbears'—Mumbo Jumbo. Comp. Tertull. Apol. 47 (p. 107, D. S.): *Si gehennam comminemur, quae est ignis arcani subterraneus ad pœnam thesaurus, proinde decachinnamur.*—φόβητρα: A 5, 7. See Keim, Celsus' Wahres Wort, S. 36, 1.

3. κολάζονται: A 3, 4.

6. βραχυτεπώς: A 49, 23.

7. οὔτε ἔστι θεός: We should expect οὐδέ.

8. καί, ὡς προέφημεν: I suspect a transposition of ὡς προέφημεν καί. Comp. c. 7, 39.

9. τιμωροῦσιν: The middle is the usual form in this sense.

10. ἱκεῖνοι: Sc. οἱ νομοθεῖται.—καὶ ὁ αὐτῶν πατήρ: God. For καί we should expect οὐδ'. 'Since they are not unjust nor their Father in teaching them by the Word to act as he does, those who obey them are not unjust.' Braun would read αὐτούς.

12. συντιθέμενοι: A 39, 19.

13. προβάλλεται: 'Bring forward,' by way of objection.—παρ' οἷς μὲν: A 24, 12.

14. τάδε καλά: 'We should expect τὰ μὲν καλά, or what would be more Justinian, τάδε μὲν καλά, c. 7, 30. The diversity of human use and wont is proverbial. Comp. Pind. fr. 200: ἄλλο δ' ἄλλοισιν νόμισμα and Soph. O. C. 44: ἄλλα δ' ἀλλαχοῦ καλά.

17. διατάξασθαι: A 5, 10.

19. ὁρθὸς λόγος: Comp. c. 2, 5. 'Ο ὁρθὸς λόγος is not necessary. See note on πιεῦμα ἁγιον, A 61, 43.

21. ὥστε μοι . . . εἰρήσεται: On μοι, see A 27, 18.

22. εἰρήσεται: Sylburg desiderates εἰρήσῃω, but εἰρήσεται is a semi-imperative. See A 5, 5, and add Eur. Hec. 826.

#### 10. COMPARISON OF CHRIST WITH SOCRATES.

1. Μεγαλειότερα: C. 8, 11.—ἀνθρωπείου: Fem. Comp. ἀνθρώπινος, A 11, 2.

2. διὰ τὸ λογικὸν κτί.: So Otto, after Perionius, for διὰ τοῦτο. 'On account of Christ, who appeared for us, being the entire Lo-

gos.' Other manifestations are imperfect. Τὸ (in τὸ λ.) belongs to γεγονέναι; λογικὸν τὸ ὅλον, third attributive position.

4. καὶ σῶμα κτί.: Justin is a dichotomist, that is, recognizes σῶμα and ψυχὴ only. Hence Neander has suspected this passage of being an interpolation. But σῶμα and ψυχὴ may be considered as designating the complete human nature of Christ, λόγος as the expression of his divinity. In other words, in Christ the human and the divine combined to form a personal unity. See Otto, Zur Charakterik Justins, S. 15.

6. κατὰ λόγον μέρος: Κατὰ as in κατὰ μεταβολήν, A 20, 5. The sense seems to be: 'All that they said and invented well is due to a share of the Logos in the invention and consideration.'—ἐστὶ περιηθέντα: The periphrasis with the aor. participle is rare, c. 44, 49.

7. αὐτοῖς: A 27, 18.

8. καὶ ἐναντία: Καί, 'actually.'

9. οἱ προγεγεννημένοι: With Thirlby, for οἱ προγεγραμμένοι. Comp. A 46, 15.—κατὰ τὸ ἀνθρώπινον: Formerly combined by Otto with οἱ προγ. 'After the manner of men,' 'by ordinary human generation.' He now combines with πειραζίντες, and translates *humano modo*.

12. εὐτονώτερος: A 65, 5.

13. καὶ γὰρ . . . αὐτόν: Καί belongs to αὐτόν. See A 4, 12.—καὶνὰ δαιμόνια: A 5, 16.

14. μὴ ἡγεῖσθαι: On the neg., see A 4, 18.

15. 'Ο ὃς δαίμονες: Plato, De Republ. 2, 377 sqq.; 10, 595 sqq. 'He by casting out Homer and the other poets taught men to reject the evil demons,' etc. 'Ο ὃς is Socrates as represented by Plato. This use of ὃς, referring to the subject of the preceding sentence, is irregular. Notice the coincidence in time of ἐκβαλῶν and ἐδίδαξε.—καὶ τοὺς πρ.: It were better to omit καὶ or τοὺς (Μαρτυρ.).—παραίτεσθαι: A 2, 3.

18. θεοῦ . . . τοῦ ἀγνώστου: Acts 17, 23.—λόγου ζητήσεως=λογικῆς ζητήσεως.

19. Τὸν . . . ἀσφαλές: Plat. Tim. 28 C. A favorite quotation with the Fathers, e. g., Orig. c. Cels. 7, 42. Justin cites with his usual looseness. In Plato we find: τὸν μὲν οὖν ποιητὴν καὶ πατέρα τοῦδε τοῦ παντὸς εἶρῃν τε ἔργον καὶ εὐρόντα εἰς πάν-



τας δδύνατον λίγειν. The variation is as great as in some of the citations from the Memoirs.

21. ὁ ἡμέτερος Χριστός: A 48, 2.

22. ἐπιστή: For ἐπιστεύθη of the MSS. (Sylburg).

25. ἐν παντί: Παντί is masculine (Otto).

26. ὁμοιοπαθεύς: C. 1, 4. The word occurs also Acts 14, 15; Jas. 5, 17.

27. οὐ φιλόσοφοι οὐδὲ φιλόλογοι: So Plato combines ὁ φιλόσοφος τε καὶ ὁ φιλόλογος. Φιλόλογος has as wide a range as λόγος. Comp. Dial. c. Tr. 3: φιλολογία τε ἀντικεινὰτά ἐστι τὰ τοιάδε χωρία . . . Φιλόλογος οὐν τις εἰ σύ, ἔφη, φιλεργός δὲ οὐδ' αὖτως οὐδὲ φιλαλήτης, οὐδὲ περὶ πρακτικὸς εἶναι μᾶλλον ἢ σοφιστής.

28. ἰδιώται: A 39, 10.

30. δύναμις ἐστι: Sc. ὁ Χριστός of τὰ Χριστοῦ. Comp. 1 Cor. 1, 24: Χριστὸν θεοῦ δύναμιν καὶ θεοῦ σοφίαν, and Ep. ad Diogn. 7, 32: ταῦτα ἀνθρώπου οὐ δοκεῖ τὰ ἔργα, ταῦτα ἐνέργει ἐστι θεοῦ.

31. Κατασκευή: *Emendatio palmaris* of Pearson for τὰ σκεύη. Comp. Dial. c. Tr. 58: κατασκευή λόγου.

#### 11. HOW CHRISTIANS REGARD DEATH.

1. Οὐκ ἐν δὲ οὐδέ: Comp. c. 7, 5.

3. παντὶ κτί.: The rhythm is reminiscential; θανεῖν for ἀποθανεῖν is poetic or late in Attic. Comp. Eurip. Alc. 419: ὡς πᾶσιν ἡμῖν κατ'θανεῖν ὀφείλεται. Justin may have written κατ'θανεῖν as a quotation. Comp. ὀλίσι, A 25, 12. In his last ed. Otto makes the same suggestion, and cites further, Eur. Alc. 732; Androm. 1272; Aegaei fragm. ap. Stob. Flor. 98, 8.

5. τὸ ἑνοφώντειον: So I accent with Göttling, and so does Otto ποι. The famous passage occurs in Xen. Mem. 2, 1, 21 foll. The apologue is attributed by Xenophon himself to the sophist Prodicus. Since well worn. See Cic. Off. 1, 32, with the commentators. The student will of course compare Justin with his original. I subjoin the less accessible version of Max. Tyr. Diss. 20, an important author for this period: Πρόδικος μὲν Ἡρακλῆα ἀγεῖ ἐν τῷ μύθῳ ἀρτι ἡβάσκοντα καὶ ἀνδριζόμενον ἐπὶ ζιττὰς ὁδοῦς, Ἀρετὴν καὶ Ἠδονὴν ἐπιστήσας ἡγεμόνας ἑκατέρα τῇ ὁρῇ· ἡ μὲν αὐτῷ σοβαρὰ τῶν ἡγεμόνων, ἡ δὲ εὐσχήμων ἰδεῖν, βασιζοῦσα ἥρεμα, φτεγγομένη μουσικῶς, βλέμμα πρῶον, ἀμπεχόνῃ ἀπλῇ· ἡ δὲ δευτέρα, θρυπτική,

c.f. also Dio. Chrys. c. 21. 1 where for Ἠρακλῆα  
ἐπὶ ζιττῶν καὶ βασιλῆα ὡς τιναν

ἐπίχριστος, χλανιδίους ἐξηθισμένη, βλέμμα ἱταμόν, βάδισμα ἀτακτον, φωνή ἀμυστος. A familiar imitation is to be found in Luc. Somn. 6.

6. ἐφραίνοντας: Originally an Epic word. Plutarch uses it repeatedly in his discussion of Stoic doctrines, and it may have been a stock word with that school. It is found in Tatian, ad Gr. 21: Clem. Alex. Protrept. 1, 2; Paedag. 2, 7, 69.

8. τριόδον: Cic. l. c., *cum duas cerneret vias*. These two, with the one he is on, make up the τριόδος, as Ashton has thought it worth while to remark. Comp. Soph. O. R. 734 with 800, and Plato, Gorg. 524 A: ἐν τῇ τριόδῳ ἐξ ἧς φέρετον τὸ ὁδόν.

10. ἠρωτοποιημένῳ: 'Made up to inspire passion:' occurs nowhere else. There is no end of such formations in later Greek. Observe the false reduplication (instead of ἠρωτοποιημένῳ) which is found occasionally in MSS. and editions of the classic writers, e. g. ἱπποτετρόφην, Lycurg. c. Leocr. 139; ὠδοποιημένην, Xen. Anab. 5, 3, 1; ἡριστοποιήντο, Xen. Hell. 4, 5, 8.

11. τῶν τοιούτων: Of the ornaments (Otto). Left vague on purpose.—θαλκτικὴν τε κτί.: Maran wishes to leave out πρὸς, and understands ὀψεις of the eyes of Vice, comparing Xen. ὄμματα εἶχει ἀναπεπταμένα. Comp. the βλέμμα ἱταμόν of Max. Tyr. But how was the πρὸς smuggled in? Nor is εὐθύς so clear as on the hypothesis that the ὀψεις are the eyes of the beholder. Εὐθύς πρὸς τὰς ὀψεις would correspond to the δοκεῖν φαίνεσθαι, the δοκεῖν εἶναι of Xen. The charm would be a momentary charm to the eye. Comp. κάλλει τῷ ῥέοντι καὶ φθειρομένῳ. On the solitary τε, see A 22, 10.

12. ἣν αὐτῇ ἔπηται κτί.: Justin gives nothing but the general drift.

15. ἐν αὐχμηρῷ μὲν τῷ προσώπῳ: Notice the predicative position, which is very common of person and dress. So in Lucian. Xenophon has nothing corresponding to this part: εὐπρεπῇ τε ἰδεῖν καὶ ἡλευξέριον φύσει . . . ἰσθῆτι λευκῇ. Μέν: as if he intended to say: ἐν αὐχμηρῷ μὲν τῷ προσώπῳ, ἐν αὐχμηρῷ δὲ τῇ περιβολῇ.

17. ἑαυτόν=σραυτόν.

18. Καὶ πανθ' ὀντινοῦν: Justin speaks in his proper person.

20. ἄλογα: Sylburg conjectures ἀλγεινά, Pearson ἄκοσμα. The former is the better, but not conclusive.—εὐδαιμονίαν ἐκδέχεσθαι:

'Obtains happiness.' Thirlby suggests *εὐδαιμονεῖν ἐνδύχισθαι*, 'may be happy,' but makes no change.

21. πρόβλημα: Ashton desiderates *περίβλημα*.—*ἐαυτῆς τῶν πρ.*: Irregular position for *τῶν ἐαυτῆς πράξεων*.—*τὰ προσόντα τῇ ἀρετῇ*: Comp. c. 4, 7.

22. *ὄντως ὄντα*: A familiar Platonic expression.—*φθαρτῶν*: So the MSS. Maran and Otto write *ἀφθάρτων*, 'because vice hides under the ornaments of virtue by imitating not corruptible things but incorruptible.' But the text means that the imitation consists in corruptible things, and explains 'for it has nothing incorruptible.'

26. *καὶ ἀφθαρτοί*: Sc. *εἰσὶ*, 'are also incorruptible.'

27. *τῶν ἀπὸ τοῦ ἀθλου=ἀβλητῶν*. Comp. A 26, 22.—*τῶν ἀνθρώπων τῶν τ.*: The MSS. have *ἀθλου καὶ τῶν ἀνθρώπων καὶ τῶν*. The emendation is due to Thirlby.

28. *ἔφασαν*: So Perionius for *ἔφασαν*.

29. *τῶν νομιζομένων θεῶν*: Justin is thinking especially of Hercules, the model just cited. Remember Hercules's contempt of death.—*πάντα νουνεχῇ*: So Thirlby for *οὖν ἔχῃ*. Otto comp. A 46, 23: *ὁ νουνεχὴς καταλαβεῖν ἐννήσεται*; Tatian, Or. ad Gr. 39: *χρὴ τὸν νουνεχὴ συνεῖναι*.

31. *ἔλκοντα*: Belongs to *νουνεχῇ*. 'Which notion every sensible man must conceive concerning the Christians—drawing the conclusion from our despising death, a thing so much avoided.' *φευκτοῦ*, first 'avoided,' then 'to be avoided.'

## 12. INNOCENCE OF CHRISTIANS PROVED BY THEIR CONTEMPT OF DEATH.

1. *Καὶ γὰρ αὐτοὶ ἐγὼ . . . φονευθησόμενοι*: A classic passage, cited by Euseb. H. E. 4, 8. The Gentile view is given by Tertull. Apol. 27 (p. 81, D. S.): *quidam dementia existimant*, etc., and 50 (p. 112, D. S.): *desperati et perditī existimamur*, and Min. Fel. Oct. 8: *homines desperatae factionis*. Of especial interest in this connection is the opinion of M. Aurelius himself, 11, 8: *τὸ δὲ ἔτοιμον τοῦτο* (i. e. readiness to die), *ἵνα ἀπὸ ἰδικῆς κρίσεως ἐρχηται, μὴ κατὰ ψιλὴν παράταξιν* (sheer contrariness), *ὥς οἱ Χριστιανοί, ἀλλὰ λελογισμένως καὶ σεμνῶς καί, ὥστε καὶ ἄλλον πείσαι, ἀτραγώδως*.

5. *ἐπάρχειν*: 'Live.'

6. ἀνθρωπίνων σαρκῶν: Euseb. has ἀνθρωπείων. See A 26, 34.

7. ὅπως τῶν αὐτοῦ ἀγαθῶν στερηθῇ: On αὐτοῦ=*ipsius*, see A 21, 23: στερηθῇ: subj. after opt. with ἄν, as often on account of the equivalency of the latter to present and fut. ind. Euseb. has τῶν αὐτοῦ στερηθεῖη ἐπιθυμιῶν, more strictly regular.

8. ἐκ παντός: 'By all means.'—ἤν μὲν: Euseb. omits μὲν, but comp. A 13, 10, where the contrast is interrupted, as it were, by καί.

9. ἐπειράτο: We should expect πειράτο, but comp. A 19, 2, on the shifting of the point of view from ideal to unreal.—οὐχ ὅτι γε: 'Not that,' 'much less.'

10. κατήγγελλε: So with Eusebius for κατήγγειλε, and so Otto *noie*. Καταγγεῖλαι would be the normal construction. Κ. 'denounce,' late.

11. ἐνέργησαν . . . πράξθηναι: A 5, 15.

12. Φονεύοντες: Conative present participle.

13. ἔλκυσαν: Thirlby prefers ἔλκουσι, but here aor.=perf. On this subject, see the Epistle of the Churches of Vienne and Lyons in Euseb. H. E. 5, 1, 14 (p. 130, D. S.).

16. οὐδὲν πρόσστιν: A 10, 25.

17. θεὸν τὸν ἀγέννητον: A 14, 9.

20. Κρόνου . . . μυστήρια: Thirlby cites Lactant. Inst. Div. 1, 21: Euseb. Praep. Ev. 4, 15 sqq.; Tertull. Apol. 9 (p. 42, D. S.). Boys were the favorite victims of the Phoenician Saturn (Moloch).

21. ἀνδροφονεῖν=παῖδοκτονεῖν (Otto).

22. τὰ ἴσα: More naturally ἴσα (adv.).—τῷ . . . εἰδῶλη: Jupiter Latiaris. See Tertull. l. c. Thirlby has a long note from which we take these references. Tatian, Or. ad Gr. 26; Theophil. ad Autol. 3, 7; Minuc. Fel. Oct. 21, 30; Lactant. l. c. 1, 21; Porphy. De Abstin. 2, 56.

23. προσραίνει τε: So after Thirlby for προσραίνεται, and so Otto *noie*. The difference in pronunciation between ε and αι was very slight. In fact ε was called ἰ ψιλόν (simple ε), to distinguish it from αι.

25. πρόσχυον . . . ποιούμενοι: A 1, 9.—τῶν φονευθέντων: The *bestiarii*. Human sacrifices were prohibited by Hadrian, Porphy. De Abstin. 2, 56 (Ashton).

27. γινόμενοι: So I have written for γενόμενοι to match the other participles.

ἴδον ὅτι τῆς αἰδῶς ὡς ἐντὶ τῆς αἰσχύνης  
 ἡμῶν. ὡς παρ' ἑδῶς ἔστι τοῖς ποιηταῖς

228

NOTES. *Θεοχρ.* 6. 13  
 (p. 221 M)

29. Ἐπικούρου μὲν: Another μὲν *solitarium*.

32. ἐπόπτην: Sc. *ὄντα*. Comp. Clem. Rom. 1 ad Cor. 53, 6: τὸν πανεπόπτην δεσπότην, θεὸν τῶν αἰώνων, with Harnack's note.

33. Εἶθε καὶ νῦν τις ἐν τρ. φ. . . ἀναβόησεν: The MSS. have: Εἰ δὲ . . . ἦν. The εἶθε of the text is due to Maran. For ἦν I accept Krabinger's emendation *in* (ap. Otton.). Maran's and Otto's *ἐν* is ungrammatical; Krabinger's further emendation, ἀναβοήσσειν, is not absolutely necessary, as the aor. ind. is in wishes not rigidly limited to the past. Otto comp. further Plato, Clitoph. 407 A.

34. Αἰδέσθητε . . . ἀναφέροντες: Αἰσχύνομαι takes the participle in its causal or conditional sense, the inf. when the action is dependent. Αἰσχύνομαι ἱπαιτῶν, 'I am ashamed because I beg,' 'I beg to my shame;' αἰσχύνομαι ἱπαιτεῖν, 'I am ashamed to beg' (ἐκ' αἰσχύνης οὐκ ἐξέλω ἱπαιτεῖν). In the conditional relation infinitive and participle may be equivalent: οὐκ ἂν αἰσχυνοίμην ἱπαιτῶν = εἰ ἱπαιτοίην = ἱπαιτεῖν. Αἰδοῦμαι has theoretically the same constructions as αἰσχύνομαι, but practically it seldom takes the participle, as the emotion is more delicate. The αἰδώς comes before and prevents the action; αἰσχύνη may precede or follow. Comp. Clem. Alex. Protrept. 2, 14: οὐκ αἰδούμενος λίγειν ἃ προσκυνεῖν οὐκ αἰσχύνεσθε, and 10, 102: εἰ δὲ αἰδῶ καὶ ἔρωτα καὶ ἀφοροῖτην ἐνδείαζετε, ἀκολουθούντων αὐτοῖς αἰσχύνῃ καὶ ὀρμῇ καὶ κάλλος καὶ συνουσία, and Paed. 2, 6, 52: τὰ αἰδοῖα τοῦ ἀνθρώπου αἰδοῦς, οὐκ αἰσχύνῃς κατηξιωμένα.

35. ἀναφέροντες: 'Attributing,' 'ascribing.'

36. ἑαυτοῖς = ἑμῖν αὐτοῖς. In Otto's third ed., by an unlucky error of the types, θεοῖς has been omitted after ἑμετέροις. — περιβάλλοντες = περιτιθέντες. See c. 11, 25 (Otto).

37. τοῦτοις: The Christians.—ὡν: Refers to τὰ προσόντα. The sentence is very awkward. Ashton would rewrite: ὡν (referred to τοῦτοις) οὐδὲν οὐδ' ἐπὶ πόσόν αὐτῶν or ὡν οὐδὲν οὐδ' ἐπὶ πόσόν αὐτοῖς μέτεστι, which I should prefer. Comp. A 11, 25.

### 13. THE WORD HAS BEEN IN ALL MEN.

1. Καὶ γάρ: Καί with ἐγώ.—περίβλημα: 'Disguise.'

2. περιτεθειμένον: More commonly περικείμενον.

4. ψευδολογουμένων: So Maran and Otto for ψευδολογούμενον.

5. κατεγέλασα: Translate 'I must laugh at,' 'I cannot help

laughing at.' With certain verbs of expression of emotion, the aorist is used as a kind of impatient present, anticipatory present (dramatic aorist). — δόξης: The MSS. and editions have a comma after δόξης. Thirlby and Maran would insert *καί*, or change *κατεγίλασα* into *καταγέλασας* (Otto). The asyndeton is not unbearable in Justin.

6. εὐχόμενος . . . ὁμολογᾷ: 'I confess that I boast.' 'Ὁμολογῶ rarely takes the part.=ᾧτι. So Isocr. 4, 33.

8. τοῦ Χριστοῦ: A familiar brachylogy for τῶν τοῦ Χριστοῦ, after the pattern of the *comparatio compendiaria*, Xen. Cyr. 2, 2, 4: ἔδοξεν αὐτῷ μῆζον ἑαυτοῦ (=τοῦ ἑαυτοῦ) λαβεῖν. For other examples of brachylogy in Justin, see A 5, 24; 20, 7; 23, 4; 55, 14.

10. Ἐκαστος γάρ τις κτί.: 'For each one spoke well according to his share in the divine Spermatic Logos, seeing (so far as he saw) what was cognate (to the Logos),' i. e., the divine. There is only a partial revelation of the Divine Logos outside of Christ. See c. 10, 4 foll. Comp. Orig. c. Cels. 6, 79: οὐκ ἔστιν γὰρ τῶν ἐν ἀνθρώποις καλῶν γεγίνηται μὴ τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγου ἐπισημῆσαντος ταῖς ψυχαῖς τῶν κἀν ὀλίγον καιρὸν ἐδευνημένων ζῆξασθαι τὰς τοιαύτας τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγου ἐνεργείας.—ἀπὸ μέρους: B 10, 24.

12. αὐτοῖς: *ipsis*=*sibi*met *ipsis*.—ἐν κυριώτεροις: 'In weightier matters.'

13. ἀπτῶτον: So I write with Lange, Thalmann and Goetz for ἀποπτον. Braun and Otto (2) rely on the gloss of Hesychius: ἀποπτος ἀσφαλής, βίβαιος, perhaps for ἀπτῶτος, which is rare enough to deserve a note. So Otto also suspects now, and translates ἀποπτον not *firmam*, but *sublimiorem*. With ἀπτῶτον comp. Clem. Alex. Strom. 2, 2, 9: τὴν γοῦν ἐπιστήμην ὀρίζονται φιλοσόφων καὶ ἄλλοι ἐξ ἡμετέρων ἀπτῶτον ὑπὸ λόγου. 'Ἀνύπτῶτον' 'above suspicion' would not be bad, especially in connection with ἀνίλεγκτον. Comp. Tatian, ad Gr. 31: ἀνυπόπτους παρ' ἡμῶν τοῖς ἱλίχους λαμβάνω. Thirlby suggests ἱποπτικὴν.

14. Ὅσα οὖν κτί.: Aubé comp. Sen. Ep. Mor. 16, 7: *quicquid bene dictum est ab ullo meum est*, and 12, 11: *quod rerum est, meum est*. He might have added 8, 8; 21, 9; 33, 2.—ἡμῶν τῶν Χριστιανῶν: Article, as regularly in appositions with personal pronouns.

15. ἀγεννήτον: See A 14, 12.

16. μετὰ τὸν ἑβέν: Comp. A 6, 5 and 13, 17.

18. ἴσιν ποιήσεται: A 1, 9.

20. ἀμυδρῶς: 'But dimly.' In Greek the notion 'only' is often left to be made out by the reader.

21. Ἐτερον . . . καὶ ἕτερον = ἕτερον μὲν, ἕτερον δὲ. — κατὰ δύναμιν: 'According to capacity,' 'susceptibility' (Otto).

#### 14. JUSTIN PRAYS THAT THIS APPEAL BE PUBLISHED.

1. ἀξιούμεν: A 3, 2.—ὑπογράφαντες: We say 'endorse.'

2. βιβλίον: See A 29, 6.

4. τῶν καλῶν: Christian doctrine. See c. 2, 42; A 7, 17 (Ashton).—παρὰ τὴν ἑαυτῶν αἰτίαν: 'Owing to their own fault.' So Dial. c. Tr. 88: παρὰ τὴν ἰδίαν ἐκάστου αἰτίαν πονηρευσαμένου. Thirlby makes ἑαυτῶν refer to the Emperors.

5. [eis τὸ γνωσθῆναι τοῖς ἀνθρώποις]: An awkward addition, which only repeats what had been said in ὅπως . . . γνωσθῇ, l. 3. It is best omitted with Otto, as a gloss.

6. διὰ τὸ: So Perionius and others for διό.

7. γνωριστικόν: For γνωριστόν (Sylburg).

8. διὰ τὸ ἡμῶν κτί.: The passage is manifestly corrupt. Ashton, whom Otto follows in his last ed., writes διὰ τὸ ἡμῶν . . . πράττειν, καταψηφίζεσθαι. 'Owing to their condemning us whom they do not know to commit such deeds of shame as they allege.' This is, to say the least, heroic treatment. Those who wish to justify everything may find curious parallels for διὰ τὸ . . . καταψηφίζομένους instead of καταψηφίζεσθαι in Thuc. 4, 63; 5, 7. The slip is not unworthy of Justin. By inserting πράττειν with Ashton after αἰσχρά and omitting the second καὶ διὰ τὸ as a διπτογραφία, we get the adversative sense needed, καταψηφίζομένους = 'while condemning:' or, to rewrite the passage, διὰ τὸ ἡμῶν μὲν . . . καταψηφίζεσθαι, αὐτοὶ δὲ χαίρειν κτί.

11. ὥς: Inserted by Thirlby.

12. προστιμᾶν: So for πρόστιμον (Thirlby).—δέεσθαι: A 10, 1.

#### 15. CONCLUSION.

1. Καὶ τοῦ . . . κατεφρόνησα: This parting shot at a home-bred heresy is not unlike Justin's impetuous manner. In his last ed. Otto has bracketed the passage as a gloss from Justin's Dial. c. Tryph. c. 120.—Σιμωνιανοῦ: See A 26, 5.

2. κατεφρόνησα: Comp. c. 13, 5: κατεγίλασα.—προγράψητε: 'Authorize the publication.'

3. φανερόν δ' ἐν ποιήσαιμεν: I have inserted δ', dropped as often. Krabinger reads: δ' ἐν ποιήσομεν.

5. συνετάξαμεν: 'Have composed,' c. 1, 6. Aor. short-hand of perf.

7. ἀνθρωπίου: On the form see c. 10, 1.—εἰ δὲ μή: A 15, 53.—κἄν: 'At all events.'—Σωταδαίους: Sotades of Thrace or Crete, a notorious writer of obscene poetry in the time of Ptolemy Philadelphus. His name survives in connection with the *Versus Sotadeus* used by better men. See Class. Dict.

8. Φιλαινιδίους: To Philaenis was ascribed a famous poetic manual, *περὶ σχημάτων* (comp. Athenag. Suppl. 20, 86), which has given her an unenviable position in letters. See Class. Dict. and comp. Tatian, ad Gr. 84: Φιλαινίδος τῶν ἀρρήτων ἱπνισίων. Clem. Alex. Protrept. 4, 61, speaks of the heathen as ἐπ' ἴσης ἐγγραφόμενοι τὰ Φιλαινίδος σχήματα ὡς τὰ Ἡρακλείους ἀθλήματα.—Ἀρχεστρατείοις: The MSS. have ὀρχηστικοῖς. The true proper name, long desiderated, has been restored by Von Leutsch. Archestratus of Gela or Syracuse composed a famous poem on Good Living (*ἡεὺπάθεια*), or the Art of Cookery. He is coupled with Philaenis in Athen. 8, 13; 10, 86. See Class. Dict.

10. λεγομένοις: So Otto now. Von Leutsch balances between λεγομένοις and ᾑχομένοις. The MSS. have γεν. which Thirlby explains as 'acted.'

11. λοιπόν: A 3, 21.—ὅσον ἐφ' ἡμῖν ἦν: A 40, 21.

13. Εἴη: 'May it be that.'—ὑμᾶς: So Sylburg for ἡμᾶς.

14. εὐσεβείας καὶ φιλοσοφίας: Comp. c. 2, 55; A 2, 1; 3, 11; 12, 22.—ἐνὲρ αὐτῶν=ἐπὶ ὑμῶν αὐτῶν, in the same spirit in which he said, A 8, 1: λογίσασθε δ' ὅτι ἐπὶ ὑμῶν ταῦτα ἐφημεν. Comp. Tertull. ad Scap. 1 (p. 114, D. S.): *Itaque hunc libellum non nobis timentes misimus, sed vobis et omnibus inimicis nostris.*

NOTE.—I have omitted the (spurious) Edict of Antoninus Pius, which is commonly appended to the First Apology. One form of it has already been given in this series, Euseb. H. E. 4, 13 (p. 106, D. S.). Nor have I thought it worth while to reproduce the often exploded letter of M. Aurelius to the Senate, with the legend of the *Legio Fulminata*, for which see Euseb. H. E. 5, 5 (p. 146, D. S.).

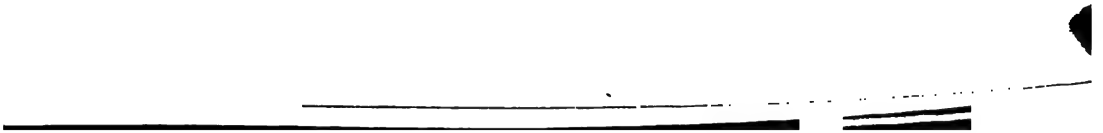
M 2

Υπομνήματα δ. γινόμενοι Βαλβύλιν





# THE EPISTLE TO DIOGNETUS.



cl. v. vii. x  
Ce qui est dit de la persécution répond bien aux  
dernières années de Marc Aurèle ... d'où  
peut à la rigueur être du III<sup>e</sup> siècle ; mais  
nous nous refusons absolument à y voir une  
pénalité plus moderne. L'attribution à saint Justin  
n'est soutenable en aucune façon. Le livre n'est  
pas cité dans l'antiquité ecclésiastique ; mais il  
en est de même d'Irénée et très peu d'en est  
faute qu'il n'en fût de même d'Épiphane

Rosen. Marc Aurèle 1.424

## EPISTLE TO DIOGNETUS.

---

We have already seen in the Introduction that the Letter to Diognetus cannot be Justin's. Beyond this we cannot speak with confidence. It has been carried back to the first century and ascribed to Apollos—a mere fancy. Bunsen claims it for Marcion, but Marcion before he was a Marcionite—a guess which no one has troubled himself to refute. The vast majority of the earlier critics put it under Trajan or Hadrian, and it is regularly published as a part of the *Corpus Patrum Apostolicorum*. In recent times the tendency has been to make the Epistle less ancient. Hilgenfeld puts it between 161 and 180, Lipsius about 180, and Keim between 177 and 180, while Zahn gives a wide sweep, from 250 to 310, and Harnack grants a latitude of nearly a century and a half. Donaldson was the first to consider the Epistle a late production, and would evidently be glad to set it down as a fabrication of Henricus Stephanus himself, if it were not for the age of the Strasburg MS.; and Overbeck has recently made an independent attack on the antiquity of the Epistle, which he supposes to be a manufacture of the Byzantine time, without giving a guess even as to the century. According to this scholar (Studien, 1, 21), the Epistle to Diognetus is a meditation on the Christian religion put into the form of a letter addressed to a heathen, and belongs to a time when Chris-

---

tianity had ceased to battle for its existence with Judaism and Paganism, when believers were far removed from the real struggles, efforts, and views of the second century. Justin, the famous martyr and philosopher, was a convenient name for the imaginary writer; Diognetus, the teacher of Marcus Aurelius, a convenient name for the imaginary recipient.

A detailed examination of Overbeck's argument, which has been hotly assailed by men like Hilgenfeld, Keim, and Lipsius, does not lie within the scope of this edition. One caution, however, may not be inappropriate here. No argument based on anachronism of conception can be considered conclusive when we have to deal with such a problem as the Christian religion, in which the personal equation is of so much importance; and Harnack, in his cautious summary, has called attention to the resemblances between the Epistle, which Overbeck would relegate to the Byzantine period, and such writings as the Oration to the Greeks by Tatian and the Protrepticos of Clement of Alexandria.

The only MS. of the Epistle to Diognetus, the *Argentoratensis*, perished during the siege of Strasburg in August, 1870. The relation of this MS. to two copies of the Epistle made towards the close of the sixteenth century, the one by Henri Estienne (Stephanus), the other by Beurer, is a matter of dispute. It is on the whole most likely that, despite sundry variations, both the copy by Estienne, which is still preserved at Leyden, and the *Apo-graphon Beureri*, which has disappeared, were made from the *Codex Argentoratensis*, and not from a distinct original or originals. See Gebhardt, *Patrum Apostolicorum Opera*, Fasc. 1, 205 seqq.

## NOTES.

---

Bunsen's Analysis: Christianity and Mankind, 4, 174.

<i>Introduction.</i> The questions of Diognetus.....	C. 1.
I. The <i>Heathen world</i> : the variety of their idols.....	C. 2.
II. The <i>Jews</i> { their superstitious sacrifices.....	C. 3.
{ their foolish rites, customs, and ceremonies....	C. 4.
III. The <i>Christians</i> { their habits and condition.....	C. 5.
{ they are the soul of the world.....	C. 6.
{ their religion not of man, but of God..	C. 7.
IV. { The wretched state of the world before the Son of	
{ God came.....	C. 8.
{ Reasons why He came so late.....	C. 9.
<i>Conclusion.</i> Exhortation to Diognetus to become a Chris-	
tian.....	C. 10.

---

To the Epistle is appended a fragment by another hand, the conclusion of a *Cohortatio ad Gentes* of some unknown author, *fortasse Hippolyti* thinks Bunsen.

### 1. INTRODUCTION. THE QUESTIONS OF DIOGNETUS.

Diognetus, admiring the virtues of the Christians, and on that account desirous of learning more perfectly concerning that way, had put the following questions:

1. In what God do they trust, and how do they worship him, that they are thus enabled to look down on the world and despise death?
2. Why do they not accept the gods of the Gentiles?
3. Why do they not observe the superstitions of the Jews?
4. What manner of love is this that they bear towards one another?
5. Why this new system has just been introduced into the world.

1. **κράτιστε**: *Κράτιστος* is a common title of men of position from the time of Augustus on. Familiar are the examples in the N. T. Acts 23, 26; 24, 3: *κράτιστε Φήλιξ*, 26, 25: *κράτιστε Φῆστε*.—**Διδόνετε**: The name is not uncommon. Otto counts up twenty-four previous to the Christian era. Our Diognetus has been identified by many with the Diognetus honorably mentioned among the teachers of Marcus Aurelius. See *M. A. ad se ipsum* 1, 6. Overbeck makes use of this to sustain his theory of a late fictitious letter. (*Studien*, S. 73.)

2. **θεοσίβειαν**: A favorite word for the worship of the only living and true God. See cc. 3, 1; 4, 17. 20; 6, 8; [Justin] *Coh.* 1. 5. 25. 36. 37. 38. Comp. *Clem. Alex. Protrept.* 10, 100: *αὐταρκες ἐφ' ὅδιον αἰώνων θεοσίβειαν*. *θεοσίβεια* may be used of heathens (*θειοσεβής* occurs repeatedly in Plato), but, on the other hand, *θηρησκεία* is seldom, *δαισιδαίμονια* never employed of Christians, as Otto observes. In *θηρησκεία* the notion of ceremony is prominent. So c. 2, 36: *αἵματι καὶ κνίσαις θηρησκεύετε*. Comp. *Plut. Mor.* 140 C: *περιέργοις θηρησκείαις καὶ ξίναις δαισιδαίμονιας*. Add *Greg. Naz. l. c.*: *θηρησκεῖαν οἶδα καὶ τὸ δαιμόνων σίβας, | ἢ ὃ εὐσίβεια προσκύνησις τῆς τριάδος*. This gives point to *Jas.* 1, 27. In the present passage *θηρησκεύοντες* is used from the position of the inquirer, who cannot understand the simplicity of the Christian religion.

4. **αὐτόν, τόν τε**: So with Lachmann for *αὐτόν τε*, which would leave *θηρησκεύοντες* without an object, and put an unnecessary stress on *κόσμον*.

5. **ὑπεροψῶσι**: Differs in tone from *καταφρονοῦσι*. It is loftier, and hence more galling, as a slight is worse than an insult. Comp. *Orig. c. Cels. Praef.* 2: *καταπεφρονηκῆναι καὶ μεγαλοφῶς ὑπερεωρακῆναι τοὺς κατηγοροῦς*.—**θανάτου καταφρονοῦσι**: For examples of contempt of death, see B 2 and 12.

6. **τῶν Ἑλλήνων**: In the wider sense of 'Gentiles.'

7. **δαισιδαίμονιαν**: Δ. shades off like the Latin *religio*, and many commentators have noticed the tact of Paul in using a *vox mediae significationis* when addressing the Athenians, Acts 17, 22: *κατὰ πάντα ὡς δαισιδαίμονεστέροις ὑμᾶς θεωρῶ*. But the bad sense practically preponderates, and even in the address of Festus to Agrippa there is at least a half sneer: *ζητήματά τινα περὶ*

τῆς ἰδίας δεισιδαιμονίας. It is not a *vox mediae significationis* in Theophr. Char., who defines it as δειλία πρὸς τὸ δαιμόνιον, nor in Max. Tyr., who says (20, 6): ὁ μὲν εὐσεβὴς φίλος θεῶν, ὁ δὲ δεισιδαίμων κόλαξ θεοῦ. Comp. Clem. Alex. Protrept. 2, 25: ἀκρότητες ἀμαθίας ἀξιώτης καὶ δεισιδαιμονία, and 10, 96: δεισιδαιμονίας ἄξιοι χορευταί. Xenophon, whom Trench cites for δ. in a good sense, is the very last author to cite on account of his peculiar bent.

8. φιλοστοργίαν . . . πρὸς ἀλλήλους: Otto comp. Polyb. 32, 11, 1.

9. καινὸν τοῦτο γένος: Τὸ καινὸν τοῦτο would be more natural. On the charge of novelty (emphasized by Celsus ap. Orig. 1, 26), see A 2, 3, and comp. Suet. Nero, 16: *superstitio nova et malefica*; Tertull. Apol. 37: *hesterni sumus*; 47: *novitiola paratura*; Theophil. 2, 30: πρόσφατοι καὶ νεωτερικοί, and other passages collected by Keim, Celsus' Wahres Wort, S. 10. 3. With γένος comp. Tertull. Scorp. 10: *usque quo genus tertium?* and Praed. Petri ap. Clem. Alex. Strom. 6, 5, 41: Τὰ γὰρ Ἑλλήνων καὶ Ἰουδαίων παλαιά, ὑμεῖς δὲ οἱ καινῶς αὐτὸν τρίτῳ γένει σεβόμενοι Χριστιανοί. — γένος ἢ ἐπιτήδευμα: 'Kind' of men or 'fashion' of religion. The heathen found it hard to classify the Christians. Comp. the variety of names in Minuc. Fel. Oct. 8: *homines deploatae, illicitae ac desperatae factionis . . . plebem profanae coniurationis . . . latebrosa et lucifugax natio*; c. 9: *sacraria impiae coitionis*. The Christians themselves seem to have been equally at a loss. Comp. Tertull. ad Nat. 1, 8: *tertium genus* (neither heathen nor Jews). See Keim, l. c., S. 72, 1.

10. εἰς τὸν βίον: 'Into the world,' *vita hominum*. — νῦν καὶ οὐ πρότερον: Nῦν is elastic. See A 29, 19. So *hodie* in Arnob. 2, 74: *Ratio fuit cur non nuper sed hodie ospitator nostri generis adveniret*. — ἀποδέχομαι: The genitive of the source of emotion, as in the familiar construction of θαυμάζω. For the respectful tone, comp. Acts 24, 3: πάντῃ τε καὶ πανταχοῦ ἀποδεχόμεθα. 'I am glad to observe this your earnest desire.' — τε: With Bunsen for γε.

12. χορηγοῦντος: A suitable and common word for the Giver God: τοῦ εἰδόντος θεοῦ πᾶσιν ἀπλῶς καὶ μὴ ὀνειδίζοντος. Comp. Clem. Alex. Protrept. 1, 7: ἐπιφανείς ὡς εἰσάσκαλος ἵνα τὸ ἀεὶ ζῆν



ὡς θεὸς χορηγήσῃ, and c. 3, 12. See lexicon for the word and its origin, the generosity of which survives in the transfer.

13. ὡς μάλιστα ἂν ἀκούσαντί σε: 'Ακούσαντα for ἀκούσαι, Stephanus. Otto edits τὸν ἀκούσαντα, and omits σε. This gives a better balance, but is not necessary. On the other hand O. keeps σοὶ τε, whereas σοὶ δὲ is almost certain in so antithetical a writer and in so narrow a compass.

## 2. THE HEATHEN WORLD: THE VANITY OF ITS IDOLS.

(Bunsen says 'Variety of their Idols.')

The author does not take up the questions propounded in the first chapter *seriatim*, but begins by setting forth the reasons why the Christians do not adopt heathen idolatry or Jewish superstition. After an exhortation to Diognetus to purge his bosom of prejudice, the writer proceeds to attack with much warmth and in harsh language the image-worship of the Pagans. Our author's polemic against image-worship is very superficial, and Overbeck has made the most of this point as indicating a later origin. True, such arguments as the author has adduced might seem to be wasted on a cultivated heathen, but the fact that these very arguments were addressed in that age to cultivated heathen would appear from the angry tone in which Celsus repels the charge of idolatry (Orig. c. Cels. 7, 62): *τις γὰρ καὶ ἄλλος, εἰ μὴ πάντῃ νήπιος, ταῦτα ἡγείται θεοὺς ἀλλὰ μὴ θεῶν ἀναζήματα καὶ ἀγάλματα*; and even Porphyry thinks it worth while to notice the ignorance of the Christians of his day in the remarkable passage ap. Euseb. P. E. 3, 7: *θανμαστὸν εἰ οὐδὲν ξύλα καὶ λίθους ἡγείσθαι τὰ ξόανα τοὺς ἀμαξεστάτους, κατὰ δὲ καὶ τῶν γραμμάτων οἱ ἀνόητοι λίθους μὲν ὁρῶσι τὰς στήλας, ξύλα δὲ τὰς εἰδούς, ἐξηφασμένην δὲ πάπυρον τὰς βίβλους*. For a very similar strain, see Clem. Alex. Protrept. c. 4.

1. καθάρας σιαντόν . . . ἰσόμενος: Comp. Eph. 4, 20-24, and 2 Cor. 5, 17: *καινή κτίσις* (Otto).

3. συνήθειαν: Habit of thought.—ἀποσκευασάμενος: As it were a burden or troublesome piece of luggage. Comp. Athenag. Suppl. 2, 6; 9, 36.

4. ὡς ἂν . . . ἰσόμενος: The participle with ἂν (a post-Homeric combination) represents either the indicative with ἂν or the op-

υἱ  
r  
ne  
f  
m  
e  
||  
ne  
f  
m  
e

tative with *άν*. As the future indicative with *άν* is very sparingly used in the classic time, the future participle with *άν* is also very rare, and like the fut. ind. with *άν* is due chiefly to a slight *anacoluthon*. So in a classic writer, *ώς άν . . . ισόμενος* might fairly be interpreted as a change of construction from *ώς άν . . . γεόμενος*. Comp. Xen. Cyr. 1, 4, 23: *ώς άν . . . σθησομένους*, where recent editors drop *άν*. The fut. opt. with *άν* is not a legitimate construction, as the fut. opt. is used only as the representative of the fut. ind. in oratio obliqua, and consequently did not come into the language until the fut. ind. with *άν* was obsolescent. Still in later Greek we must not be exacting, and violations of these rules may be found for the seeking, e. g. fut. opt. with *άν*: Athenag. Suppl. 21, 90: *τις ούκ άν καταμήψουρο*; fut. part. with *άν*: Orig. c. Cels. 3, 70. See c. 4, 18.

6. *ἢε μή μόνον*: Not *ἴδε*, as the notion is really positive. Comp. Thuc. 4, 17, 3: *λάβετε αὐτοὺς μή πολεμίους κτί*. 'The negatives belong to the modifiers of the predicate and do not affect the verb *λάβετε*, which is put in the imperative, not in the subjunctive' (Classen).

7. *ὑποστάσεις*: Gen. of material. 'Substance.' Below we have *ἐλγ*. Here *εἶδος*, below *μορφή*.—*τυγχάνουσιν*: Sc. *ὄντες*, as c. 5, 17: *ἰν σαρκί τυγχάνουσι*, and c. 10, 22: *τυγχάνων ἐπὶ γῆς*.

8. *ἴπειτε*: Corresponds to *καλεῖτε* below. 'E. is a late form for the present. Examples in Veitch; none classic, but comp. Soph. O. C. 596. Lachmann would read *αἰνείτε*.—*ὃ μὲν τις*: *Τίς* is very common in such combinations, 'whoever he is,' c. 8, 4.

11. *τοῦ φυλάξοντος*: Steph. The MSS. have *φυλάξαντος*, which Otto vainly tries to defend. Comp. A 31, 16.

12. *ὑπὸ τοῦ*: Personification. Comp. A 53, 45. So *ὑπὸ σιδήρου καὶ πυρός* below.

13. *οὐδέν*: Adverbial.

16. *ὃ μὲν*: On the relative, see A 24, 12.

17. *πρὶν ἢ . . . ἐκτυπωθῆναι*: A 4, 13. The construction with the infinitive is regular, as the sentence is really positive, *οὐ* expecting a positive answer.—*ταῖς τέχναις τούτων*: Sc. *τῶν τεχνιτῶν*.

18. *εἰς τὴν μορφήν τούτων*: Sc. *τῶν θεῶν*.—*ἕκαστον*: So Maran for *ἕκαστος*.

19. *ὥς ἐτι καὶ νῦν*: I have added *ὥς*, but even thus the sense

*ἀνεκτίθη = ἀνεκλόγητο* Aph. *ἐκ*. (II 28 5 sp.)  
*ἐκ τῶν (II 38 12)*  
*Εφ' αὐτῶν. Διο. 2, 14 1*  
*ἐκ τῶν ἐκ τῶν ἐκ τῶν*  
*ἐκ τῶν ἐκ τῶν ἐκ τῶν*

is not satisfactory: 'Before being fashioned by the skill of these artificers into the form of the gods, had not each one undergone a transformation at the hands of each artist, as still happens?' i. e., 'Had not this material undergone some previous change at the will of the artificer.' The sense wanted is: Was it not in the power (*ἦν*) of each artificer to mould the material as he liked? This Lachmann tried to get by reading for *ἐν* *καὶ νῦν* *εἰκάζειν*, which Bunsen accepts and translates (perforce): 'Was it not left to the mercies of the workman to transform it as he liked?' The perf. part. stands in the way; we should expect rather *μεταμορφούμενον*. Otto transl. *ἦν μεταμορφωμένον* by *transformandatur*—a version which requires no criticism.

21. *τοιούτοις*: Stephanus prefers *τούτοις*. With the whole passage comp. A 9, 9.

26. *τέλειον* = *τελῆως*: 'Perfectly,' 'absolutely.' Comp. A 20, 4. Otto comp. Ps. 113, 8: *ὅμοιοι αὐτοῖς γίνονται οἱ ποιοῦντες αὐτὰ καὶ πάντες οἱ πεποιθότες ἐπ' αὐτοῖς*. You become perfectly like them, equally senseless, equally bereft of true life. The MSS. have *τελείον τε \* ἱσομοιοῦσθε*. Bunsen reads *ἱσομοιοῦτε*, and translates: 'And, in short, you treat them like the gods themselves.'

27. *Διὰ τοῦτο*: 'On account of this' (your infatuation).

28. *Ὑμῖς γάρ*: *Γάρ* gives the cause of the indignation.—*οἱ νῦν νομίζοντες καὶ οἰόμενοι*: *Νομίζω* is often used for 'believe in,' 'accept,' and *εἶναι*, which Stephanus afterwards withdrew, is unnecessary. Comp. Xen. Mem. 1, 1, 1: *ἀδίκει Σωκράτης οὗς ἡ πόλις νομίζει θεοὺς οὐ νομίζων*. *Οἰόμενοι* is added to show that it is a mere fancy, which the writer hopes will pass away, as is indicated by *νῦν*. Lachm. writes: *Ὑμῖς γάρ αἰνεῖν* (for *οἱ νῦν*) *νομίζοντες καὶ σεβόμενοι κτί.*: 'Who think to praise and worship them [as gods]' (Bunsen).

29. *πολὺ πλέον*: 'Much more' [than the Christians do]. But *αὐτῶν* depends on *καταφρονεῖτε*. The standard of comparison is often to be supplied for the context.

30. *χλευάζετε καὶ ὑβρίζετε*: *Χλ.* combined with *μυκτηρίζειν*, Clem. Rom. 1 Ep. ad Cor. 1, 39.

31. *ἀφυλάκτους*: Emendation of Stephanus for *ἀφυλάκτως*.

32. *χρυσοὺς ἐγκλείοντες*: Every one will remember how Dionysius 'conveyed' the golden mantle of Jupiter's statue. Cic. N.

D. 3, 44, 88; Clem. Alex. Protrept. 4, 52: Διονύσιος μὲν γὰρ ὁ τύραννος ὁ νεώτερος θοιμάτιον τὸ χρύσειον περιελάμενος τοῦ Διὸς ἐν Σικελίᾳ προστάζειν αὐτῷ ἱεοῦν περιτιθέναι, χαρίεντως φήσας τοῦτο ἀμεινον εἶναι τοῦ χρυσοῦ καὶ ξέρους κουφότερον καὶ κρύους ἀλειυνότερον. For the higher Stoic view, see Pers. 2, 61.—ταῖς νυξί: In classic Greek prose, τὰς νύκτας or τῆς νυκτός, although analogies are not wanting for the dative.

83. παρακαθιστάντες: So with Krenkel for παρακαθίσαντες on account of the other present participle ἐγκλείοντες. Comp. A 9, 20: φύλακας τοιοῦτους καθίσταναι.—Αἱς δὲ δοκεῖτε τιμαῖς προσφέρειν = ταῖς τιμαῖς ἃς κτλ.

85. ἐλέγχοντες: Sc. τοῦ ἀναισθητεῖν. 'You are proving [this on them] when you worship them with blood and fatty steams.' In translating Greek it is very often necessary to shift the relation of participle and leading verb. Bunsen tr. i. 'put to shame,' Otto 'beschimpfen.'

86. ταῦθ' ὑμῶν τις ὑπομεινάτω: 'Let [me see] any one of you endure this' = Which of you would endure this? I have not put the mark of interrogation, though the imper. may be used in a question (= εἰ and inf.). Comp. Plato Legg. 800 B, 801 D, 820 E; Theaet. 170 D; Polit. 295 D.

89. Οὐκοῦν τὴν ἀναισθησίαν αὐτῶν: The MS. has οὐκ οὖν τὴν αἰσθησιν αὐτοῦ i. 'Therefore you do not prove [your god's] sensation.' However, 'you fail to prove' can hardly be considered equivalent to 'you disprove.' Stephanus suggests: Οὐκοῦν τὴν αἰσθησιν οὐκ ἔχειν (better ἔχοντας, Sylb.) ἐλέγχετε. Οὐκοῦν τὴν ἀναισθησίαν αὐτοῦ ἐλέγχετε (Krenkel). So also the margin of the Stephanus MS., except that for αὐτοῦ we find αὐτῶν. For οὐκοῦν, οὐκ οὖν, and οὐκ οὖν, see the grammars. Kühner sums up the two former thus:

Οὐκοῦν. 1. *Nonne igitur? nonne ergo?*

2. *ergo, igitur.*

Οὐκ οὖν. 1. *Nullo modo, neutiquam, nequaquam, haudquaquam.*

2. *non ergo, non igitur* (in a negative conclusion).

3. *non? non igitur?* (in passionate questions).

In my judgment the whole difficulty as to the handling of this combination lies in the neglect of the simple difference between οὐ 'nay,' and οὐ 'not.' See A 38, 9.

41. πολλά μὲν ἔν: Ἄν is often dropped by accident after μιν. Restored by Lachm.

42. κἂν ταῦτα=*vel haec*: See A 2, 7.

### 3. THE JEWS: THEIR SUPERSTITIOUS SACRIFICES.

The writer next attacks the folly of the Jews, who recognize the true God, and yet offer sacrifices to him, as if he needed them, and try to honor him by rites and ceremonies. We are not to suppose from this chapter that Jewish sacrifices were continued after the destruction of the Temple. See the references in Harnack's note on Clem. Rom. 1 Ep. ad Cor. 41, 2.

1. Ἐξῆς: A 32, 41.

2. αὐτοῖς: Sc. Χριστιανούς.

4. καὶ θεὸν ἵνα τῶν πάντων σίβεισθαι δεσπότην ἀξιούσι, φρονοῦσιν: 'And [if] they think it right to reverence one master of all, they are wise.' Φρονοῦσιν = σωφρονοῦσιν. So Eur. Hippol. 920: φρονεῖν=εὖ φρονεῖν, v. 921. I have accepted Scheibe's emendation of this vexed passage. The MS. has καὶ εἰς . . . σίβειν καὶ δεσπότην ἀξιούσι φρονεῖν. Stephanus reads καὶ εἰ, and proposes to add κρίστην after πάντων. Otto reads ὡς θεόν, and makes the sentence an ἀνανταπόδοτον, i. e., a condition with suppressed conclusion, common enough from Homer on. See a familiar example in Luke 13, 9. Otto translates: *Si deum unum omnium* [τῶν πάντων masc.] *tenerari dominumque existimare* (φρονεῖν) *volunt*, [recte sentiunt]. Φρονεῖν as *existimare* is, to say the least, rare. Comp. Orig. c. Cels. 4, 36. Hoffmann reads φρονοῖεν ἄν, a conjecture which is not so hopeless as Otto thinks. Bunsen, after Lachmann, κρίστην θεόν, and independently, φρονίμως for φρονεῖν; Hilgenfeld, καλῶς for καὶ εἰς.—τῶν πάντων: Sc. θεῶν according to Otto's interpretation, who cites Dial. c. Tryph. 53: ὁ θεός σου θεός τῶν θεῶν ἐστι, and Deut. 10, 17; Ps. 49, 11.

10. εἰκότως: So Stephanus for εἰκός. The folly of the heathen in bringing offerings to senseless and dumb idols is matched by the folly of the Jews in bringing these offerings to the true God, as if he needed aught.

11. Ὁ γὰρ ποιήσας . . . παρέχει αὐτός: Comp. Acts 17, 24. 25: ὁ θεός ὁ ποιήσας τὸν κόσμον καὶ πάντα τὰ ἐν αὐτῷ οὗτος οὐρανοῦ καὶ γῆς ὑπάρχων κύριος οὐκ ἐν χειροποιήτοις ἡτοίς κατοικεῖ. οὐδὲ ὑπὸ

χειρῶν ἀνθρωπίνων θεραπεύεται προσδεόμενός τινος, αὐτὸς διδοὺς πᾶσιν ζωὴν καὶ πνοήν καὶ τὰ πάντα.

12. οὐδενὸς ἂν . . . προσδέοιτο: The opt. gives the tone of moral conviction, and has more color and warmth than the indicative. See A 4, 10.

17. ἐνδεικνυμένων: So Steph. for ἐνδεικνύμενοι or -μένοις. On ἐνδ. see A 18, 18.—τὰ μὴ δυνάμενα: So Stephanus for τῶν μὴ δυναμένων.

18. τῷ γι: So Stephanus for τὸ δέ. 'Namely, in thinking that they are giving presents to Him that needs nothing more.' Otto omits the clause as an awkward gloss. Lachmann reads: τῶν μὲν μὴ δυναμένων τῆς τιμῆς μεταλαμβάνειν, τῶν δὲ δοκούντων παρίχειν τῷ μηδεὶνός δεομένῳ. 'Those [the deaf idols] not being able to partake of the honor, and those [the Jews] seeming to give to one who needeth nothing.' But such an antithesis would be incredibly crooked. Gebhardt edits τῶν μὲν μὴ δυναμένοις.

#### 4. THEIR FOOLISH RITES, CUSTOMS, AND CEREMONIES.

The author attacks the superstitious usages of the Jews concerning meats, the Sabbath, circumcision, fasting, the new moon.

1. Ἀλλὰ μὴν: Often in transitions, which involve the meeting of objections.—φοβοδαίς: Lit. 'Starting at every noise,' 'skittishness,' 'shyness.'

3. ἀλαζονείαν καὶ . . . εἰρωνείαν: Comp. Bekker. Anecd. Gr. 243, 20: εἰρωνεία τὸ ἐναντίον ἵστί τῇ ἀλαζονείᾳ, ὅταν δυνάμενός τις ποιῆσαι φάσκη μὴ δύνασθαι· ἀλαζῶν γάρ ἵστιν ὁ ἐπὶ πλεον τὰ ἑαυτοῦ κομπάζων καὶ αὐξων, εἰρων ᾗ ὁ ἐπὶ τὸ ἥττον ἄγων καὶ μειῶν. Here, however, εἰρωνεία is equivalent to 'shuffling,' 'hypocrisy.'

5. οὐ νομίζω: Οὐ restored by Stephanus, dropped by reason of the preceding λόγου.

6. Τό τε: It is not necessary to write τὸ μὲν in order to match τὸ δέ below. Such shiftings occur in the best Greek. Comp. Xen. Cyr. 6, 1, 4.

7. & μὲν . . . & δέ: A 24, 12.

8. πῶς οὐκ ἀλέμστον: So Gebhardt. The MS. has οὐ ξίμς ἵστί, and we expect a negative. Hence Lachmann μίσης. The

editors are generally content with dropping *οὐ*. Steph. conj. *οὐκ ἀξιμίτον ἐστι*.

13. *παρεδρεύοντες*: For the word Otto comp. 1 Cor. 19, 13: *οἱ τῷ θυσιαστηρίῳ παρεδρεύοντες* (v. l. *προσεδρεύοντες*), and 7, 35: *εὐπάρεδρον τῷ κυρίῳ*. Here scornfully, 'dancing attendance on.' Comp. *πάρεδροι*, 'familiar spirits.' A 18, 9.—*ἄστροις*: The Jews counted from night to night (*νυχθήμερον*). The diurnal period began for them when three stars of moderate size appeared above the horizon (Boehl). Observe the chiasm (*χiasμός*) in the position of *ἄστροις* καὶ *σελήνῃ*

X  
*μηνῶν καὶ ἡμερῶν.*

14. *παραιτήρῃσιν* . . . *ποιεῖσθαι*: Comp. Gal. 4, 10: *ἡμέρας παραιρεῖσθε καὶ μῆνας καὶ καιροὺς καὶ ἑνιαυτοὺς*.

15. *τὰς οἰκονομίας θεοῦ κτλ.*: Comp. Cic. N. D. 1, 2, 4.

16. *καταδιαιρεῖν*: The force of *κατά*, as in *καταλίγειν*, of minute completeness, 'to make an exact distribution.'—*πρὸς τὰς αὐτῶν ὁρμὰς*: 'According to their own desires.' It is not necessary to read *αὐτῶν* with Bunsen. See A 21, 28.—*ἃς μὲν* . . . *ἃς δέ*: As above, l. 7.—*ἑορτάς*: Feasts, such as Passover, Pentecost, Tabernacles.

17. *πένθη*: Fasts, such as Day of Atonement, Lev. 23, 27–32.

18. *ἡγήσεται το δαίγμα*: The MSS. have *ἡγήσεται τὸ δαίγμα*. I have followed Lachmann in restoring the normal grammar, as the article is irregular, and the future with *ἂν* rare. But if it were not for the *τό*, I would make no change. See note c. 2, 4. Comp. Tat. Or. ad Gr. 18: *τοῖς κακοῖς ἂν . . . καταχρήσονται*, and Athenag. Suppl. 31, 157: *ὥς ἂν . . . μενοῖμεν*, and Clem. Alex. Paedag. 1, 5, 17: *εἰκότως ἂν πάντες κεκλήσονται μαθηταί*, and 1, 8, 47: *οὐ γὰρ τὸ αἷμα ἂν ποτε προήσεται ρωνήν*.—*κοινῆς*: Common to Jew and Gentile.

19. *εἰκαδότητος καὶ ἀπάτης*: 'Vanity and error' (Otto).

20. *ὥς*: Not in the MSS.; more readily dropped than *ὅτι*, which Otto has inserted.

21. *ἰδίας αὐτῶν*: A 32, 8.

##### 5. THE CHRISTIANS: THEIR HABITS AND CONDITION.

A noble description of the Christian life (Neander). Classical, striking, touching, and sublime, beyond anything we meet with in any of the other Fathers (Bunsen).

1. ἔθει: 'Customs,' rather than 'habits,' as Bunsen translates. To avoid any misapprehension, the author explains below: τοῖς ἰγχωρίοις ἔθουσιν ἐπὶ.

4. βίον παράσημον: Π. of that which is 'differently marked,' hence 'odd,' 'singular,' in a bad sense. 'Nor do they lead a life of marked singularity.'

5. πολυπραγμόνων: The ancient πολυπράγμων is the modern 'man of initiative.' See the interesting passage in Thuc. 6, 87: τῆς ἡμετέρας πολυπραγμοσύνης (of the Athenians).

6. μάθημα τοιοῦτ': For the MS. μαθήματι τοῦτ' with Van Hengel.—εὐρημένον: So many editors after Stephanus. Otto defends the MS. εἰρημένον, and cites c. 7, init.: οὐ γὰρ ἱπύγιον, ὡς ἔφην, εὖρημα τοῦτ' αὐτοῖς παρεδόθη: the last words τ. α. π. being the same as ἵστιν εἰρημένον. An utterly untenable position. Combine αὐτοῖς ἵστιν and ἱπινόα . . . εὐρημένον. 'This doctrine which they have (of theirs) is not one invented by a certain contrivance and excogitation of meddlesome men.'

7. προεστᾶσιν: 'Champion.' Comp. c. 7, 2: οὐδὲ θνητὴν ἱπινίαν φυλάσσειν . . . ἀξιούσι (Otto).

8. βαρβάρους: Especially Jewish.

9. καὶ τοῖς: So Otto. The MS. ἐν τοῖς.

12. πολιτείας: Not 'manner of life' here, but 'polity.'

13. πάροικοι: Comp. 1 Pet. 2, 11: παρακαλῶ ὡς παροίκους καὶ παρεπιδήμους. Also Clem. Rom. Ep. 1 ad Cor., init.: ἡ ἐκκλησία τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡ παροικοῦσα Ῥώμην τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τῇ παροικοῦσῃ Κόρινθον, and Epist. Eccl. Smyrn. ap. Euseb. 4, 15, 3 (p. 109, D. S.).

15. Γαμοῦσιν ὡς πάντες: But the εἰγαμία is excluded. See A 15, 12 (Otto).—καὶ τεκνογονοῦσι: Καὶ added by Bunsen.

16. οὐ βίπτουσι: A 27, 1; 29, 1.

17. παρατίθενται: The regular word for setting a table.—ἀλλ' οὐ κοῖτην: So Maran. The MSS. have κοινήν, 'common but not common,' i. e. 'common but not unclean.' Maran's conjecture is quite satisfactory. The point is often made. Comp. Tertull. Apol. 39 (p. 94, D. S.): *Omnia indiscreta sunt apud nos praeter uxores*. For the contrast with the heathen, see A 27; for τράπεζαν κοινήν, comp. A 14, 16: ἱστιᾶς κοινᾶς μὴ ποιοῦμενοι.—Ἐν σαρκὶ τυγχάνουσι: Sc. ὄντες, c. 2, 7. For the sentiment, comp. 2 Cor. 10, 3; Rom. 8, 12, 13.



18. ἐν οὐρανῷ πολιτεύονται: Comp. Phil. 3, 20: ἡμῶν τὸ πολίτευμα ἐν οὐρανοῖς ὑπάρχει.

20. νικῶσι τοὺς νόμους: Love is not only the fulfilling of the law, but more than the fulfilling. Comp. Rom. 13, 9. 10.—'Ἀγαπῶσι . . . διώκονται: Comp. A 1, 6; 14, 18; 39, 12, and Tertull. ad Scap. 1 (p. 115, D. S.): *Amicos diligere omnium est, inimicos autem eorum Christianorum*; Athenag. Suppl. 11, 47: οὕτως ἐκκαθαρίμηναι εἰσὶ τὰς ψυχὰς ὡς ἀντὶ τοῦ μισθῶν τοὺς ἰχθύροὺς ἀγαπᾶν.

21. Ἄγνοοῦνται . . . ζωοποιούνται: Comp. 2 Cor. 6, 9: ὡς ἀγνοούμενοι καὶ ἐπιγινωσκόμενοι· ὡς ἀποθνήσκοντες καὶ ἰσθὺς ζῶμεν.

22. Πτωχεύουσιν . . . περισσεύουσιν: Comp. 2 Cor. 6, 10: ὡς πτωχοὶ, πολλοὺς δὲ πλουτίζοντες· ὡς μὴ ἐν ἔχοντες καὶ πάντα κατέχοντες. The novice is reminded that πτωχός is 'poor' in its most desperate signification.

24. Ἀτιμούνται . . . δοξάζονται: 1 Cor. 4, 10: ὑμεῖς ἐνδοξοὶ, ἡμεῖς δὲ ἄτιμοι.

25. Λοιδοροῦνται, καὶ εὐλογοῦσιν: Comp. 1 Cor. 4, 12: λοιδορούμενοι εὐλογοῦμεν.

26. Ἀγαθοποιούντες . . . κολάζονται: Comp. 1 Pet. 3, 17.

27. καλαιδέμενοι χαίρουσιν: Comp. 2 Cor. 6, 10: ὡς λυπούμενοι, αἱ ἐν χαίροντες. Suffering in this world for Christ is a pledge of living with Him in the next.

## 6. THEY ARE THE SOUL OF THE WORLD.

As the soul is in the body, so are the Christians in the world. Stationed in the world, the Christian dares not leave his post. Comp. Orig. c. Cels. 8, 70: ὅλες γὰρ εἰσι τηρητικοὶ τῶν τῆς ἐπὶ γῆς συστάσεως τοῦ κόσμου οἱ τοῦ θεοῦ ἄνθρωποι, καὶ συνίστηκε τὰ ἐπὶ γῆς ὅσον οἱ ὅλες οὐ τρέπονται.

1. Ἀπλῶς: 'In fine.'

5. Χριστιανοὶ . . . κόσμον: Comp. Jno. 17, 11. 14. 16: οὗτοι ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ εἰσὶν . . . οὐκ εἰσὶν ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου.

6. Ἀόρατος ἢ ψυχὴ κτλ.: Otto comp. [Plato] Axiochus, 365: ἡμεῖς γὰρ ἴσμεν ψυχὴν, ζῶν ἀθάνατον, ἐν θνητῷ καθιεργμένον φρουρίῳ.

8. μένοντες: So Steph. for μὲν ὄντες.

9. θεοσέβεια: In contrast to the parade of Pagan and Jewish θρησκεία. See c. 1, 2. Comp. A 6, 8: λόγῳ (= πνέυματι) τιμᾶν,

and Rom. 12, 1: λογική (=πνευματική) λατρεία (Otto).—Μισεῖ τὴν ψυχὴν ἢ σὰρξ: The term σὰρξ is found first in the Stoic school, then in the Epicurean, and was finally taken up by the later Platonists, Plutarch and Maximus. See Keim, Celsus, S. 3, 65, and the commentators on Pers. 2, 63: *scelerata—pulpa*.

13. τοὺς μισοῦντας ἀγαπᾶσι: Comp. Matt. 5, 44; Luke 6, 27: ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς ἐχθρούς. Justin, A 15, 30: ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς μισοῦντας, and Dial. c. Tr. 133: ἀγαπᾶν τοὺς μισοῦντας. Otto triumphs in this 'evidence' of the Justinian origin of the Epistle to Diognetus; Credner rejoices in this 'proof' of Justin's ignorance of our Gospels.

14. Ἐγκόλεισται . . . τὸν κόσμον: The world is kept together by the Christians. So Justin says, B 7, 6, that God postpones the breaking up of the world for their sake.—συνέχει δὲ αὐτὴ τὸ σῶμα: Comp. Max. Tyr. 15, 5: τὸ μὲν σῶμα συνέχεται, ἡ δὲ ψυχὴ συνέχεται.

15. ὥς ἐν φρουρᾷ τῷ κόσμῳ: Comp. Plato, Phaedo, 62 B: ὥς ἐν τινι φρουρᾷ ἴσμεν οἱ ἄνθρωποι.

17. σκηνώματι: A familiar figure. Comp. Sap. 9, 15: γεώδες σκήνος, and 2 Pet. 1, 13, 14; 2 Cor. 5, 1; Tatian ad Gr. 15; Euseb. H. E. 3, 31, 1 (p. 92, D. S.). Otto.

19. Κακουργουμένη . . . βελτιοῦται: Here ἡ ψυχὴ is the soul which is called on to eat and drink in Luke 12, 19. It is the ἐπιθυμία or 'appetite.' The notion is old and common. The commentators quote Heraclitus: ἐνθα γῇ ξηρῇ. ψυχὴ σοφωτάτη, and the proverb: φαγεῖα γαστήρ λεπτόν οὐ τίκει νόον. See Persius, 1, 57.

20. πλεονάζουσι: Otto understands the increase to be spiritual, growth in grace, in order to have something to correspond with βελτιοῦνται. But in view of the parallel passage below, c. 7, 31, οὐχ ὅρως ὅσῳ πλείονες κολάζονται, τοσοῦτῳ πλεονάζοντας ἄλλους, such an interpretation is fanciful. The increase of the number of the Christians is a sufficient betterment for the purpose of the passage.

21. τοι αὐτήν: So Lachmann for τοσαύτην, 'so important.'—τάξιν: Comp. Plato, Phaedo l. c.: ὥς ἐν τινι φρουρᾷ ἴσμεν οἱ ἄνθρωποι καὶ οὐδεὶς ἐξ αὐτῶν ἐκ ταύτης λυεῖν οὐδ' ἀποδιεράσκειν.

22. παραιτήσασθαι: 'Shirk.' See A 2, 3.

## 7. THEIR RELIGION NOT OF MAN BUT OF GOD.

God sent the Word by whom He made the world to dwell among men, and established Him in their hearts. He works in meekness, not in wrath—by love, not by fear. But He will come to judge—and then who shall stand?

1. ὡς ἔφην: C. 5, 6.

2. ἐπίνοιαν: 'Fancy,' 'device.'

3. οἰκονομίαν . . . πεπίστευνται: Comp. 1 Cor. 9, 17: οἰκονομίαν πεπίστευμαι; Theophil. ad Autolyc. 1, 12: [ὁ βασιλεὺς] τρόπῳ τινὶ οἰκονομίαν πεπίστευται.

4. αὐτός: 'Of his own accord' (Otto). A common use.

7. ἐνίδρυσε καὶ ἐγκατεστήριξε: 'Planted and established.'

8. ἀνθρώπος: So I read with Bunsen for ἀνθρώποις. Comp. below: ὡς ἀνθρώπων ἂν τις λογίσαιτο, but πρὸς αὐτοὺς ἐπεμψε.

9. ὑπὴρέτην . . . ἢ ἄγγελον ἢ ἄρχοντα: Looks like a climax, but Otto says that it is a subdivision, thus:

ὑπὴρέτην { ἢ τίνα τῶν διεπόντων τὰ ἐπίγεια = ἄγγελον  
ἢ τίνα τῶν πεπιστευμένων τὰς ἐν οὐρανῷ διοικήσεις = ἄρχοντα.

On ὑπὴρέτης, see A 14, 5.

11. τὸν τεχνίτην καὶ δημιουργόν: These terms as applied to Christ are considered marks of later origin. See Harnack on Clem. Rom. 1 ad Cor. 37, 3.

12. ᾧ τοὺς οὐρανοὺς ἐκτίσεν: When the person is considered as an instrument, the dative may be used. It is sometimes overlooked by scholars, and confounded with the dative of the agent (person interested).

13. μυστήρια: 'Mysterious laws' (Bunsen).

14. στοιχεῖα: 'Starry signs' (Bunsen). See B 5, 5.

15. ἡλῖος: Steph.; not in the MS.—σελήνη: Otto inserts ἡ against the MS. With 'sun' and 'moon' the article is not necessary, e. g. Clem. Rom. 1 ad Cor. 20, 8: ἡλῖός τε καὶ σελήνη.—ᾧ . . . ὑποτάσσεται: 'By whom all things have been set in order (οὐρανοὶ καὶ τὰ ἐν οὐρανοῖς) and have had their bounds definitely fixed (θάλασσα καὶ τὰ ἐν τῇ θάλασσῃ), and have been put in subjection [to men] (γῆ καὶ τὰ ἐν τῇ γῇ). So Otto, who cites passages to prove this subjection to man. See c. 10, 4: οἷς ὑπέταξε πάντα τὰ

ἐν τῇ γῇ, and B 5, 5: τὰ ἐπίγεια ἀνθρώποις ὑποτάξας.—ἐν νυκτί: So I read for the poetic νυκτί:, but comp. 2, 32.

21. ἀπίστευται: Changed afterwards into the vague ἐπεμψεν. See A 12, 31.—ὡς ἀνθρώπων ἂν τις λογίσαιτο: See l. 8.

23. ἐπιεικής: This is the word that Matthew Arnold admires so much, 'sweet reasonableness.' See [Plato] Deff. 412 B: ἐπιεικεία δίκαιον καὶ συμφερόντων ἰλάττωσις· μετρίότης ἐν συμβολαίοις· εὐταξία τῆς ψυχῆς λογιστικὴ πρὸς τὰ καλὰ καὶ αἰσχροῦ.—πραότητι: A later form for πραότητι. Comp. 1 Cor. 4, 21: ἐν ῥάβδῳ ὁδῶ πρὸς ὑμᾶς ἢ ἐν ἀγάπῃ πνεύματι τε πραότητος. On the word comp. Clem. Alex. Strom. 4, 6, 36: πραεῖς δὲ εἰσιν οἱ τὴν ἀπιστον μάχην τὴν ἐν τῇ ψυχῇ καταπεπαυκότες θυμοῦ καὶ ἐπιθυμίας καὶ τῶν τοῦτοις ὑποβεβλημένων εἰδῶν. Πράοτης may be the result of a victory over self; μακροθυμία is originally a natural temper.

24. ὡς θεὸν ἐπεμψεν: The balance would be better, if we were to read ὡς θεὸς θεὸν ἐπεμψεν, ὡς ἄνθρωπον πρὸς ἀνθρώπους ἐπεμψεν, and Bunsen has put ἄνθρωπον in his text, after Lachmann. 'Ὡς θεόν: Because God is good and loving. See below l. 26: βία γὰρ οὐ πρόσεισι τῷ θεῷ. Otto comp. 1 Jno. 4, 8: ὁ θεὸς ἀγάπη ἐστίν.

25. ὡς σώζων . . . σὺ κρίνων: Jno. 3, 17: οὐ γὰρ ἀπίστευται ὁ θεὸς τὸν νότον αὐτοῦ εἰς τὸν κόσμον ἵνα κρίνῃ τὸν κόσμον ἀλλ' ἵνα σωθῇ ὁ κόσμος δι' αὐτοῦ.

28. κρίνοντα: 'As judge.' Lachmann reads κρινούντα. Not necessary. The present participle is often used with such verbs, where the future would be more in accordance with the norm.—τίς αὐτοῦ τὴν παρουσίαν ὑποστήσεται: Comp. Mal. 3, 2: τίς ὑποστήσεται ἐν ὁπτασίᾳ αὐτοῦ. Παρουσία, 'coming,' 'advent.'

29. There is a break in the MSS. with this note: Οὕτως καὶ ἐν τῷ ἀντιγράφῳ εὗρον ἰγκοπὴν, παλαιστάτου ὄντος (Otto corrects the poor scribe's Greek unnecessarily. See A 62, 12). Sylburg fills up the gap thus: Καὶ ταύτην διὰ τὴν παρουσίαν αὐτοῦ ἀνεξοιάστως παραδοκῶντας (sic: καταδοκῶντας?) τοὺς κατὰ πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν ἐπ' αὐτὸν πεπιστευκότας οὐκ ἐν τοπάρᾳ ἐστὶ τὸ ἐκφοβεῖν ἢ ζουλαγωγεῖν δυνάμενον. Οὐχ ὁρᾷ γὰρ πολλαχοῦ κεφαλοτομονμένους τε καὶ σταυρομένους καὶ παραβαλλομένους θηρίους κτί. (based on Dial. c. Tryph. c. 110). Stephanus suspects a considerable break, and Overbeck (Studien, 1, 7) desiderates an answer to the second question of Diognetus—an exposition of the love and beneficence of the

Christians, and other detailed descriptions of Christian life on earth, of which their heroism in martyrdom might well form a part.—[Ὁὐχ ὁρᾷς]: A tolerable stop-gap.

8. THE WRETCHED STATE OF THE WORLD BEFORE THE SON OF GOD CAME.

The state of the world before the Divine Logos came was wretched, for no one knew what God is. But God manifested Himself by means of the Word; and whereas, while he kept His counsel veiled in mystery, He seemed to care naught for us, He gave us all things with His Son.

2. πρὶν αὐτὸν ἰλθεῖν: On πρὶν, A 4, 12: αὐτόν = τὸν λόγον (emphatic).—“H: Passionate, like the Latin *an*, ‘Then,’ ‘What!’ a brief *reductio ad absurdum*. The MS. had ἦ, the quiet interrogative.

4. οἱ μὲν τινες: C. 2, 8. — πῦρ: Heraclitus, and after him the Stoics, Diog. Laert. 9, 7: ἐκ πυρὸς τὰ πάντα συνεστάναι καὶ εἰς τοῦτο ἀναλύεσθαι.

5. οὐ: Is often used for οἱ, especially in later Greek, just as we use ‘where’ for ‘whither.’ Here it may be considered even more elegant than οἱ, as the fire is to be the abiding-place. See Breitenbach on Xen. Hell. 2, 3, 54. For a parallel to this Christian unmannerliness, see A 12, 8.

6. Θέωρ: Thales.

7. ἀποδεκτός: Perhaps better accentuated thus, as a verb, than ἀπόδεκτος as an adjective.

9. ἀποφαίνεσθαι θεόν: Otto tr. as if = ἀποφαίνειν ἑαυτὸ θεόν, *se declarare deum*. Unwarranted. The general subject τις is to be supplied for εἴναίτο from the general drift. Steph. would read εἴναίτο ἂν sc. οἱ φιλόσοφοι.

10. γόητων: Common word and common thing in this age. See the vivid portraiture of a γόης in Lucian’s Alexander or Pseudomantis.

11. ἔγνώρισεν: ‘Knew.’ So Stephanus, Bunsen, and others. Otto contends for ‘made known.’ Comp. Eph. 1, 9; 6, 19, and αὐτὸς δὲ ἑαυτὸν ἐπίδειξεν. So too Dörner.

12. ἣ μόνῃ: ‘By which’ = διὰ πίστεως, not *cui soli concessum est*, as the Latin translators have it. The object of συγκεχώρηται is indefinite. The Strasburg MS. had μόνον.—“Ο . . . διεσπότης καὶ

δημιουργός: Above, δημιουργός is used of the Word, c. 7, 11. Properly God is the creator, ὁ ποιητής; Christ ὁ δημιουργός, but the usage is not uniform.

15. ἐγένετο: 'Hath shown himself,' 'proved to be,' a common translation of γίγνομαι.—μακρόθυμος: See note on c. 7, 23. Add Chrysost. Hom. in Rom. 2: διὸ μάλιστα ἀμαρτάνειν οὐ χρή, ἐπειδὴ μακρόθυμος, οὐδὲ τὴν εὐεργεσίαν ὑπόθεσιν ἀγνωμοσύνης ποιῆσαι· εἰ γὰρ μακρόθυμος καὶ κολάζει πάντως.

16. χρηστός: See A 16.—δόρητος: See note on θυμός, A 40, 44.

18. ἐφραστον = ἀνέφραστον.—ἀνεκοινώσατο: For ἦν ἰκοινώσατο, Steph. Otto reads ταύτην.

19. Ἐν ὅσῳ: 'In all the time,' with more emphasis on the length than in ἐν ᾧ, and here = ἕως, 'so long as.' On this mystery, see the passages cited by Otto, Rom. 16, 25, 26; 1 Cor. 2, 7-10; Eph. 3, 4 foll.; Col. 1, 26, 27; 2 Thess. 2, 13.—τὴν σοφὴν αὐτοῦ βουλὴν: Bunsen reads αὐτοῦ unnecessarily. See A 32, 22.

22. πάνθ' ἅμα παρέσχεν ἡμῖν: Rom. 8, 32: πῶς οὐχὶ καὶ σὺν αὐτῷ τὰ πάντα ἡμῖν χαρίσεται;

23. καὶ ἰδεῖν καὶ νοῆσαι ἃ τίς κτέ.: ποιῆσαι. Τίς ἄν. So Beurer's transcript and the Strasburg codex. Stephanus reads ἀκοῦσαι, Maran κατανοῆσαι, Bunsen νοῆσαι, which would match ἐγώ-ρισε above: ἃ is due to Sylburg. The use of the interrogative in a relative clause is familiar, and very lively in Greek. Comp. Dem. 18, 126: λόγους . . . ἐιασείρει [Αἰσχίνης], αὐτὸς εἰρηκῶς ἃ τίς οὐκ ἂν ὤκνησε τῶν μετρίων ἀνδρῶπων φθίγγασθαι;

#### 9. REASONS WHY HE CAME SO LATE.

He came so late that men might be convicted of their unworthiness of eternal life, of their lost and ruined estate, might learn their own helplessness, and thus be prepared for His coming. God's patience with our sins is matched only by His gracious redemption of us through the gift of His Son.

1. Πάντα . . . χρόνον: I have accepted Lachmann's restoration. According to the other editors, the eighth chapter ends with the words: Πάντ' οὖν ᾗ δέει παρ' ἑαυτῷ σὺν τῷ παιδί οἰκονομικῶς, and the ninth chapter: Μέχρι μὲν οὖν κτέ. Lachmann has fused the two sentences, and made the slight change of ᾗ δέει into ἡδὴ, οἰκονομικῶς into οἰκονομηκῶς (late for ὡκονομηκῶς)—hardly to

be considered a change, when we remember the Itacism of later Greek. It is unnecessary to enlarge on the awkwardness of the received reading, the elegance and appropriateness of Lachmann's suggestion.—οικονομῆ κῶς: Comp. the use of *οικονομία* in Eph. 1, 10; 3, 9; 1 Tim. 1, 4. Οικονομικῶς, the ordinary reading, is translated by Stephanus *oeconomica sua scientia*.

2. μέχρι . . . τοῦ πρόσθεν χρόνου: 'During [all] the time past.'

3. ἡδοναῖς καὶ ἐπιθυμίαις ἀπαγομένους: Comp. Tit. 3, 3: δουλεύοντες ἐπιθυμίαις καὶ ἡδοναῖς.

6. τὸν νῦν: Sc. καιρὸν. The MS. has νοῦν. The emendation is due to Van Hengel.

7. ἀγαχθέντες . . . ἀνάξιοι: Sc. ὄντες.

9. ἐξισθῶμεν: Sc. τῆς ζωῆς.—τὸ καθ' ἑαυτοὺς . . . ἀδύνατον: With this use of κατὰ comp. ὁ καθ' ἡμᾶς Χριστός = ὁ ἡμέτερος X. A 42, 11.

11. γενηθῶμεν = γενώμεθα.—πεπλήρωτο: On the omission of the augment, see B 2, 23. Ἐπεὶ with the pluperfect emphasizes the full completion, generally with a conceived interval.

13. ἦλθε δὲ ὁ καιρὸς: Comp. Tit. 3, 4, 5: ὅτε δὲ ὁ χρηστότης καὶ ἡ φιλανθρωπία ἐπεφάνη τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Θεοῦ, οὐκ ἐξ ἔργων τῶν ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ ὧν ἱποίσαμεν ἡμεῖς, ἀλλὰ κατὰ τὸ ἑαυτοῦ ἔλεος ἔσωσεν ἡμᾶς.

14. ὃ τῆς ὑπερβαλλούσης φιλανθρωπίας καὶ ἀγάπης τοῦ Θεοῦ: I have followed Lange's emendation. The ordinary text, as given by Otto and others: ὡς . . . μία ἀγάπη, is untenable. Otto forces a translation as usual: *Cum ob immensam erga homines benivolentiam unicus sit amor dei*. On ὦ with the gen., see A 9, 18. Such an interjectional passage as Lange proposes would be very much in keeping with the intensely rhetorical style of the author as well as with the immediate context.

16. ἀπόστατο: 'Late authors, from Polybius onward, often neglect the syllabic augment of ὠζίω.'

17. ἠνίσχeto, αὐτὸς τὰς ἡμετέρας ἀμαρτίας ἀνεδέξατο: The MS. had ἠνίσχeto λέγων κτλ.: Lachmann reads ἐλεῶν, I omit with Hefele. Otto considers the whole passage an awkward gloss from Isa. 53, 4, 11: οὐτοὶ τὰς ἀμαρτίας ἡμῶν φέρει . . . τὰς ἀμαρτίας αὐτῶν αὐτὸς ἀνοίσει.

18. τὸν Θεὸν υἱὸν . . . ἀπέδοτο: Rom. 8, 32: ὅς γε τοῦ ἰδίου υἱοῦ οὐκ ἐφείσατο ἀλλ' ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν πάντων παρίδωκεν αὐτόν.—ἀπέδοτο: The

active would be more natural. The middle is ordinarily used for 'sell.'—*λύτρον*: To fit *ἀπαγομένους* (Otto).

19. τῶν ἀνόμων: So Otto for *ἀνόμων*.

20. τὸν δίκαιον ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀδίκων: 1 Pct. 3, 18: *ἐπαθεὶν δίκαιος ὑπὲρ ἀδίκων*.

22. καλύψαι: Comp. Jas. 5, 20: *καλύψει πληθὺς ἁμαρτιῶν*.

24. Ὁ τῆς γλυκείας ἀνταλλαγῆς: Comp. A 9, 18.

26. ἵνα . . . κρυβῇ: "ἵνα where we should expect τοῦ or τὸ with inf. *Ἐκρύβην* is a late form.

28. τὸ ἀδύνατον τῆς ἡμετέρας φύσεως: Above, l. 9, we had τὸ κατ' ἑαυτοὺς ἀδύνατον.

30. δυνατόν: Sc. *ὕψα*.—*ἐξ ἀμφοτέρων*: From our proved impotence and the Saviour's proved power.

31. αὐτόν: *Ipsum = Deum*. With the whole passage Otto compares Isa. 11, 2. 3.

33. περὶ ἐνδύσεως . . . μεριμᾶν: Matt. 6, 25-31. Sec A 15, 46.

#### 10. EXHORTATION TO DIOGNETUS TO BECOME A CHRISTIAN.

Believe and know the Father. To know Him is to be full of joy. To love Him is to become an imitator of God. This imitation consists not in domineering over one's neighbors, not in violence or overbearing wealth; it consists in bearing the burdens of others, in supplying the wants of others. Then will ensue the perfect Christian life.

1. εἰν ποθήσης, καταλάβοις ἂν: According to the MS. *καὶ λάβης*, which would leave the sentence without an apodosis, which Krenkel favors. Otto makes *καὶ λάβης* the apodosis, fancying that at this stage of the language *λάβης* may be used as *λάβοις ἂν*. Von Gebhardt reads *κατάλαβε*. I have ventured to put *καταλάβοις ἂν*, 'you must gain.' Lachm. would read: *ἐπιποθήσεις καὶ λάβοις* (opt. of wish).

2. πρῶτον μὲν: To this corresponds *Ἐπιγνοὺς εἰ*.

3. ἡγάπησι: Jno. 3, 16: οὕτως γὰρ ἡγάπησεν ὁ Θεὸς τὸν κόσμον ἐπὶ, and 1 Jno. 4, 9: *ἐν τούτῳ ἐφανέρωθη ἡ ἀγάπη τοῦ Θεοῦ*.—*εἰ* οὕς ἐποίησι τὸν κόσμον: Comp. A 10, 9; B 2.

4. ὑπέταξαι: See c. 7.—*τὰ ἐν τῇ γῇ*: The MS. had *τὰ ἐν \**. Sylburg and Otto insert *τῇ γῇ*, Boehl, Hefele, Lachmann, *αὐτῇ*.

5. εἰς πρὸς αὐτόν ὁρᾶν: Bunsen reads *αὐτόν* unnecessarily,



αὐτὸν being = *ipsum*. Lachm. οὐρανόν from a supposed *compendium scripturae οὐνόν*. Comp. the familiar Ovidian verse: *os homini sublime dedit*, etc.

6. ἐκ τῆς ἰδίας εἰκόνας: Gen. 1, 27. — πρὸς οὓς ἀπέστειλε: C. 7, 20: τοῦτον πρὸς αὐτοὺς ἀπέστειλεν.

7. τὴν ἐν οὐρανῷ βασιλείαν: C. 9, 10: τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ Θεοῦ. Comp. c. 5, 19: ἐν οὐρανῷ πολιτεύονται.

9. Ἐπιγνοῖς: Sc. τὸν πατέρα.—Ἡ πῶς ἀγαπήσεις: 1 Jno. 4, 19: ἡμεῖς ἀγαπῶμεν αὐτὸν ὅτι αὐτὸς πρῶτος ἠγάπησεν ἡμᾶς.

10. Ἀγαπήσεις θεόν: Comp. 1 Jno. 4, 11, 12 and 20, 21.

20. θεὸς γίνεται τῶν λαμβανόντων: Stephanus comp. the Greek proverb: ἀνθρώπος ἀνθρώπου δαιμόνιον. So Caecil. Stat. apud Symmach. Ep. 2, (Obolostat. 5, v. 264 Ribb.): *Homo homini deus est, si suum officium sciat*.

21. μιμητής: Comp. A 10, 5: τοὺς τὰ προσόντα αὐτῷ μιμουμένους, and Max. Tyr. 6, 2: πῶς οὖν γίνονται ἂν ὅμοιοι ἀνθρώποι Διί; μιμούμενοι αὐτοῦ τὸ σωστικὸν καὶ φιληθικὸν καὶ πατρικὸν δὴ τοῦτο.

22. πολιτεύεται: Here 'rules.'

21. θαυμάσις: The middle is the accepted form of the fut. in classic Attic.

26. ἐπιγνῶς: I have restored the normal form. Ἐπιγνώσῃ (MS.) if a fut. ind., would be ungrammatical; if a 1 aor. middle, too poorly supported.

29. τὸ πῦρ τὸ αἰώνιον . . . τὸ πῦρ τὸ πρόσκαιρον: Standing contrasts. Otto cites Dial. c. Tryph. 113; Epist. Eccl. Smyrn. ap. Euseb. H. E. 4, 15.

The chapter is incomplete.

Almost all the editors have agreed in considering the last two chapters, 11 and 12, as proceeding from another hand. So Henri Estienne (Stephanus), who first edited the Epistle, then Sylburg, Tillemont, Boehl, Semisch, and others. In the MSS. of Stephanus and Strasburg there is a marginal note on Οὐ ξένα κτέ., which of itself gives rise to suspicion: καὶ ὥδε ἐγκοπὴν εἶχε τὸ ἀντίγραφον. But besides there are internal arguments enough, such as the completeness of the Epistle without these chapters, the want of connection with the foregoing, the absence of any reference to the questions of Diognetus, which prompted the Epistle, whereas these chapters were written at the bidding of the Spirit. Stress

has also been laid on the textual citation of Paul, and the change from the second person singular to the second person plural in the address, and on the difference of style and vocabulary.

11. I SPEAK WITH AUTHORITY. I KNOW WHEREOF I AFFIRM.

1. ἀποστόλων γινόμενος μαθητής: May have been said in a narrower or in a wider sense.

5. προσφιλής: So Maran for προσφιλεῖ, which seems to be the reading of the MSS.

7. ἐφάνησαν: Sc. αὐτά. Comp. 1 Tim. 3, 16.

8. διηγούμενος: Lachm. reads διηγούμενος.

12. Οὗτος δ' ἐπ' ἐρχῆς: 1 Jno. 1, 1; 2, 13. 14. — δ' καινὸς . . . παλαιός: A 2, 3.

14. δ' σήμερον: With Lachm. for σ. Comp. Ps. 2, 7; Luke 3, 22.

18. ὅρκα πίστεως: So Lachm. for ὅρια πίστεως.

21. χαρά: So Lachm. for χάρις. The eye of the transcriber anticipated here as above.

12. READ AND HEARKEN AND YOU WILL LEARN.

1. ἐντυχόντες: A 14, 3.

5. Ἐν γὰρ τούτῳ τῷ . . . τόπῳ κτέ.: Gen. 2, 9. This allegorical style is not found in the first part of the Epistle.

15. Ἦ γνώσις . . . οἰκοδομῇ: 1 Cor. 8, 1.

19. ἐπ' ἐλπίδι . . . προσδοκῶν: 1 Cor. 9, 7. 10.

23. οὐδὲ πλάνη κτέ.: I have followed Bunsen with Hollenberg. Ordinarily: ὡν ὅφρις οὐχ ἄπτεται οὐδὲ πλάνη συγχρωτίζεται· οὐδὲ εὖα φθίρεται κτέ.

24. παρθένος πιστεύεται: In Paradise Eve is a virgin. Otto cites Justin, Dial. c. Tryph. 100: παρθένης γὰρ οὖσα εἶα καὶ ἄρξορος.

26. κηροί: 'Wax candles,' used by the Christians when they met under cover of the night to avoid persecution, afterwards retained by day for various reasons. Importance was attached to the arrangement of these tapers from the middle of the third century on (Otto). Bunsen reads κληροί, Lachm. proposed πηροί, Sylburg καιροί.—καὶ μετὰ κόσμου: Bunsen inserts πάντα between καὶ and μετὰ, Credner reads μετακόσμια.—ἀρμόζονται: So Otto for ἀρμόζεται.



## GREEK INDEX.

A=First Apology.  
B=Second Apology.  
D=Epistle to Diognetus.

- A.
- ἀγαθοποιεῖν, D 5, 26.  
ἀγαλλιᾶσθαι, A 40, 10.  
ἀγαπᾶν, A 15, 27; B 13, 16.  
ἀγγελικὴ στρατιά, A 52, 11.  
ἄγγελοι ἀγαθοί, A 6, 7.  
    φᾶνλοι, B 7, 2.  
    πονηροί, B 9, 18.  
ἀγίννητος, A 14, 8, 12; 25, 8; 49,  
    18; 53, 8; B 12, 17; 13, 15.  
ἀγωνιᾶν, A 4, 8.  
ἀγωνίζεσθαι, A 14, 4; 58, 11.  
ἀοιῶς, B 12, 27.  
ἀδιάφορος, A 18, 7.  
ἀδιάφορον τίλος, B 3, 26.  
ἀδοξίαι πατρικαί, A 12, 30.  
ἄξιος, with gen., A 6, 2.  
ἄξιώτης, A 4, 32.  
αἰδεῖσθαι, with part., B 12, 34.  
αἵματα, A 13, 2.  
αἰνεῖν, A 13, 5.  
αἶνος, A 41, 8; 67, 11.  
αἰρεῖ λόγος, A 3, 20.  
αἰσχος καὶ λίγειν, A 25, 4.  
αἰτεῖν, A 15, 33; 35, 11; 40, 48.  
αἰτεῖσθαι, D 1, 12.  
αἰτήσεις πέμπειν, A 13, 12.  
ἀκολασταίνειν, B 2, 1.  
ἀκόλαστος, A 9, 18; 15, 23.  
ἀκούειν ὅτι, A 2, 8.  
    ὥς, A 35, 1; 51, 17, 22.  
    with part., A 11, 1; B  
        12, 2.  
ἀκριβὴς καὶ ἱεραστικὸς λόγος, A  
    2, 13.  
ἀλαζονεία, D 4, 3, 20.  
ἀλαζονεύεσθαι, D 4, 11.
- ἀληθὴς λόγος, A 3, 5; 5, 12.  
ἄληπτος=ἀνεπίληπτος, A 3, 10.  
ἀλλὰ μὴν . . . γε, D 4, 1.  
ἀλλ' ἤ, A 40, 28; 57, 10; B 4, 6;  
    7, 9.  
ἀλλαγὴ τοῦ ἀνθρωπείου γένους, A  
    23, 9.  
ἀλληλοφύνοι, A 14, 15.  
ἀλληλοφύονται, A 39, 13.  
ἄλλοεθνής, A 53, 37.  
ἄλλος παρά, A 19, 19; 26, 28; 58, 6.  
    τῶν ἄλλων ἀγγέλων, A 6, 6.  
ἀλλότριον ποιεῖσθαι, B 2, 8.  
ἀλογισταίνειν, A 46, 1.  
ἄλογος—ὁρμή, A 2, 15.  
    φωνή, A 3, 1.  
    ἄλογον πάθος, A 5, 3.  
ἁμαρτάνειν, 1 aor., A 61, 19.  
ἀμείβεσθαι, 'requite,' A 44, 35.  
ἀμῖν, A 65, 16.  
ἁμορφος ἔλη, A 10, 9.  
ἁμνερῶς ὁρᾶν, B 13, 20.  
ἀν omitted (regular), A 12, 40; 33,  
    15; 39, 16; 48, 29.  
    (irregular), A 10, 22;  
        19, 9.  
    with fut. ind., D 4, 17.  
    with fut. part., D 2, 4.  
ἄν=ἰάν, A 2, 4; 3, 14.  
ἀναγεννᾶσθαι, A 61, 10, 11.  
ἀναγινώσκειν, A 31, 19.  
ἀναγράφειν, A 27, 18; 60, 4; 63,  
    22.  
    ὄνον ἐν μυστηρίοις, A  
        54, 26.  
ἀναδέχεσθαι τὸ βάρος, D 10, 18.  
ἀναδιδόναι, A 29, 7; 67, 32; B 2,  
    26.

- ἀναισθησία, A 18, 3; 57, 14.  
 ἀναιτιος θεός, A 44, 22.  
 ἀναλύεσθαι εἰς πῦρ, A 20, 4.  
 ἀναπέμπειν αἶνον καὶ ἐδόξαν, A 65, 13.  
     εὐχὰς καὶ εὐχαριστίας, A 67, 15.  
 ἀνάπηρος, A 22, 17.  
 ἀναπολόγητος, A 3, 21; 28, 12.  
 ἀνατιθῆναι ἑαυτὸν τῷ θεῷ, A 14, 12; 25, 9; 49, 19; 61, 1.  
 ἀνατρέπειν, A 27, 19.  
 ἀνατροπή λυχνίας, A 26, 33.  
 ἀνατροφή παιδῶν, A 29, 3.  
     ἀνατροφῆαι πονηραί, A 61, 31.  
 ἀναφέρειν εἰς τινα, A 27, 16; B 5, 24; 12, 35.  
     'cite,' B 2, 5.  
     'report,' B 3, 17.  
 ἀνδριάς, A 26, 9.  
 ἀνδροβατεῖν, B 12, 27.  
 ἀνδρόγυνοι, A 27, 8.  
 ἀνδρουσάζει, A 31, 28; 35, 2.  
 ἀνδροφονεῖν, B 12, 21.  
 ἀνδροφόνος, A 29, 2; B 2, 51.  
 ἀνεγείρειν, 'erect,' A 26, 9.  
 ἀνέδην—αἱ ἀνέδην μίξις, A 26, 34; 29, 6; B 7, 8.  
 ἀνεκτίγητος, A 51, 2.  
 ἀνέλεγκτος, A 7, 13; B 13, 18.  
 ἀνέλευσις εἰς οὐρανόν, A 26, 1.  
 ἀνενδεής, A 13, 2; 57, 12.  
 ἀνεξίκακος, A 16, 1.  
 ἀνεπίμκτος, A 6, 4.  
 ἀνευ, A 4, 2.  
 ἀνέχεται, with inf., D 2, 36.  
 ἀνῆτιν, B 11, 11.  
 ἀνθρωπαρέσκια—εἰσις αἰμόνων, A 2, 14.  
 ἀνθρώπιος, fem., B 10, 1; 15, 7.  
 ἀνθρώπινος, fem., A 11, 2.  
 ἀνθρώπος ἐξ ἀνθρώπων, A 30, 2; 54, 35.  
 ἀνόσιος, A 5, 23.  
 ἀνταίρειν, A 16, 9.  
 ἀντιτιθῆναι, A 30, 1.  
 ἀντιτυπεῖν, A 8, 9.  
 ἀγνωμάστος θεός, A 63, 1.  
 ἀξίεραστος, B 3, 25.  
 ἀξιόπιστος, D 8, 3.  
 ἄξιος, with dat., A 10, 10.  
     absolute, A 52, 13.  
 αἰοῦν, A 3, 2, 8; 7, 12, 15; 23, 6; B 14, 1.  
 αἰργητος, A 16, 2; D 8, 16.  
 ἀπαγειν (to death), A 31, 26; B 2, 48, 59.  
 ἀπαθανατίζειν, A 21, 16, 30.  
 ἀπάθεια, B 1, 11.  
 ἀπαθής, A 25, 8; 57, 12.  
 ἀπαιτεῖν, A 2, 12; 17, 17; 68, 9; B 14, 10.  
 ἀπαλλάσσειν (intrans.), A 44, 20.  
 ἀπαράβατος—εἰμαρμένη, A 43, 24.  
 ἀπεραντος αἰῶν, A 28, 6.  
 ἀπερινόητος, D 7, 7.  
 ἀπιστεῖν μὴ, A 57, 13.  
 ἀπλως, A 67, 24.  
 ἀπό: ἀφ' ἑαυτοῦ, sua sponte, A 43, 29.  
     ἀπ' ἐκείνου (of a sect), A 26, 22; B 8, 1; 11, 27.  
     ἀπὸ μέρους, B 10, 24; 13, 10.  
     ἀπὸ προσώπου, A 36, 2; 47, 4; 49, 5; 53, 31.  
 ἀπό=ἀπὸ προσώπου, A 37, 8; 44, 6.  
 ἀποβλίπειν, A 18, 1.  
 ἀποδεικνύειν ὅτι, A 12, 27; 13, 18.  
     part., A 8, 3.  
     inf., 36, 14; 52, 2; 54, 4.  
 ἀποδεικτός, A 43, 10; D 8, 7.  
 ἀποδέχεσθαι, with gen., D 1, 10.  
 ἀποδανεῖν τὸν κοινὸν θάνατον, A 18, 2.  
 ἀποκίεσθαι, A 18, 5; 32, 4.  
 ἀποκόπτειν=εκτέμνειν, A 27, 15.  
 ἀποκυεῖν, A 46, 21; B 6, 16.  
 ἀπολογίαν φέρειν, B 12, 28.  
 ἀπομνημονεῖν, A 33, 23.  
 ἀπομνημονεύματα, A 66, 13; 67, 8.  
 ἀποπτος (?), B 13, 13.  
 ἀποσκευάζεσθαι, D 2, 3.  
 ἀποστέλλειν, with inf., A 39, 13.  
 ἀπόστολος I. X., A 12, 34; 63, 24; comp. 63, 12.  
 ἀποτύττεισθαι, A 49, 18.  
 ἀποτιθέναι, A 67, 21.  
 ἀποφαίνεσθαι, A 20, 18; 43, 7; 57, 15; B 7, 22.

ἀργυροκόπος, D 2, 16.  
 ἀρκεῖσθαι, A 7, 15; 29, 11.  
     with inf., 56, 1.  
 ἀρρητοποιός, A 27, 8.  
 ἀρρητος θεός, A 61, 38.  
     πατήρ, B 10, 30.  
 ἀρχηγέτης, A 28, 1; 31, 24.  
 ἀρχήν, τὴν ἀρχήν, A 10, 8, 16; 19,  
     12; 28, 10; 29, 3; 59, 8; B 6,  
     8; 7, 23.  
 ἄρωγοι καὶ σύμμαχοι, A 12, 1.  
 ἀσελγής, A 4, 32; 9, 15.  
 ἀσκεῖν βίον, D 5, 4.  
 ἀσχολεῖσθαι περί τι, A 63, 58.  
 ἄσωτος μανία, A 61, 39.  
 ἀτακτος φορέα, D 9, 3.  
 ἀτίραχος, A 46, 19.  
 ἀτρεπτος θεός, A 13, 20.  
 ἀτοπος, A 29, 12.  
 αὐ πᾶν, A 20, 4.  
 αὐτεξούσιον, B 7, 22.  
 αὐτοκράτωρ, A 1, 1.  
 αὐτολεξί, A 32, 2; 83, 1; 59, 5.  
 αὐτός emphatic, D 7, 4.  
     for οὗτος, A 33, 21.  
 αὐτοῦ for αὐτοῦ, A 32, 22;  
     40, 31. Comp. A 4, 34;  
     21, 28; 40, 18; B 2, 12;  
     9, 10; 13, 12; D 4, 16.  
 ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτό, A 40, 39; 67, 7.  
 καὶ αὐτός. See καί.  
 αὐτοὶ ἑαυτοῖς, A 44, 30.  
 αἰχμηρός, B 11, 15.  
 ἀψαρσίαν ἐνέυσσασθαι, A 19, 17.  
     ἐνέυσσι, A 52, 18.  
 ἀψορος, A 15, 18.  
 ἀφορμή, A 4, 25; 44, 27.  
 ἀφραίνειν, B 11, 6.  
 ἀφραστος=ἀνέκφραστος, D 8, 18.  
 ἄχρις, A 35, 2.  
 B.  
 βανανουργοί, A 55, 12.  
 βάρβαρος, A 5, 19; 7, 8; 46, 12;  
     D 5, 8.  
 βασιλειον=βασιλεία, A 32, 12.  
 βασιλεύς, 'emperor,' A 14, 25; 17,  
     10.  
 βασιλικώτατος=-ώτερος, A 12, 28.  
 βασιλῆς, A 26, 8; 56, 10.  
 βέβαιος πρὸς, A 12, 36.

βήξιλλον=νεχιλλωμ, A 55, 21.  
 βυβλίδιον, A 29, 6; B 2, 25; 14, 2.  
 βίος—εἰς τὸν βίον εἰσελθεῖν, D 1, 9.  
 βιοτή—ζῆν τὴν ἐνθάδε βιοτήν, B  
     12, 8.  
 βιοῦν, A 16, 27; 46, 18; 57, 5;  
     61, 6.  
 βόδρος—ὁ παρ' Ὀμήρῳ, A 18, 17.  
 βοραί, A 26, 35.  
 βραχυπῶς, A 49, 23; B 9, 6.

## Γ.

γαμετή, B 2, 8.  
 γέιννα, A 19, 30.  
 γένεισις—γένεισιν γυννηθῆναι, A 22,  
     5; 61, 28.  
 γινήσις and γινέσθαι, A 12, 38;  
     52, 20.  
 γινητήρ θεός, A 13, 20.  
 γιραῖρειν, D 3, 16.  
 γίγας, A 40, 11.  
 γίνεσθαι (not γίγνεσθαι), A 15, 43.  
 γινώσκειν (not γινῶ), with inf., A 11,  
     5; 12, 7; B 2, 61.  
 γνωρίζειν, D 8, 11.  
 γνωριστικός, B 14, 7.  
 γόης, D 8, 10.  
 γράμμα—εἰς γραμμάτων θεοὺς ἱπο-  
     νομάζειν, A 55, 26.  
 γραφή—ἐν γραφαῖς (ταφαῖς?), A  
     24, 10.  
     μαγικαὶ γραφαί, B 5, 13.  
 γύναιον, B 12, 14.

## Δ.

δαίμονες ἀνόσοι καὶ κακοί, A 5,  
     23.  
 φαῦλοι, A 5, 6; 10, 22;  
     52, 14; 57, 2; 58, 2;  
     B 1, 14; 7, 2, 6; 10,  
     15; 12, 11; 18, 8.  
 δαιμονιόληπτος, A 18, 13; B 6, 18.  
 δέ. See καί—δε.  
 δέισθαι, A 10, 1; B 14, 13.  
 δεισιδαιμονία, D 1, 7; 4, 2.  
 δεισιδαιμων, A 2, 15.  
 δεκαέτις, A 39, 9.  
 δῆ, A 62, 1.  
 ἐηλοῦν, with inf., B 7, 33.  
 ἐήμιος, A 12, 18.  
 ἐημιουργεῖν, A 10, 8.

- δημοργός, A 13, 1; 26, 24; D 7, 11; 8, 13.  
 διά with acc. and gen., A 23, 11; 29, 14; 46, 19.  
 παρδένον, A 22, 15; 32, 50; 33, 1; 46, 21; 54, 38; 63, 50.  
 διαβεβαιούσθαι, A 19, 8.  
 διάβολος, A 28, 2.  
 διαγεν, A 20, 15.  
 διαγιγνώσκιν—εὐγνώσμεθα, A 2, 19.  
 διαδίδχσθαι, A 12, 30.  
 διαδοχή, A 31, 38; 32, 54.  
 διάκονος, A 65, 18; 67, 18.  
 διαλύειν, A 43, 4; B 5, 4.  
 εἰασύρειν, A 35, 19.  
 διατάσσειν, D 7, 17.  
 διατιδίνειν, constr., A 9, 9; 63, 28.  
 διαφέρειν, A 55, 14.  
 διαφορὰ καὶ προτροπή, A 21, 21.  
 διγαμία, A 15, 12.  
 διδάσκειν, with inf., = ὅτι with ind., A 10, 4; 21, 30; 46, 8; 63, 2; 66, 12; B 4, 5.  
 διδόναι—δῶται=δοῶ, A 51, 9 (note).  
 διδύμοι=ὄρχις, A 29, 8.  
 δέπειν, D 7, 10.  
 δικαιοπραγεῖν, A 12, 17.  
 δικαιούσθαι, D 5, 25; 9, 23.  
 δίκη—δικη=τῇ δικῇ, A 4, 9.  
 δίκην σπερμάτων, A 19, 15.  
 διορίζειν, D 7, 17.  
 δογματίζειν, A 2, 5; 4, 30; 7, 6.  
 δοκεῖν, A 3, 1.  
 δοξάζειν, A 4, 30; 5, 2.  
 δουλαγωγεῖν, B 11, 24.  
 εὐῶλος καὶ ὑπερίτης, A 14, 6.  
 ἐννάμεις, A 16, 36; 26, 7; 30, 3; 56, 8.  
 λογικά, A 10, 18.  
 ἐνσεξήγητος, B 6, 12.  
 ἐνσκήνητος, B 1, 13.  
 ἐνσμετάδετος, B 1, 12.  
 ἐνσωπεῖν, B 2, 12.  
 ἐωρεῖσθαι, pass., D 11, 17.  
 E.  
 ἱαντοῖς=ἡμῖν αὐτοῖς, A 13, 7; B 4, 14.  
 ὑμῖν αὐτοῖς, A 15, 37, 38.  
 ἱαντόν=σαντόν, B 11, 17.  
 ἱαντοῖς=ἡμᾶς αὐτοῖς, A 25, 9; 61, 1.  
 ὑμᾶς αὐτοῖς, A 3, 7; B 4, 1.  
 ἱαντῶν=ἡμῶν αὐτῶν, A 18, 22; 65, 4.  
 ὑμῶν αὐτῶν, A 2, 16; B 15, 14.  
 ἱγκαταστηρίζειν, D 7, 7.  
 ἱγκρατεύσθαι, A 29, 4.  
 εἰ, with ind. pres., A 4, 6; 15, 27; 28, 14; B 8, 18; D 3, 2, 5.  
 fut., A 8, 17; 17, 13; 45, 19; B 4, 9; 7, 34.  
 imperf., A 11, 6; 19, 2; 44, 20; B 5, 1; 7, 5, 27; 11, 2.  
 aor., A 33, 14; 53, 11.  
 with subj. (?), A 57, 11.  
 ἰάν (ἦν, ἄν), with subj.  
 pres., A 2, 4; 3, 31; 4, 11; B 9, 12, 16.  
 aor., A 3, 15; 4, 17, 19; 10, 9; B 4, 12.  
 opt. pres., A 3, 4; 31, 25; 56, 17.  
 aor., A 22, 7; 61, 38; B 5, 1.  
 'whether,' A 2, 10.  
 εἰ ἔἴ μὴ γε, A 15, 53; B 15, 7.  
 καί, A 22, 1, 15; 55, 24.  
 μή, A 10, 22; 16, 25; 29, 8; 33, 36; 55, 12.  
 τύχοι, A 27, 13.  
 εἰδέναι, with inf., A 26, 20; 50, 19.  
 with ὅτι, A 12, 44.  
 πρὸς εἰδότας λέγειν, A 21, 20.  
 εἰδόσι λέγειν, A 9, 8.  
 εἶδος, D 2, 7.  
 εἰκαιότης, D 4, 19.  
 εἰκονοποιεῖν ὁστίᾳ, νεῦρα, σάρκα, A 19, 4.  
 εἰκός (?), D 3, 10.  
 εἰμαρμένη, A 43, 2; B 7, 15, 21.  
 εἰμαρται, A 43, 9.  
 εἶναι=ἔξιναι, A 3, 15; 12, 40; 36, 10; 60, 28; 61, 39.  
 εἰπεῖν, with inf., = ὅτι with ind., A 33, 11; 46, 3; 59, 3; 60, 17.  
 εἰρήσεται, A 5, 5; B 9, 22.

- εἰρωνεία*, D 4, 4.  
*εἰς τό*, with inf., A 15, 32.  
*εἰσέρχεται εἰς τὸν βίον*, D 1, 10.  
*εἰσποίητος*, A 1, 4.  
*εἰσφορά*, A 17, 1; 27, 10.  
*εἴτε* (solitary), B 3, 7; 7, 33.  
*ἐκ γενέτης*, A 22, 17.  
*παίδων*, A 15, 18.  
*παντός*, A 7, 6; B 12, 8.  
*παντός γένους*, A 1, 5; 25, 1; 40, 19; 42, 19.  
*ἑκατοντάχειρ*, A 25, 12.  
*ἑγελᾶν*, A 40, 42.  
*ἐκείγισθαι*, B 11, 20.  
*ἐκδυσωπεῖν*, B 2, 12.  
*ἐκτεῖνο τοῦ καιροῦ*, A 17, 2; 26, 15; 33, 18; 60, 5; 62, 10.  
*ἐκμυκτηρίζειν*, A 40, 43 (LXX).  
*ἐκπερινοστεῖν*, A 54, 42.  
*ἐκπύρωσις*, A 20, 13; 45, 6; 57, 1; 60, 14; B 7, 12.  
*ἐλίγχειν*, A 2, 18; D 2, 40.  
     with *ὅτι*, B 3, 16.  
     with *ὥς*, A 63, 43.  
*ἐλευσις*—*ἀνέλευσις*, A 26, 1.  
     *μετέλευσις*, A 43, 16.  
     *συνέλευσις*, A 40, 18; 67, 7, 24.  
*ἐλκειν λογισμὸν*, B 11, 31.  
*ἐλλὰς φωνή*, A 31, 16.  
*ἐλπίζειν*, with aor. inf., A 15, 33.  
*ἐμβροντησία*, A 9, 18.  
*ἐμπαῖναι ξύλῳ*, B 3, 2.  
*ἐμπαδῶς*, A 57, 5.  
*ἐμπνέειν*—*τῶν ἐμπεπνευσμένων*, A 36, 3.  
*ἐμφορεῖν πειῶν καὶ πίστιν*, A 53, 46.  
*ἐν* (instrumental use), A 38, 14; 40, 50.  
*ἐνάριτος*, A 12, 4; 21, 31; 45, 6; B 1, 10.  
*ἐναρίτως*, B 9, 5.  
*ἐναυτινίζειν*, A 42, 6.  
*ἐνδεϊκνυσθαι*, D 5, 11.  
*ἐνδύσασθαι ἀφθαρσίαν*, A 19, 17.  
*ἐνδύσει ἀφθαρσίαν*, A 52, 13.  
*ἐνιργεῖν*, A 5, 15; 12, 22; 23, 14; 26, 7, 18; 62, 1; 63, 28; 64, 2; B 7, 6; 12, 11.  
*ἐνθα*, A 8, 9.  
*ἐνιῶρύειν*, D 7, 7.
- ἐννοια*—*ἡ πρώτη ἐννοια*, A 26, 16; 64, 14.  
*ἐννοίας εἰκών*, A 64, 15.  
*ἐννοίαν ἐννοεῖν*, D 8, 17.  
*ἐνταῦθα*, A 13, 19.  
*ἐντενίζειν*, A 1, 9.  
*ἐντριπίσσαι*, A 38, 8.  
*ἐντυγχάνειν*, 'read,' A 14, 3; 26, 38; 44, 43, 46; 45, 20; B 3, 8, 11; 15, 10; D 12, 1.  
*ἐξ*—and *ὑπό*, A 12, 20.  
*ἀνδρώπων*, A 21, 12.  
*ἐξακολουθεῖν*, A 2, 3; 10, 16.  
*ἐξαναγκάζειν*, B 1, 1.  
*ἐξετάζειν*, A 3, 8.  
*ἐξεταστικὸς λόγος*, A 2, 13.  
*ἐξεταστικῶς*, A 5, 13.  
*ἐξηγητής*, A 32, 10.  
*ἐξῆς*, A 32, 41; D 3, 1.  
*ἐξομοιοῦν*, A 6, 7.  
*ἐξουθενεῖν*, A 63, 52.  
*ἐπάγειν πράγματα*, A 3, 7.  
*ἐπαίρεσθαι*, with gen., A 58, 14.  
*ἐπαναγωγή*, A 23, 10.  
*ἐπαστής*, B 6, 23.  
*ἐπί*, 'whereas,' A 4, 3.  
*ἐπιούῃ*, with imperf., A 31, 14.  
*ἐπυμφεῖν*, A 65, 15, 17; 67, 16.  
*ἐπηρεάζειν*, A 1, 5.  
*ἐπί*, with gen.:  
     *ἐφ' ἑαυτοῦ*, 'unmarried,' A 29, 11.  
     *ἐφ' ἡμῶν*, 'in our case,' A 5, 1, 17; comp. 36, 9; 55, 1.  
     *ἐπ' ὀνόματος*, A 61, 11, 41.  
     *ἐπὶ τίγους ἵστασθαι*, A 26, 15.  
     *ἐφ' ὑμῶν*, 'before you,' A 4, 12; B 3, 18.  
     *ἐπ' ὑποδίσειως*, A 19, 7.  
     *ἐπί*=*tempore*, A 13, 15; 26, 6; 34, 9; 35, 23; 46, 3, 6; 56, 11; 61, 42.  
     with dat.:  
     *ἐπ' ἀλλαγῇ*, A 23, 9.  
     final cause:  
     *ἐπ' ἀνατροφῇ*, A 29, 3.  
     *ἐπ' ἀπαγωγῇ*, A 54, 3.  
     *ἐπὶ κολάσει*, A 57, 1.  
     *ἐπ' ἐπαναγωγῇ*, A 23, 10.  
     *ἐπὶ συκοφαντίᾳ*, B 12, 12.



ἐπί, with dat. :

of emotion, A 42, 13; G1, 35.

ἐπί=penes :

ἐφ' ἡμῖν, A 8, 1; 43, 8; B 4, 11;

ἐπ' αὐτοῖς, A 40, 22.

ἐπί χρόνοις, A 13, 15.

with acc. :

ἐπί, 'after,' A 21, 27; 25, 9, 10; 33, 11.

ἐπί πολύ, A 65, 14.

ἐπί τὸ αὐτό, A 40, 89; 67, 7.

ἐπιβαίνειν τοῖς ἱεροῖς, A 62, 7.

ἐπιγινώσκειν, A 16, 42.

ἐπίγνωσις, B 10, 19.

ἐπιγράφειν, A 4, 28.

ἐπιείκεια, D 7, 23.

ἐπικατηγορεῖν, A 7, 9; 26, 31.

ἐπικύρωσις (?), A 45, 6.

ἐπιμένειν μὴ, with inf., B 7, 2.

ἐπιμονή, constr., A 28, 7.

ἐπίνοια, D 7, 2.

ἐπίσκεψις, A 3, 17; 18, 18; 44, 47.

ἐπίσταμαι, with ὅτι, A 7, 15; 24, 11; 47, 15.

with inf., A 5, 10; 44,

48; 46, 15; B 9, 18.

with part., B 14, 8.

ἐπίστασις, A 44, 38.

ἐπίτασις (?), A 44, 33.

ἐπιτήδευμα, D 1, 9.

ἐπιτροπος, A 13, 16; 34, 10; 40, 17.

ἐπιφάνεια—ἐπιφάνεια ὀνείρων, A 14, 5.

ἐπιφανείας ποιήσασθαι, A 5, 6.

ἐπόπτευσις παιδῶν, A 18, 8.

ἐπόπτης θεός, B 12, 32.

ἐπορκίζειν, B 6, 20.

ἐπορκιστής, B 6, 23.

ἐρᾶν, A 39, 23.

ἐραστής παιδείας, A 1, 4; 2, 9.

ἔργον, A 3, 16.

ἔρειν (present), D 2, 8.

ἔρευνᾶν, A 28, 3.

ἔρμαιον, A 18, 4.

ἔρωτοποιεῖν, B 11, 10.

ἔστις ποιέσθαι, A 14, 16.

ἔτερος παρά—, A 43, 32.

εὐ πράττειν, A 28, 11.

εὐαγγέλια, A 66, 14.

εὐαγγελίζεσθαι, with acc., A 33, 19.

εὐέλπης, with aor. inf., A 14, 20.

εὐδαλείν, D 12, 4.

εὐδύνην τοῦ βίου παρίχυν, A 3, 10.

εὐδοῦν, B 7, 33.

εὐρίσκειν (constr.), A 4, 8.

εὐσιβής, A 1, 1.

εὐτόνως, A 65, 5.

εὐτονώτερος, B 10, 12.

εὐφώνως ὑβρίζειν, A 4, 35.

εὐχαριστεῖν—ὁ εὐχαριστηθεὶς ἀρετός, A 65, 19.

ἡ εὐχαριστηθεῖσα τροφή, A 66, 10.

εὐχαριστία, A 65, 13; G6, 1.

εὐχερώς, B 2, 22.

εὐχή—εὐχὰς ποιέσθαι, A 65, 4.

εὐχὰς καὶ εὐχαριστίαν ἀνατίμπειν, A 67, 15.

εὐχὰς τίμπειν, A 67, 13.

λόγος εὐχῆς καὶ εὐχαριστίας, A 13, 4; and προσευχή, A 13, 4 (note).

εὐχομαι, with aor. inf., A 15, 20.

εἶχιν=δύνασθαι, A 3, 5; 4, 19; 16, 13; 19, 20; 24, 8; 53, 1; 61, 38; D 5, 30.

with part., A 56, 9.

οὐκ εἶχω, constr., A 12, 18.

with adverb, A 3, 8; 40, 13.

οἱ ἔχοντες, 'the well-to-do,' A

ἔχουσιν, with gen., A 68, 1. [67, 2.

ἔχθρός, A 31, 20.

ἔως ἂν, A 45, 3.

Z.

ζῆν τὴν ἐνθάδε βιοτήν, B 12, 8.

ζωοποιεῖν, D 5, 22, 28.

H.

ἦ and ἱ confounded, A 4, 4; 29, 7; B 3, 3.

ἦ after θέλειν, A 15, 26.

ἡγείσθαι, A 4, 5.

ἡγή, A 23, 1.

ἡλίου ἡμέρα, A 67, 6, 25, 31.

ἦν, with ind., A 2, 19.

## Θ.

- θάνατον ἀποθανεῖν, A 18, 2.  
 θάνατος ἡ ζημία, A 11, 5.  
 ὠρίσθη, A 44, 41. See ὀρί-  
 ζειν.  
 θανάτου καταφρονεῖν, D 1, 5.  
 θεῖος λόγος, A 36, 4.  
 θελεκτός, B 11, 11.  
 θίλω and ἰθίλω, A 15, 25; B 1, 5.  
 θίμης, A 33, 27; D 4, 8.  
 θιμτός, D 6, 22.  
 θεός—ὁ ἀγίννητος, A 14, 9; ὁ  
 ἀγίννητος καὶ ἀπαθής, A  
 25, 8.  
 ἀγίννητος ὢν, B 6, 1; ὁ ἀγίν-  
 νητος καὶ ἀρρητος, B 12,  
 17; 13, 15.  
 ὁ ἀγνωστος, B 10, 18.  
 ὁ ἀληθέστατος καὶ πατήρ ὁ-  
 κιοσύνης καὶ σωφοσύνης  
 καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ἀρετῶν, A  
 6, 2.  
 ὁ ἀνεπίμικτος κακοῦ, A 6, 4.  
 ὁ ἀρρητος, A 61, 38.  
 ὁ ἀτρεπτος καὶ αἰεὶ ὢν καὶ  
 γεννήτωρ τῶν πάντων, A  
 13, 20.  
 ὁ ἐισπότης πάντων καὶ πα-  
 τήρ, A 36, 6.  
 ὁ δημιουργός τοῦδε τοῦ παν-  
 τός, A 13, 1; τῶν πάντων,  
 A 58, 6.  
 ὁ ἐπόπτης ὁ δίκαιος, B 12,  
 32.  
 ὁ ὄντως, A 13, 16.  
 ὁ παντοκράτωρ καὶ παντοκτί-  
 στης καὶ ἀόρατος, D 7, 5.  
 ὁ πάντων δεσπόζων, A 14,  
 21.  
 ὁ πατήρ τῶν πάντων, A 45,  
 2; ὁ πατήρ τῶν ὅλων, A  
 63, 39, 45; 65, 11; ὁ πα-  
 τήρ πάντων καὶ ἐισπότης,  
 A 12, 34; 32, 39; 46, 20;  
 ὁ πατήρ τῶν ὅλων καὶ δε-  
 σπότης, A 61, 11, 36; ὁ  
 πάντων πατήρ καὶ δημιουργ-  
 ός, A 8, 5; ὁ τῶν ὅλων  
 πατήρ καὶ δημιουργός, A  
 63, 33.

- θεός—ὁ ποιητής τοῦδε τοῦ παντός,  
 A 26, 27; ὁ πάντων ποιη-  
 τής, A 20, 7; ὁ ποιητής  
 τ. πάντων, A 67, 4; ὁ ποιη-  
 τής τῶν οὐρανίων καὶ γηί-  
 νων ἀπάντων, A 58, 3.  
 θεοσίβεια, D 1, 2; 4, 17, 20; 6, 9.  
 θεοσιβεῖν, D 3, 1.  
 θεοφορεῖσθαι, A 33, 36; 35, 8.  
 θετός—θετὸν ὄνομα, A 10, 7; B  
 6, 1.  
 θεωρητικός, A 28, 13.  
 θρησκεία, D 3, 6.  
 θρησκεύειν, A 62, 8; D 1, 4; 2,  
 36.  
 θυμάτων καὶ θυμαμάτων, B 5, 15.  
 θυμός and ὀργή, A 40, 44.

## I.

- ī for ἡ, B 3, 3.  
 ἱεῖος, with gen., A 32, 8.  
 ἱεοῦ, A 33, 13.  
 ἱεώτης, A 39, 10; B 3, 9; 10,  
 28.  
 ἱερά σύγκλητος, A 1, 4; 56, 15; B  
 2, 55.  
 ἱερόν, A 9, 20; 32, 29; 62, 3.  
 ἵνα τί, A 40, 37.  
 ἵπποι φορβάδες, A 27, 6.  
 ἵστασθαι—ἐπὶ τίγους σταθῆναι, A  
 26, 15. See c. 27, 9.  
 ἱστορεῖν, with part., A 53, 35.  
 ἰσχύειν, with inf., A 44, 45.

## K.

- καθαρεῖν—καθαίρησατε, A 56, 19.  
 καθαρίζειν τῆς πληγῆς, A 51, 9.  
 κατισθησόμενος, A 35, 26.  
 καθορδοῦν, B 7, 16.  
 καί—emphatic, A 17, 12; 44, 24.  
 epeexegetic, A 65, 10.  
 καὶ αὐτός, A 54, 35; 63, 14;  
 B 6, 10.  
 καὶ αὐτή, B 2, 2.  
 καὶ αὐτά, B 5, 7.  
 καὶ αὐτοί, B 4, 12.  
 καὶ γάρ, A 4, 12; 7, 2; 35,  
 18; 61, 14; 62, 6; 63, 57;  
 B 3, 14; 6, 14; 10, 13; 13,  
 1.  
 καὶ γάρ τοι, A 4, 27.

plu. foli. 273

- καί—καί—δέ, A 32, 45; 33, 17; 44, 48; 55, 20; 61, 27; 63, 7; 64, 1; B 2, 62.  
 καινοποιῖν, A 61, 2.  
 καινός, A 15, 28.  
     παρά, A 21, 5.  
 καίπερ, with part., A 7, 7; 45, 17.  
     with finite verb, A 4, 14.  
 κακίαν ἔχειν, A 9, 16.  
 κακοτράχος, A 12, 3.  
 κελῖν—κεκλήμεθα, A 6, 1.  
     κίεληνται, A 53, 20.  
 καλλιεῖν, A 12, 27.  
 καλὸς κάγαθος (ironical), B 2, 20.  
 καλύπτειν ἀμαρτίας, D 9, 22.  
 κάν, 'even if,' A 2, 7; 16, 28; 44, 48; 55, 29; B 1, 5.  
     (elliptical), A 18, 19; 26, 36; 57, 11; B 3, 2; 8, 1. 7; 15, 7; D 2, 42.  
     for κῆ, A 46, 10.  
 καρτερία βίου, A 16, 14.  
 κατά, with acc.:  
     κατ' ἀλήθειαν=ἀληθῶς, A 2, 1.  
     κατ' ἀξίαν, A 43, 5.  
     κατ' ἐκείνο τοῦ καιροῦ, A 17, 2; 26, 15; 33, 18; 60, 5; 62, 10.  
     κατ' ἑλληνισμὸν, B 1, 8.  
     κατὰ καιρόν, A 19, 16.  
     κατὰ καιρούς, A 31, 4.  
     κατὰ μεταβολήν, A 20, 5.  
     καθ' ἡμᾶς, 'our,' A 42, 11.  
     καθ' ἡμᾶς, A 22, 9.  
     with gen., 'against,' A 2, 16.  
     verbs compounded with, A 4, 25.  
 καταγγέλλειν, A 4, 33.  
 καταγιγᾶν—κατεγίλασα, B 13, 5.  
 καταδιαφρεῖν, D 4, 16.  
 καταδικάζειν, A 7, 4.  
 καταδυναστεύειν, D 10, 13.  
 κατακαίειν—κατακαίοντα, A 21, 18.  
 καταλίγειν, 'enroll,' A 39, 19; 46, 14.  
     'charge upon,' A 4, 26.  
 καταξιοῦν, A 10, 11. 15.  
 καταπλήσσειν, aor. mid., A 56, 12.  
     καταπληγῆναι, A 5, 8.  
 καταργεῖν, B 6, 24.  
 κατασκευὴ λόγου, B 10, 81.  
 κατάστασις τῆς πολιτείας, D 5, 11.  
 καταστερίζειν, A 21, 15.  
 κατατρέχειν, B 3, 8.  
 καταφαίνεσθαι (midd.), A 13, 19.  
 καταφρονεῖν, A 25, 8.  
 καταψεύδεται Θεοῦ, D 4, 9.  
 κατέχειν, A 44, 45; 45, 3; D 6, 15.  
 κατηγορεῖν, A 4, 26 (note).  
 κατορθοῦν, A 43, 14.  
 κῆσθαι, A 11, 6; 12, 11.  
 κερδαίνειν—aor. κερδήσαντες, A 44, 49.  
 κηδεμών, A 67, 25.  
 κηρύσσειν, with part., A 54, 6.  
 κλήσις ψυχῶν, A 18, 8.  
 κοινὴ γένεσις, A 22, 5.  
 κοινωνία λόγων, B 3, 18.  
 κοινῶς, A 22, 1.  
 κολάζειν, A 3, 4; D 6, 20.  
     ἐκολάσατο, B 2, 31.  
 κῶλασις αἰωνία, A 8, 15; 12, 5; 18, 5; 45, 24.  
 κ. καὶ τιμωρία, B 8, 12.  
 κολάσεις καὶ τιμωρίαι, A 43, 4.  
 κόρος, A 57, 11.  
 κράμα, A 65, 10.  
 κράτιστος—ὡ κράτιστε, D 1, 1.  
 κρίσις—κρίσιν ποιήσασθαι, A 2, 13; 53, 9.  
 κροκόδειλος, A 24, 5.  
 κρονική—ἡμέρα, A 67, 30. 31.  
 κυφορεῖν, A 33, 16.  
     A.  
 λαλεῖν, A 58, 14.  
 λανθάνειν (constr.), A 35, 1; 57, 3.  
 λαός, A 33, 22; 39, 4; 47, 4.  
 λατρεύειν, A 16, 22.  
 λέγειν, 'mean,' A 11, 2.  
     (constr.), A 59, 1; B 1, 12.  
 λείπειν—τὸ λείπον, A 32, 30.  
     τὰ λείποντα, A 52, 7.  
     οἱ λειπόμενοι, 'indigent,' A 67, 2. 23.  
 ληστής—λησται ἐν ἱερῇ, A 12, 27.  
 λιθοξόος, D 2, 16.  
 λογίζεσθαι, with inf., A 2, 18; 53, 4.

λογίζεσθαι, with ὅτι, A 12, 41; 19, 14.

with part., A 40, 13.

λογικόν—τὸ λ. τὸ ὄλον, B 10, 2.

λόγιον, A 32, 53.

λογισμὸν ἔλκειν, B 11, 3.

λόγος, 'word,' ὁ ἑρμηνευτικός, A 21, 8.

ὁ παρὰ θεοῦ ἀγγελ-

τικός, A 22, 7.

εὐχῆς καὶ εὐχαρισ-

τίας, A 13, 4.

διὰ λόγου, A 13, 8;

55, 26; 67, 11.

ὁ ἡθικός, B 8, 2.

'reason,' λόγος, A 68, 1.

ὁ λόγος, A 2, 2; 12,

31.

μετὰ λόγου, A 13,

18.

λόγῳ καὶ ἀληθείᾳ,

A 6, 8.

ἀληθὲς λόγος, A 3,

5; 5, 12; 43, 23.

ὁρθὸς λόγος, B 7,

29; 9, 19.

σώφρων λόγος, A

2, 5.

λόγος αἰρεῖ, A 3, 20.

'THE WORD,' ὁ λόγος, A 12, 27;

21, 1; B 6, 7.

λόγος, A 22, 7; B

10, 4.

λόγος θεῖος, A 33,

36; 36, 4.

ὁ λόγος θεῖος ὢν, A

10, 22.

ὁ λόγος τοῦ θεοῦ, A

63, 10.

ὁ πᾶς λόγος, B 8,

10.

λόγος μορφωθεῖς, A

5, 20.

σπέρμα τοῦ λόγου,

B 8, 4.

σπριματικὸν λόγου

μέρος, B 8, 9.

λόγος θεῖος σπριμα-

τικός, B 13, 11.

λόγος ὁ ἅγιος ἀπερι-

νόητος, D 7, 6.

λοιπόν, A 3, 21; 55, 28; 67, 1; B

5, 12; 15, 11; D 9, 14.

λουτρὸν ποιῆσθαι, A 61, 13.

λυχνίας ἀνατροπή, A 26, 33.

λωποδύτης, B 2, 51.

## M.

μαγικός—μαγικαὶ γραφαί, B 5, 13.

μαγικαὶ ἐννάμεις, A 26,

7.

μαγικαὶ στροφαί, A 14, 6.

μαγικαὶ τέχναι, A 14, 11.

μαγικὴ τέχνη, A 30, 3.

διὰ μαγικῆς τέχνης, A 26,

20.

μάγοι, A 18, 9.

μαθήματα=λόγος, A 3, 17.

μᾶλλον, with comp., A 19, 1.

μανθάνειν, with part., A 54, 43;

59, 2.

with inf., 'to,' A 39, 7;

44, 8.

with inf., 'that,' =ὅτι,

A 12, 14; 43, 6.

μάστιξ, A 5, 3.

μεγαλῆδος, B 3, 11; 10, 1.

μεγαλειότης, D 10, 17.

μιζῶνως, A 20, 9.

μείωσις τῆς σαρκός, D 4, 11.

μίλειν—μέλον ἰστί=μίλει, A 44,

39.

μίλλειν, with pres. inf., A 19, 31;

32, 32; 42, 1; 45, 8;

52, 4.

with fut., A 28, 9.

with aor., A 52, 20.

μέν, without δέ, A 13, 10; B 2, 22.

30; 5, 8.

=μήν, A 4, 27.

μέν οὖν, A 53, 1.

μένειν, with dat., A 18, 5.

μεοιμᾶν, A 15, 46.

μετά and σύν, A 8, 4.

μεταβάλλειν, 'change,' A 21, 32.

'translate,' A 31, 16.

μεταβολή, A 20, 5.

μεταβολαὶ ὥρων, A 13,

11; B 5, 6.

μετάληψις, A 67, 17.

μετάνοια, A 28, 9; 40, 24.

μετέλειπεις, A 43, 16.

μέχρις οὗ, with ind., A 8, 19; 49, 15.

with subj., A 67, 10.

μή, with inf. as a subst., A 2, 4; 9, 21; 39, 23.

with inf. after verbs of saying, A 4, 18; 5, 2; 18, 22; 28, 16; 57, 1; B 10, 14.

with articular (arthric) part., A 4, 9; 19, 19; 45, 23.

with anarthric part., A 5, 4; 9, 4; 24, 2; 28, 9; 29, 1; 36, 11; 39, 10; 43, 27; 44, 30; 49, 14; 53, 36; 54, 31; 58, 8; 60, 15; 63, 45; B 2, 24; 7, 21; D 6, 10.

with subj. (fear), A 12, 17. (imper.), A 15, 46.

with ind., B 3, 5.

with opt. for οὐ, A 26, 21.

with pres. imper., A 15, 48.

aor. imper., A 41, 13.

pleonastic, A 57, 13.

μηδείς—μηδὲνα=οὐδένα, B 7, 9.

μηδὺλως=μηδ' ὅλως, A 29, 10.

μήν, οὐ μήν, D 5, 5.

μηνύειν ὅτι, A 51, 1.

ὥς, A 39, 11.

μίξεις γυναικῶν, B 5, 11.

μίξεις ἀδελφῶν καὶ ἀσιβῆς καὶ ἀπραγίας, A 27, 12. See ἀνίδην.

μισάλληλος, A 14, 15.

μόνος (misplaced), B 7, 9.

μορφή, A 4, 28 (note).

μορφοποιεῖν, A 9, 11.

μορφοῦν—λόγος μορφωδείς, A 5, 20.

μυξωτήρ, A 55, 16.

μυστήρια, D 7, 13.

N.

ναός, A 9, 2.

νεκρομαντεία, A 18, 7.

νομίζειν, 'think fit,' A 3, 18.

καὶ οἰεσθαι, D 2, 28.

νουνηχός, A 12, 32; 46, 24.

νοῦς—dat., νοί, A 42, 6.

νῦν (wide acceptance), A 29, 13; 31, 22; D 1, 10.

Ξ.

ξεῖν—ξέοντες καὶ τίμνοντες, A 9, 9.

ξένος, 'strange,' A 16, 15.

ξύλον—ξύλῳ ἐμπαγήναι, B 3, 2.

O.

ὁ, article for demonstr., A 5, 8.

position of, A 6, 7.

of ideal standard, A 8, 3.

ὅδε, A 47, 5.

τόνδε τινα καὶ τόνδε, A 43, 9.

τάδε μὲν, τῶνδε οἱ, B 7, 30.

οἶδαμιν=ἴσμεν, A 26, 21; 55, 28;

59, 18; B 8, 5, 6; 12, 33.

οἰκίως, 'appropriately,' A 40, 13.

οἰκονομία—οἰκονομίαι θεοῦ, D 4, 15.

οἰκονομίαν πεπιστυ-  
σθαι, D 7, 3.

οἰκίρμων, A 15, 43.

οἶον, 'as for instance,' A 43, 27; 46, 11.

οἶός τε, A 19, 8.

ὀλλύναι—ὀλίσσαι, A 25, 14.

ὀμλεῖν πρὸς χάριν, A 2, 12.

ὀμοδίατος, A 14, 17; B 2, 18.

ὀμόζυγος, A 27, 14.

ὀμοιοπαθής, A 1, 4; 10, 26.

ὀμοιοτρόπως, D 3, 6.

ὀμόκοιτος, B 2, 18.

ὀμολογεῖν, ὅτι, A 7, 5.

ὥς, A 13, 1.

with part., B 13, 6.

ὄνειροπομπός, A 18, 9.

ὄνειρων ἐπιφάνεια, A 14, 5.

ὄνομα θετόν, A 10, 7; B 6, 1.

and πρόσρησις, B 6, 6.

ὅπως, A 4, 21; 11, 7; 14, 19; 47,

16; B 2, 16; 12, 7; 13,

17.

with subj., =inf., A 65, 5.

ὀργή, A 40, 44.

ὀρίζειν θάνατον κατὰ τινος, A 44,

41; 45, 17; 47, 15; 68, 4.

ὀρμᾶσθαι ἀπό, A 26, 29.

ὅς—καὶ ὅς, B 2, 57.

with μὲν for demonstr., A 24,

12; D 2, 16; 4, 7, 16.

ὅς γε, A 12, 22; B 3, 4.

ὅσπερ—ἥπερ, A 28, 18.

ὅς—ὅπερ, A 12, 38; 18, 8; 24, 8;  
35, 2; 45, 21; 55, 4.  
ὅστις (colorless), A 38, 15; 63,  
29; 67, 30.  
ὅσον, A 40, 22.  
ὅσον γε, A 4, 3. 14.  
ἐπ' αὐτοῖς, A 40, 22;  
comp. B 4, 11; 15, 11.  
ὅσος—ὅση δύναμις, A 13, 5; 55, 27;  
67, 15.  
ὅστια, A 19, 4.  
ὅταν, with subj. for ὅτε, with ind.,  
A 37, 8; 38, 10.  
ὅτε, with fut. ind., A 52, 11. 23.  
with pres. ind., A 60, 2.  
ὅτι, after φημι. See φημι.  
ὅτι μή, A 24, 1; 26, 35; B 3,  
16.  
οὐ or οὐκ (adherescent), A 14, 16;  
16, 44; 18, 20; 26, 30;  
49, 2; 60, 29; 67, 17; B  
2, 5. Comp. A 32, 39.  
in protasis, B 3, 22.  
οὐ μή, with subj., A 38, 9; 52, 31.  
with fut. ind., A 39, 6.  
οὐρανός and οὐρανοί, A 16, 8; 31,  
32; D 7, 6.  
οὔτε for οὐδέ, A 43, 8. 10.  
ὀφείλειν—τοῦ ἀποθανεῖν ὀφειλομέ-  
νου, A 11, 10.  
ὀφθῆναι τι, A 37, 13; 50, 34.  
ὀφλιεσκάνειν—ὀφλήσῃτε, A 4, 9.  
ὀφλήσωμεν, A 3, 19.  
ὀψις—πρὸς τὰς ὕψεις Σιελτικῇ, B  
11, 11.  
ὀψιμὸν ὄρα, A 30, 7; ἰδίῳ, A  
32, 18.

## Π.

παιδεύειν, A 40, 51.  
παλαιός, A 2, 3.  
Παλαιστίνη, A 1, 8.  
πάλιν—αὐτὸ πάλιν, A 20, 4.  
παμμάχως, B 13, 6.  
παντοκράτωρ, D 7, 5.  
παντοκτίστης, D 7, 5.  
παρά, with acc., A 8, 13; 19, 19;  
58, 6; B 4, 2.  
'contrary to,' A 22, 4; B 2,  
10; 7, 39.  
'owing to,' B 14, 4.

παρά, 'more than,' A 20, 9; 50,  
18; B 7, 35.  
with gen., A 17, 3; 26, 9;  
50, 37.  
with dat., A 8, 8; 18, 9; 28,  
1; 33, 6; 60, 28; B 7, 9.  
παραδίδεσθαι, D 4, 7.  
παραδίδῃναι, A 23,  
5.  
παραῖξασθαι, A 21, 29.  
παραδιδόναι, A 6, 10; 66, 19.  
παραιτεῖσθαι, A 2, 3; 29, 4; 46,  
15; B 10, 17; D 4, 8; 6, 22.  
παρακαθίσταναι, D 2, 33.  
παρακελεύεσθαι, A 4, 24.  
παρακολουθεῖν, with acc., A 16, 13.  
παραλαμβάνειν, A 4, 23.  
παραλλάσσειν—παρηλλαγμένη διά-  
λεκτος, 'peculiar,' D 5, 4.  
παράσημος, D 5, 4.  
παρατηρήσεις, D 4, 13.  
παρατιθεῖναι, A 12, 45.  
παραφέρειν, A 36, 11; 64, 15.  
παραχρησθῆναι, A 49, 14.  
παριζήμεναι, D 4, 13.  
παρίεργος, A 18, 9.  
παρεπίδημος, A 67, 24.  
παρίχυν ἀφορμάς, A 4, 25.  
ἰπισκεψιν, A 3, 17.  
εὐφροσύνην, A 42, 10.  
παροικεῖν, D 6, 17.  
πᾶς—ἐκ παντός, A 7, 6; B 12, 8.  
πατρικός—ἀδοξίας πατρικός, A 12,  
30.  
πατροφόντης, A 21, 25.  
πειθαρχεῖν, D 7, 15.  
πιεῖν—πιεῖν καὶ εἰς πίστιν ἄγει,  
A 10, 18.  
πεπισμένοι καὶ πιστεύον-  
τες, A 8, 6; 10, 5.  
πιστεύοντες μᾶλλον εἰ καὶ  
πεπισμένοι, A 17, 14.  
πισθῆναι τι καὶ πιστεῦ-  
σαι, A 18, 6.  
πισθῶσι καὶ πιστεύωσι, A  
61, 4.  
ἱμαζον καὶ ἐπίσθησαν, A  
12, 14.  
constr. with ὅτι, A 8, 8;  
18, 10; 29, 6; 39, 8;  
47, 9.

ΠΕΡΙ ΤΗΣ  
ΕΠΙΣΤΗΜΗΣ  
Α 310

πείθειν—with inf., = ὄντι, A 12, 20;  
 57, 2; B 1, 9; 11, 18.  
 πειθῶ καὶ πίστιν, A 53, 44.  
 πέμπειν αἰτήσεις, A 13, 12.  
 εὐχάς, A 67, 13.  
 πομπάς καὶ ὕμνους, A 13, 8.  
 πέναι, A 12, 30.  
 περίβλημα, B 13, 1.  
 περιῖπον, A 31, 7.  
 περιέρχοι, B, 10, 11.  
 περιτιθέναι, B 11, 25.  
 -τεταμένον, B 13, 2.  
 πηρός, A 60, 31.  
 πιστεύειν, see πείθειν.  
 πλάττειν—τῷ πρώτῳ πλάσθιντι ἀν-  
 θρώπῳ, A 44, 2.  
 πλημμελεῖν, A 3, 19; B 8, 24.  
 πνεῦμα—πν. ἅγιον, A 61, 43.  
 τὸ πν. τὸ ἅγιον, A 65, 12.  
 πν. τὸ ἅγιον, A 67, 6.  
 τὸ θεῖον ἅγιον πνευματικόν,  
 A 32, 11; 53, 30.  
 πν. τὸ θεῖον, A 32, 34.  
 τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα, A  
 31, 2; 38, 1; 39, 2;  
 40, 15; 47, 2; 53, 18;  
 59, 7; 63, 2, 34.  
 τὸ πν. τὸ πρ., A 35, 9.  
 πν. τὸ προφ., A 6, 8.  
 ποιεῖν and πράττειν, B 4, 12.  
 ποιῆσαι ἁλλοτριαν, B 2, 9.  
 ἀπόδειξιν, A 30, 5.  
 διγαμίας, A 15, 12.  
 ἐκπίρωσιν, A 45, 6.  
 ἐλεγχον, A 23, 15.  
 ἐντευξιν, A 1, 9.  
 ἐξήγησιν, A 68, 12.  
 ἐπικύρωσιν (?), A 45, 6.  
 ἐπιφανίας, A 5, 6.  
 ἐργασίαν, A 55, 11.  
 ἐστίας, A 14, 16.  
 εὐχαριστίαν, A 65, 13.  
 εὐχάς, A 65, 4.  
 ἱάσιν, B 13, 18.  
 κατηγορίαν, B 2, 24.  
 κρίσιν, A 2, 13; 53, 9.  
 λουτρόν, A 61, 18.  
 μετέλειψιν, A 43, 16.  
 νουθεσίαν, A 67, 11.  
 παρατήρησιν, D 4, 14.  
 πόρους, B 2, 10.

ποιῆσαι πρόκλησιν, A 67, 11.  
 προσφώνησιν, A 68, 12.  
 πρόσχυσιν, B 12, 25.  
 συνίλευσιν, A 67, 26.  
 σύνταξιν (e con.), B 1,  
 6.  
 ποιότης—ποιότητων γονῶν, A 13,  
 10.  
 πολεμεῖν, with acc., A 39, 13.  
 πολιτεία, 'manner of life,' A 4, 7.  
 'polity,' D 5, 12.  
 πολιτεύεσθαι, 'rule,' D 10, 22.  
 πολιτευτής, A 65, 6.  
 πολυπραγμοσύνη, D 4, 19.  
 πολὺς—πολλὰς καὶ ἱεράς, A 53, 1.  
 πομπαί, 'solemn prayers,' A 13, 8.  
 πονηρίειν, A 61, 3.  
 πονηρεύεσθαι, A 64, 11.  
 πονηρός, A 2, 19.  
 πύνηρος (?), A 22, 17.  
 πορνείαι, A 14, 10.  
 πόρους ἡδονῆς ποιῆσαι = ἡδονὴν  
 πορίζεσθαι, B 2, 10.  
 πράγματα ἰπάγειν, A 3, 7.  
 πράττειν and ποιεῖν, B 4, 12.  
 εὖ πράττειν, 'act aright,'  
 A 28, 11.  
 πρίν, with inf., A 4, 13; 19, 9; 40,  
 24; 62, 6; D 8, 2.  
 ἤ, with inf., A 23, 10; 30, 6;  
 31, 8, 36; 42, 8; 52, 2; 53,  
 10; D 2, 17.  
 πρὸ ἐτῶν ἑκατὸν πεντήκοντα, A 46,  
 2.  
 τῆς κρονικῆς, A 67, 29.  
 προαγγελτικόν, A 32, 32; 45, 15.  
 προαγγελτικῶς, A 36, 5.  
 προαγωγέεσθαι, A 27, 14.  
 προαίρεσις, A 43, 14; 61, 33; 67,  
 20; B 7, 16.  
 προβάλλεσθαι, A 26, 2; 54, 8; 56,  
 7; B 9, 13.  
 προγινώσκειν—προεγνωσμένα, A 43,  
 4; προεγνωσμένων, A 45, 5.  
 προειπεῖν, with fut. inf., A 12, 32;  
 53, 31.  
 προελέγχιν (e con.), A 7, 4.  
 προίνα (ἱμν)—προΐσθαι (?), B 3,  
 27.  
 προΐνα (εἶμι)—προϊόντος τοῦ  
 λόγου, A 22, 13; 35, 7.

- προιστάναι**—ὁ προιστός, A 65, 9; 67, 15, 21.  
**προιστάναι δόγματος**, D 5, 7.  
**προκαταρτιζομέναι**, A 22, 9.  
**προκατέχιν**—**προκατισταχενία φήμη**, A 2, 16.  
**προκατέχοντες λογισμοί**, D 2, 1.  
**προκηρύσσειν**, A 31, 2; 36, 15; B 8, 17.  
**πρόκλησις**, A 3, 8.  
**προλαμβάνειν**, A 19, 25 (note).  
**προλίσγειν**, 'forewarn', A 14, 1; 68, 5.  
**πρόληψις**, A 2, 14; B 4, 16.  
**προμηνύειν**, A 28, 6; 33, 7; 46, 9; 48, 8; 60, 24.  
**πρός**, with gen., A 2, 17; 4, 34.  
**π. μητρός**, 'on the mother's side,' A 62, 13.  
 with acc.:  
**ὀλίγον**, A 12, 7.  
**χάριν**, A 2, 12; **καὶ ἡδονήν**, B 3, 6.  
 with dat., A 40, 11.  
**προσαγύρισμα**, B 6, 11.  
**προσγράφειν**, A 27, 20.  
**προσδίδεσθαι**, A 10, 3.  
**προσδοκᾶν**, with aor. inf., B 3, 1.  
**προσείναι**—**πρόσιστι**, A 10, 25; B 2, 47; 12, 16.  
**τὰ προσόντα**, A 10, 5; B 4, 7; 11, 21, 26; 12, 35.  
**προσελθεῖν** (constr.), A 16, 24.  
**προσέχειν** (sc. τὸν νοῦν), A 13, 22; 57, 13.  
**προσηγορία**, A 4, 7.  
**προσηλοῦν**, A 58, 15.  
**προσκυνεῖν**, with acc., A 16, 20; 17, 8; (20, 16); 26, 13; 49, 2; B 13, 16.  
 with dat., D 2, 26.  
**προσλαμβάνειν** (?), A 10, 2, 11.  
**προσομιλεῖν**, A 62, 14.  
**προσπαίνειν**, B 12, 23.  
**πρόσρησις**, B 6, 6.  
**προστιμᾶν**, B 14, 12.  
**προστιμᾶσθαι**, B 2, 63.  
**προσφέρειν**, A 13, 8; D 2, 34; 8, 8.  
**προσφέρεισθαι** (mid.), A 13, 4; 67, 3.  
 (pass.), A 67, 14.  
**προσφορά ὑλική**, A 10, 1.  
**προσφώνησις**, A 1, 8; 68, 12.  
**πρόσχυσις**, B 12, 25.  
**προσωνυμία ὀνόματος**, A 4, 1.  
**πρόσωπον**, see **ἀπό**.  
**ὡς ἀπὸ προσώπου**, A 36, 2, 6, 7, 8; 37, 1; 38, 1.  
**προτρέπεσθαι**, A 13, 22; 16, 11; 40, 14; 55, 28; B 10, 19.  
**προτροπή**, A 21, 21.  
**προφάναι**—**πρόφηνεν**, A 12, 22; 21, 29; 22, 6; 32, 45; 45, 21; 63, 11; 67, 13; B 6, 15.  
**προφητεύειν**—**προειπείφηεντο**, A 33, 27.  
**πείροφητεύσθαι**, A 44, 31.  
**προεφητεύοντο**, A 31, 5.  
**προεφητεύθη**, A 30, 7; 31, 35; 33, 1; 50, 18.  
 with part., A 35, 27.  
**προφητικὸν πνεῦμα**, A 38, 1; 39, 2; 40, 15. See **πνεῦμα**.  
**πρώτη**—**ἡ πρώτη δύναμις**, A 32, 39.  
**πρωτότοκος τοῦ Θεοῦ**, A 23, 8.  
**τῷ Θεῷ**, A 33, 28.  
**πῦρ αἰώνιον**, A 52, 14; B 1, 10; 2, 6; 7, 25; 8, 13, 16; 9, 8; D 10, 29.  
 P.  
**ῥανίς**, A 19, 3.  
**ῥαντίζειν**, A 62, 3.  
**ῥᾶον**=**ῥάσιον**, A 12, 42.  
**ρεῖν**—**ρίοντι κάλλι**, B 11, 17.  
**ῥεπούσιον**, B 2, 19.  
**ῥητῶς**, A 35, 26.  
**ρίπτειν**, A 18, 12.  
**ρίπτειν τὰ γινώμενα**, D 5, 16.  
 Σ.  
**σάρκες**, A 26, 34; 66, 10; B 12, 6.  
**σαρκοποιεῖν**, A 32, 41; 66, 7, 11.  
**σατανᾶς**, A 28, 2.  
**σιβαστός**, A 1, 2.



σίβειν, A 24, 9.  
 σίβεισθαι, A 24, 4.  
     καὶ προσκυνεῖν, A 6, 8.  
 σῆνυμα, D 6, 17.  
 σοφίζεσθαι, A 14, 22.  
 σοφιστής, A 14, 27.  
 σπῆρμα τῶν Χριστιανῶν, B 7, 4.  
     σπέρματα ἀληθείας, A 44, 29.  
 σπερματικὸς λόγος, B 8, 9; 13, 10.  
 στήριγν, A 2, 2.  
 στοιχείον, B 5, 5.  
     στοιχεῖα, 'starry signs,' D 7, 14.  
 στροφή—στροφαὶ μαγικαί, A 14, 6.  
 συγκαταελίνισθαι, B 2, 9.  
 συγκατατίθισθαι, A 65, 3.  
 σύγκλητος ἱερά, A 1, 4.  
 συγχρωτίζεσθαι, D 12, 23.  
 σύλληψις, 'assistance,' A 26, 25.  
 συμβιβῶναι, B 2, 1.  
 συμπερινοστέιν, A 26, 14.  
 συμπραγματεύεσθαι, A 16, 16.  
 σύν, A 20, 28; B 7, 9.  
 συνίλευσις, A 40, 18; 67, 7, 26.  
 συνειπιγνώμων, A 56, 15.  
 συνεπίστασθαι, B 2, 42; 4, 18.  
 συνίχυν, D 6, 14, 16.  
     ἰατόν, A 12, 9.  
 συνήθεια, D 2, 3.  
 συνινῶναι—συνινῶναι (absol.).  
     with inf., A 60, 32.  
 συνηστέειν, A 61, 8.  
 συνοδοιπόροι, A 16, 15.  
 συνορᾶν, A 9, 21; 19, 20.  
 συνουσιάζεσθαι, A 83, 14.  
 σύνταξις—σύνταξιν (e coni.) ποι-  
     εῖσθαι, B 1, 6.  
 συντελεῖν, A 65, 14.  
 συντίθεσθαι, A 39, 19; B 9, 12.  
 σφάλλεισθαι, A 43, 14.  
 σχῆμα, A 4, 28.  
 σωζέειν—σωθῆναι σωτηρίαν, A 65, 8.  
 σωφρονίζεσθαι, B 1, 7; 2, 3.  
  
 Τ.  
 τάξις—ἰν τρίτῃ τάξει, A 13, 18.  
 τε (solitary), A 6, 8; 61, 33.  
 τε—τε, A 13, 17.  
 τε—καὶ, A 1, 4; 6, 7 (note).

τίγος—ἰπὶ τίγους σταθῆναι, A 26, 15.  
 τεκνογονεῖν, D 5, 15.  
 τέκνον, A 27, 13.  
     τέκνα ἀνάγκης—ἀγνοίας—  
     προσιρέσιως—ἐπιστήμης,  
     A 61, 32.  
 τίλειον=τιλέως, A 29, 4; 62, 5; D  
     2, 26.  
 τίλος, A 27, 10.  
 τερατεία, D 8, 9.  
 τερατολογία, A 54, 9.  
 τέχνης—διὰ τέχνης ὁμολογεῖν, A  
     28, 14.  
 τιμωρεῖν=τιμωρεῖσθαι, B 9, 9.  
 τιμωρία, see κάλασις.  
 τις—ὁ μὲν τις, D 2, 8.  
 τρίτα περὶ τὸν τρίτον, A 60, 28.  
 τρύπαιον, A 55, 21.  
 τρόπος—τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον, A 19,  
     10, 14.  
     ὃν τρόπον, A 4, 22; 7, 5;  
     10, 12; 12, 29; 14, 7;  
     19, 12; 23, 13; 26, 30;  
     27, 5; 32, 42; 50, 8;  
     52, 5; 61, 1; 66, 7; B  
     6, 11.  
     ὅνπερ τρόπον, A 57, 3.  
     ἐκ παντὸς τρόπου, A 2, 6;  
     12, 8, 16.  
 τυφλώττειν, A 3, 19.  
  
 Υ.  
 ὑπαγορεύειν, A 2, 2; 12, 31.  
 ὑπάρχειν, A 2, 10; 8, 22; 4, 4;  
     22, 10; 29, 15; 46, 19.  
 ὑπεκρούειν, A 58, 16.  
 ὑπερορᾶν, D 1, 5.  
 ὑπερσπουδάζειν, D 1, 1.  
 ὑπηρετεῖν, A 17, 9.  
 ὑπηρετής, A 14, 5.  
 ὑπὸ τινος, with pres. inf., A 5,  
     1; 61, 6.  
 ὑπογράφειν, B 14, 1.  
 ὑπόσημοσύνη, A 14, 20.  
 ὑπολαμβάνειν, A 12, 23; 33, 37.  
 ὑπομονή, A 16, 15.  
 ὑποπίπτειν, A 4, 2.  
 ὑπόστασις, D 2, 7.  
 ὑστερον χρόνοις, A 46, 4.  
 ὑφαιρείσθαι, with inf., A 12, 30.

## Φ.

- φάγεται=ἔδεται, A 47, 13.  
 φαίνεται, with inf., B 7, 37.  
     with part., A 12, 37; B  
     5, 8.  
 φάνηται, 2 aor. mid., A  
 7, 13.  
 φάναι ὅτι, A 33, 35.  
     with part., A 33, 26.  
 ἔφημιν, A 8, 1; 26, 29.  
 φαρμακeutής, B 6, 23.  
 φάσκειν, A 21, 2; 63, 44; B 12, 20.  
     with μή, A 35, 18.  
 φαῦλος, A 2, 4; 43, 16.  
 φέρειν ψῆφον, A 2, 16.  
 φημ κακή, A 2, 15.  
     πονηρά, A 3, G.  
 φθάνειν—φθάσας, A 12, 37.  
     φθάσαντες, A 23, 11; 46,  
     7.  
 φθίγγισθαι, A 36, 7; 88, 2; B 10,  
 5; 13, 11.  
 φιλαλήτης, A 2, 7.  
 φιλανθρωπία (of God), D 9, 15.  
 φιλάνθρωπος, D 8, 14.  
 φιλήδονος, B 12, 5.  
 φιλοδοξείν, A 53, 45; 57, 6.  
 φιλόδοξος, B 3, 24.  
 φιλόκομος, B 3, 3.  
 φιλόλογος, B 10, 27.  
 φιλοστοργία, D 1, 8.  
 φιλόψυχος, B 3, 3.  
 φόβητρον, A 5, 7; B 9, 2.  
 φορβάς—φορβάδων ἵππων, A 27, 6.  
 φόρος, A 17, 1.  
 φράζειν, A 20, 18.  
 φρονεῖν, D 3, 5.  
 φροντίζειν—πεφροντίκαμεν, A 11,  
 10.  
 φρουρεῖται ἡ ψυχὴ, D 6, 7.  
 φυλάττεσθαι, with inf., B 3, 9.  
     μή and subj., A 14, 1.  
 φυσιολογεῖν—τὸ φυσιολογούμενον, A  
 60, 1.

- φωνὴ ἀλογος καὶ τολμηρά, A 3,  
 1.  
 φωτίζειν, A 61, 40; 65, 4.  
 φωτισμός, A 61, 40.

## Χ.

- χαμαιπετής, B 11, 24.  
 χάριν εἶναι, B 2, 59.  
     πρὸς χάριν, A 2, 12; B 3, 6.  
 χθις καὶ πρωην, B 1, 1.  
 χιλιονταετής περίοδος, A 8, 16.  
 χλευάζειν, D 2, 30.  
 χοή—χοάς καὶ κνίσας, A 24, 10.  
 χορηγεῖν, D 1, 12; 3, 12.  
 χρήματα καὶ κτήματα, A 14, 12.  
 χρηστός, A 4, 4.  
 Χριστιανοί, A 4, 15.  
 Χριστός, A 4, 23.  
     ὁ ἡμέτερος, A 48, 2; 54,  
     16; 62, 14; B 10, 21.  
     ὁ ποιητόγονος Θεοῦ, A 58,  
     13.  
 χρόνος—χρόνοις ὑστερον, A 46, 4.  
 χώρα—ἐν ἐντέρῳ, A 18, 17.  
 χωρεῖν εἰς ἀναισθησίαν, A 18, 3;  
 57, 14.

## Ψ.

- ψευδοῦξία, B 14, 4.  
 ψευδολογεῖν, A 8, 3; B 13, 4.  
 ψευδολόγος, B 2, 37.  
 ψῆφον τιθεσθαι, A 3, 12.  
 ψοφοδέης, D 4, 1.

## Ω.

- ὦ, with gen., A 9, 18; D 9, 14, 24,  
 25.  
 ὦς, with inf., A 21, 24; 56, 13; 60,  
 32; B 7, 32; D 1, 14.  
     with part., A 4, 18; 23, 13; 46,  
     6; 52, 4; 57, 17; B 2, 13; 3,  
     5; D 2, 4.  
 ὡσεῖ, A 40, 33.  
 ὥστε, with ind., A 46, 15; 59, 18.  
     μή and inf., A 22, 11.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

# INDEX OF TEXTS

## IN THE FIRST APOLOGY.

GENESIS	PSALMS ( <i>continued</i> )
1, 1. 2.....64, 6.	23, 7. 8.....51, 19.
1, 1-3.....59, 9.	96, 1. 2. 4-10.....41, 4.
1, 5.....59, 17.	109, 1-3.....45, 8.
49, 10. 11.....32, 2.	
“.....54, 19.	
EXODUS	ISAIAH
3, 2. 6. 10. 14. 15.....63, 17.	1, 3.....63, 5. 35.
3, 2. 14. 15.....63, 31.	1, 3. 4.....37, 3.
3, 5.....62, 15.	1, 7.....47, 13.
3, 14. 15.....63, 54.	1, 9.....53, 32.
	1, 11-15.....37, 11.
	1, 16-20.....44, 7.
	“.....61, 20.
NUMBERS	2, 3. 4.....39, 2.
21, 8. 9.....60, 11.	5, 20.....49, 23.
24, 17.....32, 47.	7, 14.....33, 3.
	9, 6.....35, 4.
DEUTERONOMY	11, 1. 10.....32, 47.
30, 15. 19.....44, 4.	11, 12.....52, 18.
32, 22.....60, 25.	35, 4-6.....48, 4.
	43, 5. 6.....52, 27.
1 CHRONICLES	45, 23.....52, 18.
16, 23. 25-31.....41, 4.	50, 6-8.....38, 5.
	52, 13-15.....50, 7.
PSALMS	53, 1-8.....50, 13.
1.....40, 25.	53, 8-12.....51, 3.
2.....40, 37.	53, 12.....50, 4.
3, 5.....38, 12.	54, 1.....53, 23.
19, 2.....40, 11.	57, 1. 2.....48, 11.
19, 5.....54, 41.	58, 2.....35, 11.
21, 7. 8.....38, 14.	58, 6. 7.....37, 17.
21, 16. 18.....35, 13.	63, 17.....52, 33.
“.....38, 11.	64, 10-12.....47, 5.

ISAIAH ( <i>continued</i> )		MATTHEW ( <i>continued</i> )	
64, 11.....	52, 34.	5, 44.....	15, 29.
65, 1-3.....	49, 6.	5, 45.....	15, 45.
65, 2.....	35, 9.	5, 46.....	15, 28.
“.....	38, 2.	6, 1.....	15, 52.
66, 1.....	37, 9.	6, 19. 20.....	15, 36.
66, 24.....	52, 22.	6, 21.....	15, 50.
JEREMIAH		6, 25. 26.....	15, 46.
2, 15.....	47, 13.	6, 31-33.....	15, 47.
9, 26.....	53, 42.	7, 15. 16. 19.....	16, 40.
50, 3.....	47, 13.	7, 21-23.....	16, 30.
EZEKIEL		7, 29.....	14, 28.
33, 11.....	15, 25.	9, 13.....	15, 24.
37, 7. 8.....	52, 17.	10, 28.....	19, 27.
DANIEL		10, 40.....	63, 14.
7, 13.....	51, 24.	11, 5.....	48, 4.
JOEL		11, 27.....	63, 9.
2, 13.....	52, 28.	“.....	63, 37.
MICAH		13, 42. 43.....	16, 37.
5, 2.....	34, 3.	16, 26.....	15, 39.
ZECHARIAH		18, 9.....	15, 3.
2, 6.....	52, 27.	19, 12.....	15, 8.
9, 9.....	35, 29.	19, 16. 17.....	16, 2. 4.
12, 10-12.....	52, 28.	21, 5.....	35, 29.
MATTHEW		24, 5.....	16, 40.
1, 21.....	33, 19.	25, 31.....	51, 24.
1, 23.....	33, 3.	25, 41.....	28, 6.
2, 6.....	34, 3.	26, 26-28.....	66, 15.
4, 10.....	16, 21.	27, 35.....	35, 29.
5, 16.....	16, 5.	27, 39-43.....	38, 15.
5, 22.....	16, 5.	MARK	
5, 28.....	15, 1.	2, 17.....	15, 24.
5, 29.....	15, 3.	9, 47.....	15, 3.
5, 32.....	15, 7.	10, 17.....	16, 24.
5, 34. 37.....	16, 18.	12, 30.....	16, 21.
5, 39-41.....	16, 2.	LUKE	
5, 42.....	15, 33.	1, 31. 35.....	33, 19.
		5, 32.....	15, 28.
		6, 27. 28.....	15, 29.
		6, 29.....	16, 2.
		6, 30. 34.....	15, 33.
		6, 35. 36.....	15, 45.

# INDEX OF TEXTS.

277

LUKE (continued)		JOHN	
10, 16.....	16, 33.	3, 3-5.....	61, 14.
“ .....	63, 14.	3, 14, 15.....	60, 11.
10, 27.....	16, 21.	4, 24.....	61, 14.
12, 4, 5.....	19, 27.	20, 25.....	35, 21.
12, 22-24.....	15, 46.		
12, 34.....	15, 50.	ACTS	
12, 48.....	17, 18.	1, 8, 9.....	50, 35.
13, 26-28.....	16, 34.	2, 3.....	50, 35.
16, 18.....	15, 7.		
18, 18, 19. ....	16, 24.	1 CORINTHIANS	
20, 22, 25.....	17, 4.	15, 53.....	19, 16.
22, 19, 20.....	66, 15.		
24, 25, 26.....	50, 31.	REVELATION	
		20, 2.....	28, 2.



## INDEX OF SUBJECTS.

---

- A.**
- Abraham a Christian, A 46, 12.  
 Accusative (inner object), A 9, 9;  
     15, 39.  
     (cognate), A 18, 2; 61,  
     39.  
 Achilles, A 25, 13.  
 Acts of Pilate, A 35, 25; 48, 7.  
 Adonis loved by Aphrodité and  
     Persephoné, A 25, 4.  
 Advents of Christ, A 41, 52.  
 Adversative relations, A 7, 7.  
 Aesculapins ascended to heaven,  
     A 21, 9.  
     cured diseases and  
     . raised the dead, A  
     54, 44.  
 Amen, A 65, 16.  
 Amphilochus, oracle of, A 18, 14.  
 Ananias, A 46, 13.  
 Angels — God has committed to  
     the care of men and  
     things under heaven, B  
     5, 8; D 7, 10.  
     bad, are the progenitors  
     of demons, B 5, 11.  
     began to need sacrifices  
     when overcome by lusts,  
     B 5, 16.  
     subjugated the human  
     race, B 5, 18.  
     poets call them by the  
     name they had each  
     given himself and sons,  
     B 5, 24.  
 Animal worship, A 24, 4 foll.  
 Antinous, A 29, 13.  
 Antiopé, A 25, 9.  
 Antoninus Philosophus (Marcus  
     Aurelius), A 1, 2.  
     Pius, A 1, 2.
- Aorist and negative, A 4, 10.  
     imperative, large use of, A  
     16, 6.  
     inf. for fut., A 12, 23; 15,  
     19, 35; 57, 1.  
     ingressive, A 3, 13; 12, 17;  
     14, 1; 15, 15.  
     negative aor. imperative, A  
     41, 13.  
 Aphrodité, A 25, 4.  
 Apostles, twelve, A 39, 9.  
 Apposition of genitive with pos-  
     sessive, A 14, 25.  
 Arcestratus, B 15, 8.  
 Ariadne, A 21, 14.  
 Article with inf., A 3, 9; 10, 16.  
     as antecedent, A 5, 8.  
     position of, A 6, 7; 17,  
     11.  
     of standard, A 18, 2; 61,  
     39.  
 Atheism, Christians accused of, A  
     6, 1; 13, 1.  
 Attraction of gender, A 28, 18.  
 Augustus, A 1, 2.  
 Azarias, A 46, 13.
- B.**
- Bacchius, grandfather of Justin, A  
     1, 7.  
 Bacchus, inventor of the vine, A  
     54, 24.  
     ass sacred to, A 54, 25.  
     lover of boys, A 25, 3.  
     torn in pieces, A 21, 10.  
 Baptism makes us children of free-  
     will and knowledge, A  
     61, 32.  
     subjects of, A 61, 34.  
     in the name of Father,  
     Saviour, and Holy  
     Ghost, A 61, 11.



Bar-Cochba, A 31, 23.

Bellerophon borne to heaven on Pegasus, A 21, 13.

Bethlehem thirty-five stades from Jerusalem, A 34, 3.

Briseis, A 25, 13.

### C.

Calumnies harmless to the innocent, A 27, 21.

Capparetaea, A 26, 28.

Census under Cyrenius, A 34, 9.

Charity of the Christians, A 14, 14; 67, 3.

Chastity, Christ's law of, A 15, 1.

Christ, Son and Apostle of the true God, A 12, 34; 13, 16; 22, 1.

the first-begotten and the Logos of which the whole world is partaker, A 46, 8.

made man according to the will of the Father, B 6, 15.

begotten without commixture, A 21, 2.

his mother overshadowed by the power of God, A 33, 16, 30.

whence called the Anointed, B 6, 7.

made flesh, A 66, 11.

born of a virgin, A 22, 15.

born under Cyrenius, 150 years before the Apology of Justin, A 34, 9; 46, 3.

the blood of the grape his blood, A 32, 32.

body and Logos and soul, B 10, 4.

made man for the salvation of believers, A 63, 51.

for the human race, A 63, 27.

for the restoration of the human race, A 23, 9.

for the overthrow of the demons, B 6, 16.

Christ died to rise again and conquer death, A 63, 53.

his entrance into Jerusalem, A 32, 28.

his two advents, A 52, 7.

his coming looked for, A 32, 20.

rational worship of, A 13, 18.

believed on by artisans and illiterate men, B 10, 28.

hidden until he came to man's estate, A 35, 1.

his succinct manner of teaching, A 14, 26.

will come in judgment, D 7, 27.

Christianity a novelty, A 1, 3; D 1, 9.

Christians, whence called, A 12, 35.

play on the word Christian, A 4, 4, 15.

all who obey reason are, A 46, 10.

from every kind and kindred of men, A 1, 5.

the truer, not of the Jews, but of the Gentiles, A 53, 20.

nominal, who give occasion of offence, A 4, 25.

those who do not show their Christianity in their lives are not, A 16, 26.

are hated without a cause, A 1, 6.

are condemned on account of their name merely, A 4, 1.

are called atheists, A 6, 1; 13, 1.

crimes attributed to, A 26, 33,

which cannot be proved, A 23, 15.

whether true of heretics does not appear, A 26, 35.

- Christians, slaves tortured to bear evidence against, B 12, 13.  
the persecutors of, seem to fear that all will do right, A 12, 17.  
in spite of their innocence, punished as sinners, A 24, 3.  
should be punished, not as such, but, as criminals, on evidence, A 7, 12.  
informers against, should be punished, A 4, 15;  
but Christians do not demand it, A 7, 15.  
are punished unheard, A 5, 4.  
let those who live inconsistently be punished, A 16, 44.  
Jews hate and kill, A 81, 21.  
demons the authors of charges brought against, A 10, 22; 14, 1; 23, 12.  
have many doctrines like those of philosophers and poets, A 20, 1; B 12, 1.  
prove what they teach, A 53, 7.  
all that is good in philosophy belongs to, A 60, 26.  
their doctrine far superior to tenets of philosophers, B 10, 1.  
adore the Supreme Deity, A 6, 4.  
men's life and character changed by the Christian religion, A 14, 10; 15, 20; 17, 1.
- Christians worship Christ, A 6, 4; 13, 13.  
do not hate their persecutors, A 57, 7.  
deem it impious to expose infants, A 27, 1; 29, 1.  
the destruction of the world postponed on account of, B 7, 1.  
what manner of kingdom they expect, A 10, 1.  
are helps to governments, A 12, 1.  
make a common stock, A 14, 14.  
pray for their enemies, A 14, 18.  
cheerfully pay tribute, A 17, 1.  
their charity, A 14, 14; 57, 17.  
their chastity, A 14, 10.  
influence of Christian life, A 16, 14.  
love one another, D 1, 18.  
their customs and condition, D 5, 1 foll.  
the soul of the world, D 6, 1 foll.  
their religion not of man, but of God, D 7, 1 foll.  
persecuted by Jews and Gentiles, D 5, 28.
- Coincident action A 16, 21; 17, 17.  
Collective singular with relative plural, A 49, 7.  
Comparative for superlative, B 10.  
Concessive relations, A 7, 7. [11.  
Conditional. See Greek Index, s. v. *εἰ*.  
logical, A 4, 6.  
anticipatory, A 2, 4.  
unreal, A 4, 6.  
ideal, A 3, 6.
- Conflagration. See Greek Index, s. v. *ἐκπύρωσις*.

Creation of the world, A 59, 1.  
     why the world was created, A 10, 9.  
 Crescens the Cynic, B 3, 3; 11, 6.  
 Cross, A 55, 2; 60, 10.  
 Crowning, A 24, 10.  
 Cybelé (mother of the gods), A 27, 16.  
 Cynics, B 3, 25.  
 Cyrenius, first procurator of Judea, A 13, 15; 46, 3.

## D.

Danaë, A 21, 12.  
 Dative of agent, A 27, 18.  
     reference, A 19, 1.  
 David, A 35, 15; 40, 12; 41, 2; 42, 7.  
 Deacons (*διδάκοντες*) distribute the eucharist and carry it to the absent, A 55, 18; 67, 18.  
 Death appointed to all, B 11, 3.  
     if a state of unconsciousness, it would be better for the wicked, A 18, 3.  
     Christians do not fear, A 57, 18.  
     wrong to put one's self to, B 4, 9.  
     despised by Christians, D 1, 5.  
 Demoniacal possession, A 18, 13.  
 Demoniacs cured by Christians, B 6, 25.  
 Demons try to enslave men, A 14, 4 foll.  
     instigate the persecution of Christians, A 5, 4: 12, 20; B 1, 14; 12, 11.  
     statues of the gods bear names and figures of, A 9, 7.  
     disseminate false accusations against the Christians, A 10, 23; 23, 14; B 13, 3.  
     turn men away from reading and understanding the truth, A 14, 2.  
     authors of debauchery, A 5, 7; 21, 29; B 5, 20.

Demons, chief of the—serpent, Satan, devil, A 28, 1.  
     try to escape the power of the Father and of Christ, A 40, 22.  
     the authors of the fables of the poets, A 54, 1 foll.  
     did what the gods were fabled to have done, A 21, 29.  
     originate heresies, A 56, 7.  
     instigate heretics, A 26, 1.  
     strive to lead men away from God and Christ, A 58, 12.  
     suffered to live on account of Christians, B 7, 3.  
     sons of fallen angels, B 5, 10.  
     ask sacrifices and services from those who live irrationally, A 12, 21.  
     apparitions of, A 5, 6; 14, 5.  
     bugbears, A 5, 7.  
     give names to the gods, A 5, 11.  
     caused Socrates to be put to death, A 5, 17.  
     Comp. B 10, 12.  
     hate Christians the more because they know the entire Logos, B 8, 11.  
 Deucalion same as Noah, B 7, 10.  
 Devil, serpent, and Satan, A 28, 1.  
     with his host and human followers, will be sent into everlasting fire, A 28, 5.  
     this doom delayed on account of Christians, B 7, 3.

Diognetus, D 1, 1.  
 Dioscuri, D 21, 12.  
 Doctrine, Christian, outlined, A 15 foll. See 'Christian.'  
 Dodona, oracle of, A 18, 14.

## E.

Elias a Christian, A 46, 13.  
 Empedocles taught immortality, A 18, 16.

Emperors, apotheosis of, A 21, 16.  
images of, A 55, 25.  
Enchanters, B 6, 23.  
Epicurus, B 7, 19; 12, 28; 15, 8.  
Epistle of Hadrian, A 1, 68.  
Epistolary tenses, A 2, 14.  
Erebus, A 59, 17.  
Eucharist, A 66, 1; 67, 15.  
Eunuchs, A 27, 15.  
Exposure of children, A 27, 1; 29,  
1; D 5.

F.

Fables of the gods due to the de-  
mons, A 23, 12.  
propagated to promote de-  
bauchery, A 21, 21.  
invented to deceive, A 54, 1.  
in order to show  
that the story of  
Christ is like-  
wise a fable, A  
54, 9.  
disseminated among the  
Gentiles because more of  
them would believe on  
Christ, A 54, 12.  
Faith, God leads to, A 10, 18.  
it is better to believe the im-  
possible than to have no  
faith, A 19, 24.  
Familiar spirits, A 18, 9.  
Fasting before baptism, A 61, 7.  
of the Jews, D 4, 4.  
Fate does away with responsibility,  
A 43, 2; B 7, 20, 34.  
Felix, prefect of Alexandria, A 29,  
10.  
Figure, human, resembles cross, A  
55, 13.  
Fire, everlasting. See Greek In-  
dex, s. v. πῦρ.  
Flavia Neapolis, A 1, 7.  
Flesh loved by the soul, hates the  
soul, D 6, 9.  
Free-will, A 43, 14; B 7, 16.  
Future infinitive, A 2, 17.  
with article, A  
47, 12.  
participle with verbs of mo-  
tion. A 2, 11.

G.

Ganymede, A 21, 27; 25, 10. *wh*  
Gehenna, A 19, 30, 31. *con*  
Genitive chorographic, A 1, 8. *58-*  
of emotion, A 9, 18.  
of time within which, A 57,  
11.  
Gentiles delight in debauchery, A  
14, 10; 27, 4.  
know not God, A 53, 25.  
worship the works of their  
own hands, A 53, 26.  
the good among, persecut-  
ed, B 8, 1.  
indulge in shameful specta-  
cles and shameful read-  
ing, B 15, 10.  
do openly what they charge  
Christians with doing  
secretly, A 27, 18; B  
12, 15.  
misconceive the prophets,  
A 44, 30.  
noble sayings of, due to  
the germinant word, B  
13, 19.  
have said many things  
similar to the Christian  
doctrines, A 20, 1 full.  
what they have learned  
from Moses, A 59, 5;  
60, 3.  
Gitton, A 19, 3.  
God. See Greek Index, s. v. θεός.  
does not need oblations, A  
10, 1.  
has no name, A 10, 7; 61, *B*  
38.  
foresees the future, A 44, 33.  
loves men, D 9, 15.  
Gods are demons, A 5, 10; 9, 7.  
made of vessels unto dishonor,  
A 9, 10; D 2, 10.  
trees and animals considered  
gods, A 24, 4.  
guarded by men, A 9, 24; D  
2, 32.  
insulted by poets, A 4, 35.  
guilty of crimes, B 12, 26;  
14, 10.

Gospels, A 66, 14.

Grace—God has called not the just,  
but the unjust, A 15, 22.

God persuades us to choose  
the good, A 10, 12.

communicates the Logos by  
grace, B 13, 22.

calls artisans and unlearned  
men, B 10, 27.

#### H.

Helena, companion of Simon Ma-  
gus, A 26, 14.

Heraclitus a Christian, A 46, 11.  
put to death on account  
of his virtue, B 8, 5.

Hercules gave himself to the fire,  
A 21, 11.  
a mighty hero, roamed  
over the world, A 54, 4.  
at the cross-roads, B 11, 7.

Heresies. A 26, 1 foll.; 56, 1 foll.;  
58, 1 foll.; B 15, 1.

Herod, A 31, 11, 13.

Homer teaches immortality of the  
soul, A 18, 17.  
exiled by Socrates (Plato),  
B 10, 16.

Hystaspes predicted conflagration  
of corruptible things,  
A 20, 1.  
his books under the ban,  
A 44, 41.

#### I.

Idolatry, A 24, 1 foll.

Immortality of the soul, A 18, 1;  
19, 16; 20, 13; 21, 30; 63, 56.

Imperative negative, A 15, 48.

...orist, A 16, 6.

Impersonal participle, A 4, 43.

Infinitive with article, A 3, 9;  
10, 6.

with verbs of knowing  
and showing, A 36,  
25.

with verbs of motion, A  
13, 24.

Inscriptions, A 55, 26.

Inspections of boys, A 18, 7.

#### J.

Jesse ancestor of Christ, A 32, 53.

Jesus means Saviour, A 33, 32. See  
'Christ.'

even if he were mere man,  
would deserve to be called  
God, A 22, 1 foll.

Jews expect the coming of Christ,  
A 49, 3.

descendants of Judah, A 32,  
52.

forbidden under pain of  
death to enter the Holy  
Land, A 47, 16.

fewer Christians among, than  
among the heathen, A 53,  
17.

do not recognize Christ in the  
Old Testament, A 63, 1.

what will they do when they  
see Christ coming in glory?  
A 52, 24.

their superstitious sacrifices,  
D 3.

their foolish rites, customs,  
and ceremonies, D 4.

Judah ancestor of Jews, A 32, 52.

Judges, duty of, A 2, 13; 68, 1.

Judgment (last), A 8, 14; 12, 5;  
17, 15; 28, 6; 43, 5; 44, 35;  
52, 14; 57, 1.

Jupiter (Zeus), born of a parricide,  
himself a parricide, A 21,  
25.

a promiscuous lover, A  
25, 9.

lover of Ganymede, A 21,  
27.

his lasciviousness, A 4, 32.

is liberated by the aid of  
Briareus, A 25, 12.

nefarious deeds of his sons,  
A 21, 19.

blood of human victims of-  
fered to Jupiter Latiaris,  
B 12, 22 (note).

numerous sons of, A 21, 6;  
22, 9.

Justice demanded. A 2, 7.

Justin, son of Priscus, A 1, 6.

- Justin boasts of being a Christian, B 13, 7.  
wrote against all heresies, A 36, 36.  
expects persecution at the hands of Crescens, B 3, 1.  
speaks, A 26, 36; B 1, 4; 12, 1; 13, 1; 15, 1.  
K.
- Kingdom which Christians look for, A 11, 1.
- L.
- Laws vary according to nationality, B 9, 12.  
bad laws due to the demons, B 9, 17.
- Litotes, A 12, 44; 22, 10; 45, 20.
- Logos. See Greek Index, s. v., and 'Word.'
- Love of Christians mutual, D 1, 8.  
of God towards men, D 9, 15; 10, 2.
- Lucius a martyr, B 2, 35.  
the philosopher, A 1, 3.
- Lying. Christians will not accept life on condition of, A 8, 3.  
Christians die to keep from, A 39, 14.
- M.
- Magic practiced by the demons, A 14, 6; B 5, 13.  
rites, A 18, 9.  
of Simon Magus, A 26, 7.
- Magistrates possessed of demons, B 1, 16.
- Man endowed with rational faculties, A 10, 18; D 10.  
world created for his sake, A 10, 9; B 4, 6; D 10.  
the earth subjected to him, B 5, 5; D 10.
- Marcion still living, A 26, 22.  
teaches that there is another god greater than the Creator, A 58, 1 foll.
- Marriage—Object of Christian, A 29, 3.  
second marriages forbidden to Christians, A 15, 12.  
a Christian woman renounces, with a pagan, B 2, 26.  
Christians marry, D 5, 15.
- Martyrs—Christian, will not lie, A 8, 3.  
longing for their home with God, A 8, 6.  
regard not their murderers, A 11, 9.  
under Urbicus, B 1, 2 foll.  
why they do not kill themselves, B 4, 1.  
refuse to deny, B 4, 13.  
readily confess, B 4, 1.  
despise death, B 10, 30.  
fearless in view of death, B 12, 3.
- Material of universe, A 10, 9; 59, 3.
- Menander, the comic poet, ridicules idols, A 20, 17.  
the Samaritan, A 26, 17; 56, 8.
- Mercury (Hermes) the interpreting word, A 21, 8.  
the messenger word, A 22, 7.
- Middle voice. when a direct reflexive, A 14, 12.
- Minerva (Athena), A 64, 11.
- Minos, A 8, 12.
- Miracles not conclusive without prophecies, A 30, 6.  
of Simon, A 26, 7.
- Mithras, mysteries of, an imitation of the eucharist, A 66, 19.
- Moses older than Greeks, A 44, 23; 54, 17; 59, 7.  
predicts Christ's coming, A 32, 1; 54, 18.  
God appears to, A 63, 2.  
Plato indebted to, A 59, 3.
- Musonius, B 8, 5.

Mysteries of Venus and Proserpine, A 25, 4; 64, 10.  
 Mythology, heathen, its origin, A 21, 29; 54, 23.

## N.

Names of God and Christ, A 10, 7; B 6, 1.

Necromancy, A 18, 7.

Negative. See Greek Index, s.vv.

*οὐ* and *μή*.  
 with aorist, A 4, 10.  
 of infinitive, A 2, 4.  
 subdivided, A 4, 27.  
 superfluous, B 7, 2.

Neuter plural with verb plural, A 3, 3; 52, 7.

New moon (of the Jews), D 4, 4.

Noah = Deucalion, B 7, 10.

## O.

Oath, military, A 39, 19.

Obedience, civil, A 17, 1.

Optative with *άν*, A 4, 10.

used as a future, A 26, 21.

Oracles, heathen, prove the immortality of the soul, A 18, 14.

Original sin, A 61, 30.

## P.

Palestine, A 1, 7.

Participle as adjective, A 3, 4.

future, A 2, 12.

of gen. absol. omitted, A 15, 17.

different from relative with finite verb, A 1, 7.

Patience, Christ exhorts to, A 12, 1.

Pegasus, A 21, 13; 54, 35.

Perception, verbs of, their construction, A 3, 3.

Perfect emotional, A 11, 10.

Periphrastic fut. aor., A 44, 49.

Persecutions, A 2, 16; 4, 12; 5, 4; 12, 17; 57, 6; B 1, 11; 11, 1; 13, 13.

instigated by demons.

See 'Demons.'

do not affect heretics, A 26, 35.

Persecutions—persecutors deserve well of Christian poets, A 57, 16.

Perseus, son of Jove and Danaë, A 21, 12.

born of a virgin, A 54, 39.

Philaenis, her performances, B 15, 8.

Philosophers contradict one another, A 4, 30.

some have taught that there are no gods, A 4, 32.

a pseudo-philosopher, B 3, 4.

Plato teaches the value of philosophy for the state, A 3, 14.

the immortality of the soul, A 18, 16.

that the wicked are punished, A 8, 12.

the chiasm of the Logos, A 60, 1.

also the doctrine of human responsibility, A 44, 21.

gives the second place to the Logos, the third to the Spirit, A 60, 20.

learned from Moses that God had made the universe out of formless matter, A 59, 3.

Justin's attachment to the doctrines of, B 12, 1.

his doctrines not foreign to Christ's, B 13, 7.

Pluperfect for perfect, A 2, 14.

Plural of abstracts, A 12, 30.

Poets, their melodious insults of the gods, A 4, 35.

defend vice, A 12, 27.

blunder in their imitation of Christ's predictions, A 54, 15.

banished by Socrates (Plato), B 10, 16.

sometimes speak nobly on moral questions, A 54, 15.

Pontius Pilate, A 13, 13; 35, 25; 48, 7.

- Prayers, Christians offer, A 13, 4.  
 they pray for kings, A 17, 10.  
     before baptism, A 61, 7.  
     before celebrating the eucharist, A 67, 13.
- Prepositions. See Greek Index.
- President (*ὁ προσιτώς*), A 65, 9; 67, 15, 21.
- Priscus, father of Justin, A 1, 6.
- Prophecies—Christ's doctrine confirmed by his, A 12, 37.  
     concerning Christ, A 31, 25 foll.; 32 foll.  
     carefully preserved by the kings of the Jews, A 31, 7.  
     fulfilled, accredit those yet to be fulfilled, A 52, 8.  
     Christ the interpreter of hidden, A 32, 9.  
     incredible to man, A 33, 5.
- Prophecy as a proof of divine power, A 12, 38.  
     different persons represented in, A 36, 1 foll.  
     value of, as evidence, A 30, 8.  
     does not involve fatalism, A 43, 1; 44, 42.
- Prophets, Hebrew, A 30, 6; 31, 1 foll.; (Moses) 32, 1; (Isaiah) 32, 45; (David) 42, 7; (Ezekiel) 52, 15; (Zechariah) 52, 26.  
     use the past tense, A 42, 2.  
     inspired by the Logos, A 33, 36; 36, 4; B 10, 25.  
     death denounced against those who read the, A 44, 42.
- Proserpine (*Persephoné*) enamoured of Adonis, A 64, 2.
- Providence, Divine, B 7, 1.
- Ptolemy a martyr, B 2, 31.  
     Philadelphus, A 31, 8.
- Punishments, everlasting, A 12, 5; 18, 5; 44, 25; 45, 24; 52, 13; B 1, 10; 2, 6.  
     a necessity of God's nature, B 9, 7.  
     not limited to a thousand years, A 8, 15.
- Pythagoras teaches immortality, A 18, 16.
- Pythian oracle, A 18, 15.
- Q.
- Questions, mood of, A 15, 46.
- Quirinus. See 'Cyrenius.'
- R.
- Reflexive. See Greek Index, s. v. *ἑαυτοῦ*.  
     expressed, A 14, 12.
- Relative causal, A 3, 7.  
     clausal, A 9, 25.
- Religion, Christian, its heralds, A 39, 8. See 'Christian.'
- Repentance, A 15, 25.  
     to be exercised before baptism, A 61, 35.  
     fruitless after death, A 52, 23.
- Representation, A 43, 3.
- Responsibility, human, B 7, 22.
- Resurrection possible, A 19, 17; 52, 12.
- Rhadamanthus, A 8, 12.
- S.
- Sacraments, A 61 foll.
- Sacrifices, God does not need, A 13, 2; D 3.  
     instituted by fallen angels, B 5, 14.
- Salvation, eternal, or eternal punishment, according to deserts, A 12, 5.
- Samaritans believe in Simon Magus, A 26, 5; B 15, 1.



- Samaritans, few Christians among, A 53, 17.  
 Satan, A 28, 1.  
 Saturn, mysteries of, B 12, 20.  
     Saturn's day, A 67, 29, 30.  
 Scriptures pertaining to Christ, A 32 foll.  
     not understood by the Jews, A 31, 20.  
 Senate, A 1, 4.  
 Septuagint, A 31, 15.  
 Sequence of moods, A 12, 10.  
 Serenius, A 68, 20.  
 Serpent=devil, A 27, 17; 28, 2.  
 Sibyl, A 20, 1; 44, 42.  
 Simon Magus believed to be a god, and honored with a statue, A 26, 5.  
     his magic arts, A 56, 7.  
     his impious doctrine, B 15, 1.  
 Socrates a Christian, A 46, 11.  
     exiled the poets from his state, B 10, 16.  
     exhorted men to seek God, B 10, 19.  
     endeavored to draw men away from demons, A 5, 12.  
     demons compassed his death, on the ground of atheism, A 5, 16.  
     taught the immortality of the soul, A 18, 17.  
     a noble sentiment of, B 3, 25.  
 Sodom and Gomorrah, A 53, 1.  
 Soul, immortality of the, shown by many practices of the Gentiles, A 18, 8.  
     better hope of the Christian concerning the immortality of the, A 18, 20.  
     souls of sinners do not lose feeling, A 18, 4; 20, 13.  
     souls of the bad punished, souls of the good happy, A 20, 14.  
     souls of the good immortal, eternal fire the lot of the wicked, A 21, 30.  
 Soul immortal, invisible, dwells in the body; so Christians in the world, D 6, 4.  
 Spirit. See Greek Index, s. v. πνεῦμα.  
 Standards in shape of cross, A 53, 25.  
 Statues placed in temples, A 9, 2 foll.  
 Stoics teach that God will be destroyed together with the world, A 20, 3.  
     the Stoic doctrine of fate, A 43, 2; B 7, 13, 21.  
     doctrine of the renewal of the universe after the general conflagration, A 20, 5; B 7, 13.  
     their elevated moral doctrines, B 7, 31; 8, 1.  
 Subjunctive in questions, A 16, 46.  
 Sunday, Christians meet on, A 67, 6.  
     why they meet on, A 67, 26.  
 Superlative for comparative, A 12, 28.  
 Syria, A 1, 7.  
 T.  
 Tabernacle an image of the universe, A 60, 10 (note).  
 Taxes, Christians readily pay, A 17, 1.  
     on prostitution, A 27, 10.  
 Teachings of Christ, A 15 foll.  
 Tenses, past for future, A 42, 2.  
 Tiber, island of, A 26, 10.  
 Tree-worship, A 24, 4.  
 Trinity, A 6, 5; 13, 8; 61, 11.  
 Truth above everything, A 2, 2; 6, 9; 12, 26.  
     known from the prophets, A 30, 6.  
     misrepresented, A 44, 30.  
     princes who prefer error to, no better than highway-men (murderers), A 12, 25.  
     the presentation of, makes it possible to escape error, A 12, 45.  
     impious not to tell the, in everything, B 4, 14.

Truth always to be told, A 16, 17.  
 a saying of Socrates about,  
 B 3, 25.  
 partial, revealed to the Gen-  
 tiles, B 13, 20.

U.

Ulysses, his descent to Hades a  
 proof of immortality, A 18, 17.  
 Urbicus, prefect of city, condemns  
 Christians to death, B 1 foll.

V.

Venus (Aphrodité) madly enam-  
 oured of Adonis, A 25, 4.  
 Verbs of will and power with fut.  
 inf., A 2, 18.  
 perception (construction),  
 A 3, 3.  
 fear, A 12, 17.  
 reflection and calculation,  
 A 2, 8.  
 belief, A 8, 6.  
 Verissimus the philosopher, A 1, 2.  
 Verus Lucius, A 1, 3.  
 Vice—none would choose, if he re-  
 membered eternal punish-  
 ment, A 12, 6.  
 and virtue, B 11, 20.  
 Virgins, A 15, 18.  
 Vocative, omission of *ō* with, D  
 1, 1.

W.

Water the first principle, D 8, 6.  
 Wicked, the punishment of the.  
 See 'Punishment.'  
 Word. See Greek Index. s.v. *λόγος*.  
 the, with the Father be-  
 fore the creation, B 6,  
 7.  
 first-begotten of the Father,  
 . A 21, 1.  
 =the Spirit, A 33, 26.  
 Son of God, A 32, 40.  
 first power next to the Fa-  
 ther, A 32, 39.  
 adored next to God, B 13,  
 16.  
 first-begotten of God, and  
 God, A 63, 46.

Word, the, made the world, A 59,  
 13.  
 God made all things by the,  
 B 6, 8.  
 the, appeared, not the Fa-  
 ther, A 63, 11.  
 appeared now in form of  
 fire, now in incorporeal  
 image, A 63, 25, 48.  
 the, is in all, B 10, 25.  
 Christ the, of which the hu-  
 man race is partaker, A  
 46, 9.  
 moved the prophets, A 33,  
 36; 36, 4; B 10, 25.  
 those who lived with the,  
 Christians, A 46, 10.  
 seed of the, granted to the  
 Gentiles, B 13, 22.  
 excellence of Gentile teach-  
 ings according to pro-  
 portion of the, B 13,  
 10.  
 partial communication of the,  
 to philosophers and law-  
 givers, B 10, 6.  
 but not the whole, B 8,  
 10.  
 Christians have the entire  
 word Christ, B 10, 2.  
 fashioned and made man,  
 and called Christ, A 5,  
 20.  
 made man by the will of the  
 Father, A 63, 27.  
 World preserved for the sake of  
 Christians, B 7, 1.  
 made for man, A 10, 9; B  
 4, 6.  
 wretched state of the, before  
 the Son of God came, D  
 8, 1 foll.  
 created by God, D 10.  
 by the Logos, D  
 7.  
 Worship, weekly, of Christians, A  
 67, 6.  
 heathen, A 9, 1.  
 X.  
 Xenophon, B 11, 5.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

# VALUABLE AND INTERESTING WORKS

## FOR

# PUBLIC AND PRIVATE LIBRARIES

PUBLISHED BY HARPER & BROTHERS, NEW YORK.

For a full List of Books suitable for Libraries, see HARPER & BROTHERS' TRADE-LIST and CATALOGUE, which may be had gratuitously on application to the Publishers personally, or by letter enclosing Ten Cents in Postage Stamps.

HARPER & BROTHERS will send any of the following works by mail or express, postage or freight prepaid, to any part of the United States or Canada, on receipt of the price.

**ALISON'S HISTORY OF EUROPE. FIRST SERIES:** From the Commencement of the French Revolution, in 1789, to the Restoration of the Bourbons in 1815. (In addition to the Notes on Chapter LXXVI., which correct the errors of the original work concerning the United States, a copious Analytical Index has been appended to this American Edition.) **SECOND SERIES:** From the Fall of Napoleon, in 1815, to the Accession of Louis Napoleon, in 1852. 8 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$16 00.

**ABBOTT'S DICTIONARY OF RELIGIOUS KNOWLEDGE.** A Dictionary of Religious Knowledge, for Popular and Professional Use; comprising full information on Biblical, Theological, and Ecclesiastical Subjects. With nearly One Thousand Maps and Illustrations. Edited by the Rev. LYMAN ABBOTT, with the Co-operation of the Rev. T. C. CONANT, D.D. Royal 8vo, containing over 1000 pages, Cloth, \$6 00; Sheep, \$7 00; Half Morocco, \$3 50.

**ABBOTT'S FREDERICK THE GREAT.** The History of Frederick the Second, called Frederick the Great. By JOHN S. C. ABBOTT. Illustrated. 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00.

**ABBOTT'S HISTORY OF THE FRENCH REVOLUTION.** The French Revolution of 1789, as viewed in the Light of Republican Institutions. By JOHN S. C. ABBOTT. Illustrated. 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00.

**ABBOTT'S NAPOLEON BONAPARTE.** The History of Napoleon Bonaparte. By JOHN S. C. ABBOTT. With Maps, Woodcuts, and Portraits on Steel. 2 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$10 00.

**ABBOTT'S NAPOLEON AT ST. HELENA.** Napoleon at St. Helena; or, Interesting Anecdotes and Remarkable Conversations of the Emperor during the Five and a Half Years of his Captivity. Collected from the Memorials of Las Casas, O'Meara, Montholon, Antommarchi, and others. By JOHN S. C. ABBOTT. Illustrated. 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00.

**ADDISON'S COMPLETE WORKS.** The Works of Joseph Addison, embracing the whole of the *Spectator*. 8 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$6 00.

**ANNUAL RECORD OF SCIENCE AND INDUSTRY.** The Annual Record of Science and Industry. Edited by Professor SPENCER F. BAIRD, of the Smithsonian Institution, with the Assistance of Eminent Men of Science. The Yearly Volumes for 1871, 1872, 1873, 1874, and 1875 are ready. 12mo, Cloth, \$2 00 per vol.

**BAKER'S ISMAILIA.** Ismailia: a Narrative of the Expedition to Central Africa for the Suppression of the Slave-Trade, organized by Ismail, Khedive of Egypt. By SIR SAMUEL WHITE BAKER, PASHA, F.R.S., F.R.G.S. With Maps, Portraits, and Illustrations. 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00.

2 *Valuable and Interesting Works for Public and Private Libraries.*

- BOSWELL'S JOHNSON.** The Life of Samuel Johnson, LL.D., including a Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides. By JAMES BOSWELL, Esq. Edited by JOHN WILSON CROKER, LL.D., F.R.S. With a Portrait of Boswell. 2 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$4 00.
- BOURNE'S LIFE OF JOHN LOCKE.** The Life of John Locke. By H. R. FOX BOURNE. 2 vols., 8vo, Cloth, uncut edges and gilt tops, \$5 00.
- BROUGHAM'S AUTOBIOGRAPHY.** Life and Times of Henry, Lord Brougham. Written by Himself. 8 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$6 00.
- BULWER'S HORACE.** The Odes and Epodes of Horace. A Metrical Translation into English. With Introduction and Commentaries. By LORD LYTON. With Latin Text from the Editions of Orelli, Maclean, and Yonge. 12mo, Cloth, \$1 75.
- BULWER'S KING ARTHUR.** King Arthur. A Poem. By LORD LYTON. 12mo, Cloth, \$1 75.
- BULWER'S PROSE WORKS.** Miscellaneous Prose Works of Edward Bulwer, Lord Lyton. 2 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$3 50. Also, in uniform style, *Cassington*. 12mo, Cloth, \$1 75.
- CARLYLE'S FREDERICK THE GREAT.** History of Friedrich II., called Frederick the Great. By THOMAS CARLYLE. Portraits, Maps, Plans, &c. 6 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$12 00.
- CARLYLE'S FRENCH REVOLUTION.** The French Revolution: a History. By THOMAS CARLYLE. 2 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$3 50.
- CARLYLE'S OLIVER CROMWELL.** Oliver Cromwell's Letters and Speeches, including the Supplement to the First Edition. With Elucidations. By THOMAS CARLYLE. 2 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$3 50.
- COLERIDGE'S COMPLETE WORKS.** The Complete Works of Samuel Taylor Coleridge. With an Introductory Essay upon his Philosophical and Theological Opinions. Edited by the Rev. W. G. T. SHEPP, D.D. With a Portrait. 7 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$10 50.
- COLERIDGE'S (SARA) MEMOIR AND LETTERS.** Memoir and Letters of Sara Coleridge. Edited by her Daughter. With Two Portraits on Steel. Crown 8vo, Cloth, \$2 50.
- DAVIS'S CARTHAGE.** Carthage and her Remains: being an Account of the Excavations and Researches on the Site of the Phœnician Metropolis in Africa and other Adjacent Places. Conducted under the Auspices of Her Majesty's Government. By DR. N. DAVIS, F.R.G.S. Profusely illustrated with Maps, Woodcuts, Chromo-Lithographs, &c. 8vo, Cloth, \$4 00.
- DRAPER'S AMERICAN CIVIL POLICY.** Thoughts on the Future Civil Policy of America. By JOHN W. DRAPER, M.D., LL.D., Professor of Chemistry and Physiology in the University of New York. Crown 8vo, Cloth, \$2 00.
- DRAPER'S CIVIL WAR.** History of the American Civil War. By JOHN W. DRAPER, M.D., LL.D. 3 vols., 8vo, Cloth, Beveled Edges, \$10 50; Sheep, \$12 00; Half Calf, \$17 25.
- DRAPER'S INTELLECTUAL DEVELOPMENT OF EUROPE.** A History of the Intellectual Development of Europe. By JOHN W. DRAPER, M.D., LL.D. New Edition, Revised. 2 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$3 00.
- DU CHAILLU'S AFRICA.** Explorations and Adventures in Equatorial Africa: with Accounts of the Manners and Customs of the People, and of the Chase of the Gorilla, the Crocodile, Leopard, Elephant, Hippopotamus, and other Animals. By PAUL B. DU CHAILLU. Illustrated. 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00.
- DU CHAILLU'S ASHANGO LAND.** A Journey to Ashango Land: and Further Penetration into Equatorial Africa. By PAUL B. DU CHAILLU. Illustrated. 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00.
- FLAMMARION'S ATMOSPHERE.** The Atmosphere. Translated from the French of CAMILLE FLAMMARION. Edited by JAMES GLAISHER, F.R.S., Superintendent of the Magnetical and Meteorological Department of the Royal Observatory at Greenwich. With 10 Chromo-Lithographs and 56 Woodcuts. 8vo, Cloth, \$6 00.

**FIRST CENTURY OF THE REPUBLIC.** A Review of American Progress. Svo, Cloth, \$5 00; Sheep, \$5 50; Half Morocco, \$7 25.

### Contents.

- Introduction: I. Colonial Progress. By **EGENE LAWRENCE**.—II. Mechanical Progress. By **EDWARD H. KNIGHT**.—III. Progress in Manufacture. By the Hon. **DAVID A. WELLS**.—IV. Agricultural Progress. By Professor **WM. H. BREWER**.—V. The Development of our Mineral Resources. By Professor **T. STERRY HUNT**.—VI. Commercial Development. By **EDWARD ATKINSON**.—VII. Growth and Distribution of Population. By the Hon. **FRANCIS A. WALKER**.—VIII. Monetary Development. By Professor **WILLIAM G. SUMNER**.—IX. The Experiment of the Union, with its Preparations. By **T. D. WOOLSEY, D.D., LL.D.**.—X. Educational Progress. By **EGENE LAWRENCE**.—XI. Scientific Progress: 1. The Exact Sciences. By **F. A. P. BARNARD, D.D., LL.D.** 2. Natural Science. By Professor **THEODORE GILL**.—XII. A Century of American Literature. By **EDWIN P. WHipple**.—XIII. Progress of the Fine Arts. By **S. S. CONANT**.—XIV. Medical and Sanitary Progress. By **ASTIN FLINT, M.D.**.—XV. American Jurisprudence. By **BENJAMIN VAUGHAN ABNOTT**.—XVI. Humanitarian Progress. By **CHARLES L. BRACE**.—XVII. Religious Development. By the Rev. **JOHN F. HURST, D.D.**
- FORSTER'S LIFE OF DEAN SWIFT.** The Early Life of Jonathan Swift (1667-1711). By **JOHN FORSTER**. With Portrait. Svo, Cloth, \$2 50.
- GIBBON'S ROME.** The History of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire. By **EDWARD GIBBON**. With Notes by Rev. **H. H. MILMAN** and **M. GUYOT**. A new cheap Edition. With Index and a Portrait. 6 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$6 00.
- GREEN'S SHORT HISTORY OF THE ENGLISH PEOPLE.** A Short History of the English People. By **J. R. GREEN, M.A.**, Examiner in the School of Modern History, Oxford. With Tables and Colored Maps. Svo, Cloth, \$1 75.
- GROTE'S HISTORY OF GREECE.** 12 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$15 00.
- HALLAM'S CONSTITUTIONAL HISTORY OF ENGLAND.** The Constitutional History of England, from the Accession of Henry VII. to the Death of George II. By **HENRY HALLAM**. Svo, Cloth, \$2 00.
- HALLAM'S LITERATURE.** Introduction to the Literature of Europe during the Fifteenth, Sixteenth, and Seventeenth Centuries. By **HENRY HALLAM**. 2 vols., Svo, Cloth, \$4 00.
- HALLAM'S MIDDLE AGES.** View of the State of Europe during the Middle Ages. By **HENRY HALLAM**. Svo, Cloth, \$2 00.
- HARPER'S NEW CLASSICAL LIBRARY.** Literal Translations.  
The following Volumes are now ready. 12mo, Cloth, \$1 50 each.  
**CÆSAR.**—**VIRGIL.**—**SALLUST.**—**HORACE.**—**CICERO'S ORATIONS.**—**CICERO'S OFFICES, &c.**—**CICERO ON ORATORY AND ORATORS.**—**TACITUS** (2 vols.).—**TERENCE.**—**SOPHOCLES.**—**JUVENAL.**—**XENOPHON.**—**HOMER'S ILLIAD.**—**HOMER'S ODYSSEY.**—**HERODOTUS.**—**DEMOSTHENES.**—**THUCYDIDES.**—**ÆSCHYLUS.**—**EURIPIDES** (2 vols.).—**LIVY** (2 vols.).—**PLATO** [Select Dialogues].
- HAYDN'S DICTIONARY OF DATES,** relating to all Ages and Nations. For Universal Reference. Edited by **BENJAMIN VINCENT**, Assistant Secretary and Keeper of the Library of the Royal Institution of Great Britain: and Revised for the Use of American Readers. Svo, Cloth, \$5 00; Sheep, \$6 00.
- HILDRETH'S UNITED STATES.** History of the United States. **FIRST SERIES:** From the Discovery of the Continent to the Organization of the Government under the Federal Constitution. **SECOND SERIES:** From the Adoption of the Federal Constitution to the End of the Sixteenth Congress. By **RICHARD HILDRETH**. 6 vols., Svo, Cloth, \$15 00.
- HUME'S HISTORY OF ENGLAND.** The History of England, from the Invasion of Julius Cæsar to the Abdication of James II., 1688. By **DAVID HUME**. A new Edition, with the Author's Last Corrections and Improvements. To which is prefixed a short Account of his Life, written by himself. With a Portrait of the Author. 6 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$6 00.

4 *Valuable and Interesting Works for Public and Private Libraries.*

**HUDSON'S HISTORY OF JOURNALISM.** Journalism in the United States, from 1690 to 1872. By **FREDERICK HUDSON.** 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00.

**JEFFERSON'S DOMESTIC LIFE.** The Domestic Life of Thomas Jefferson: compiled from Family Letters and Reminiscences, by his Great-Granddaughter, **SARAH N. RANDOLPH.** Illustrated. Crown 8vo, Cloth, \$2 50.

**JOHNSON'S COMPLETE WORKS.** The Works of Samuel Johnson, LL.D. With an Essay on his Life and Genius, by **ARTHUR MURPHY, Esq.** With Portrait. 2 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$4 00.

**KINGLAKE'S CRIMEAN WAR.** The Invasion of the Crimea: its Origin, and an Account of its Progress down to the Death of Lord Raglan. By **ALEXANDER WILLIAM KINGLAKE.** With Maps and Plans. Three Volumes now ready. 12mo, Cloth, \$2 00 per vol.

**LAMB'S COMPLETE WORKS.** The Works of Charles Lamb. Comprising his Letters, Poems, Essays of Elia, Essays upon Shakespeare, Hogarth, &c., and a Sketch of his Life, with the Final Memorials, by **T. NOON TALFOURD.** With Portrait. 2 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$3 00.

**LAWRENCE'S HISTORICAL STUDIES.** Historical Studies. By **EDMUND LAWRENCE.** Containing the following Essays: The Bishops of Rome.—Leo and Luther.—Loyola and the Jesuits.—Ecumenical Councils.—The Vaudois.—The Huguenots.—The Church of Jerusalem.—Dominic and the Inquisition.—The Conquest of Ireland.—The Greek Church. 8vo, Cloth, uncut edges and gilt tops, \$3 00.

**LEWIS'S HISTORY OF GERMANY.** A History of Germany, from the Earliest Times. Founded on Dr. **DAVID MÜLLER'S** "History of the German People." By **CHARLTON T. LEWIS.** Illustrated. Crown 8vo, Cloth, \$2 50.

**LIVINGSTONE'S SOUTH AFRICA.** Missionary Travels and Researches in South Africa: including a Sketch of Sixteen Years' Residence in the Interior of Africa, and a Journey from the Cape of Good Hope to Loando on the West Coast: thence across the Continent, down the River Zambesi, to the Eastern Ocean. By **DAVID LIVINGSTONE, LL.D., D.C.L.** With Portrait, Maps, and Illustrations. 8vo, Cloth, \$4 50.

**LIVINGSTONE'S ZAMBESI.** Narrative of an Expedition to the Zambesi and its Tributaries, and of the Discovery of the Lakes Shirwa and Nyassa, 1858-1864. By **DAVID and CHARLES LIVINGSTONE.** With Map and Illustrations. 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00.

**LIVINGSTONE'S LAST JOURNALS.** The Last Journals of David Livingstone, in Central Africa, from 1865 to his Death. Continued by a Narrative of his Last Moments and Sufferings, obtained from his Faithful Servants Chuma and Susi. By **HORACE WALLER, F.R.G.S.,** Rector of Twywell, Northampton. With Portrait, Maps, and Illustrations. 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00. Cheap Popular Edition, 8vo, Cloth, with Map and Illustrations, \$2 50.

**LOSSING'S FIELD-BOOK OF THE REVOLUTION.** Pictorial Field-Book of the Revolution: or, Illustrations by Pen and Pencil of the History, Biography, Scenery, Relics, and Traditions of the War for Independence. By **BENJAMIN J. LOSSING.** 2 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$14 00; Sheep, \$15 00; Half Calf, \$18 00; Full Turkey Morocco, \$22 00.

**LOSSING'S FIELD-BOOK OF THE WAR OF 1812.** Pictorial Field-Book of the War of 1812: or, Illustrations by Pen and Pencil of the History, Biography, Scenery, Relics, and Traditions of the last War for American Independence. By **BENJAMIN J. LOSSING.** With several hundred Engravings on Wood by Lossing and Barritt, chiefly from Original Sketches by the Author. 1088 pages, 8vo, Cloth, \$7 00; Sheep, \$8 50; Half Calf, \$10 00.

**MACAULAY'S HISTORY OF ENGLAND.** The History of England from the Accession of James II. By **THOMAS BARNSTON MACAULAY.** With Portrait. 5 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$10 00; 12mo, Cloth, \$5 00.

**MACAULAY'S LIFE AND LETTERS.** The Life and Letters of Lord Macaulay. By his Nephew, **G. OTTO TREVELYAN, M.P.** With Portrait on Steel. Complete in 2 vols., 8vo, Cloth, uncut edges and gilt tops, \$5 00; Sheep, \$6 00; Half Calf, \$9 50; Tree Calf, \$15 00.

9-22-13  
B

1. The first part of the document is a list of names and their corresponding dates. The names are: John Doe, Jane Smith, and Bob Johnson. The dates are: 1/1/2020, 2/1/2020, and 3/1/2020.



1. General Information

2.

3.

4.



The borrower must return this item on or before the last date stamped below. If another user places a recall for this item, the borrower will be notified of the need for an earlier return.

*Non-receipt of overdue notices does **not** exempt the borrower from overdue fines.*

<b>Andover-Harvard Theological Library</b> <b>Cambridge, MA 02138      617-495-5788</b>
--

~~SEP 10 2002~~  
~~MAY 27 2003~~

~~JUN 03 2003~~

~~SEP 10 2004~~

**Please handle with care.**  
Thank you for helping to preserve  
library collections at Harvard.

